

Chapter 1601 - Act Alone

Chapter 1601: Act Alone

Qing Xiao's large frame stood below Mirror Fragrance Cliff with an extremely cold expression.

Perhaps because he spent most of his time in the military camp and was used to death, he could still remain reasonable and calm after learning that his junior brothers and sisters had been beheaded.

He believed that Zhang Ruochen wasn't the type to get taken over by anger, but things were different now...

"I'll undo the Saint-binding Chain after the side effects from the Emotion Pills disappear completely," Qing Xiao said.

"The Emotion Pill will only affect my emotions," Zhang Ruochen said. "It won't affect my mind. Are you all that unconfident in me?"

Qing Xiao, Blackie, and the Nine Heavenly Maiden didn't dare to let Zhang Ruochen free, because if he went to the Yin and Yang Palace, they wouldn't be able to stop him.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen laughed. "Do you really think that the Saint-binding Chain can restrict me?"

Saint-binding Chains mostly locked up a cultivator's Holy Qi so that it couldn't flow through his meridians. It could also lock his Spiritual Power so it couldn't rush out of his body.

Thus, cultivators would lose the ability to fight back once chained up.

In order to bring Zhang Ruochen back, Blackie hadn't only chained him up with the Saint-binding Chain. It had also used a secret technique to seal up Zhang Ruochen's 144 apertures.

This way, his physical power would also be forced to its minimum.

Sizzle, sizzle.

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes and his skin alternated between blue and red. The sealed 144 apertures flashed in and out of sight.

“Oh, no! He’s actually using Divine Fire Jingmie to refine the seals I placed on the 144 apertures.”

Blackie rushed over immediately to fortify the seals.

“Too late!”

Zhang Ruochen roared and the seals were broken. Strands of blue fire spread out, wrapping around him as a fiery cloud.

Next, Zhang Ruochen’s body went from hundreds of feet tall to the size of a marble. This repeated three times and then there was a loud boom. The Saint-binding Chain around his body snapped into a dozen pieces.

Blackie, Qing Xiao, and the Nine Heavenly Maiden were all forced back by the wave of fire.

After the fire dissipated, everyone in the Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo grew worried. They stared at the man in the center. No one could guess what he planned on doing.

Clearly, their worry was unnecessary.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t race toward the Yin and Yang Palace like a madman. Instead, he stood in place quietly as if thinking about something.

A moment later, Zhang Ruochen finally said, “Blackie, come with me to the Heavenly Capital Saint Market. Everyone else, stay in the dojo.”

“I want to go with you.” Ling Feiyu put away the Heaven-Burier Sword and shot to her feet.

“I want to go too.” Mu Lingxi also walked over with determined eyes.

The Nine Heavenly Maiden flashed and appeared before him. “Zhang Ruochen, the Yin and Yang Palace must be filled with traps now. You can’t be impulsive. This isn’t only your business. It’s also the business of Kunlun’s Field’s cultivators.

How about you wait until everyone is here and plan for the long-term?”

“Junior Brother,” Qing Xiao said. “There were millions of Sacred Central Empire citizens behind you. They won’t want you to take risks like this. You’ll hurt your family and please your enemy.”

Zhang Ruochen stared at them one by one. “Second Senior Brother, Third Senior Brother, Fifth Senior Sister, and dozens of Sacred Central Empire Saints have their saint souls sealed inside their skulls. They haven’t died yet. If I take the skulls back, I may be able to help them regrow a body.

“But if I continue waiting, Shang Ziyan will lose patience. The next step would be using the destruction of their saint souls to force me to appear.

“By then, I’ll have no choice but to fight with them.

“In that case, why should I continue waiting? I must hurry to the Heavenly Capital Saint Market and prepare beforehand. If I prepare well enough, I might be able to turn the tide and give them a hard hit.”

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen had clear logic and wasn’t overtaken by hatred, everyone was relieved. They also thought about his words.

Then Zhang Ruochen glanced at the Nine Heavenly Maiden and Qing Xiao. “This is my business,” he said. “I don’t need Kunlun cultivators to get involved. Go back to wherever you came from.”

The Nine Heavenly Maiden furrowed her slender brows.

“Zhang Ruochen, they aren’t only your people. They’re also cultivators of Kunlun’s Field. Their heads are hanging on the gates of the Yin and Yang Palace. That is disgrace to Kunlun’s Field too. How can we not do anything?”

“They’re my junior brothers and sisters,” Qing Xiao said.

“Now, they’re being tortured inhumanely, but you’re telling me to not get involved. Do you think it’s possible?”

“You can say that if you’re able to leave the Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo.”

Zhang Ruochen rushed out as fast as lightning and crushed the space transfer formation in the dojo with a stomp.

Then he and Blackie rushed toward the outside of the dojo.

“No, he doesn’t want us to take risks, so he wants to trap us here and act by himself.”

The Nine Heavenly Maiden realized this instantly. She extended her left hand and it transformed into a dark vine to stop Zhang Ruochen.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen used the spatial move and flashed to the side, dodging the vine. He charged out of the dojo, passed the Jiuling Blood Sea Formation, spatial maze, and time formation, and appeared a dozen miles away from the dojo.

He looked back and sighed softly.

He’d gone to the Yin and Yang Palace and knew how dangerous it was. If Qing Xiao, the Nine Heavenly Maiden, Ling Feiyu, and Mu Lingxi followed him, they probably wouldn’t be able to return.

Thus, Zhang Ruochen could only destroy the transfer formation and trap them in the dojo.

Blackie was very wise and obviously knew Zhang Ruochen’s intentions. “Actually,” it said seriously. “I’m just an owl saint instead of an immortal bird. I’m no different from them. I may die if I’m not careful. The Yin and Yang Palace is too dangerous. I can’t go...”

Zhang Ruochen shot a look at Blackie and it got goosebumps instantly. It couldn’t complete its sentence.

For the first time, Blackie realized how terrifying Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were.

“Legend says that there was a bird who studied with the Divine Sky-connecting Tree and created the Nine-Circle Life-Death Code and was known as the Immortal Bird. Do you know about this?”

Blackie immediately shook its head and replied indignantly, “I don’t know. I’m really just an owl saint.”

‘Ha, how about I kill you and test it personally?’ Zhang Ruochen said coldly.

Blackie shrunk back in fear. “I was kidding,” it said hurriedly. “Actually, that Immortal bird is my ancestor.”

“It’s not you?” Zhang Ruochen asked suspiciously.

“How would that be possible? Do you really think I’m able to create something as amazing as the Nine-Circle Life-Death Code?”

Blackie clearly didn’t want to keep talking about this with Zhang Ruochen. It changed the topic immediately. “What are your plans? The Yin and Yang Palace will definitely be careful now, ready to fight against your attacks at any time. Under these conditions, I won’t be able to infiltrate and destroy the formations. If we can’t destroy the formations, going to the Yin and Yang Palace is no different from suicide.”

“Come with me.”

Zhang Ruochen built a space transfer formation one thousand miles away from the Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo. He brought Blackie to a remote and ancient forest.

Crossing his arms, he stood under an ancient tree. Leaning against it, he said, “Build an invisibility formation here.”

Blackie didn’t know what Zhang Ruochen was planning, but it did so obediently.

With its formation skills, an advanced invisibility formation was established soon. It enveloped Blackie, Zhang Ruochen, and the space transfer formation on the ground.

Zhang Ruochen walked to the center and sent out the 12 Buddhist pearls in his hand into 12 spots.

Blackie was even more confused. “Do you have to be this careful?”

“There’s something that’s very important. I need you to look at it.”

There was a huge boom inside the formation. Dust rose up instantly.

Blackie choked on the dust and coughed. Then it looked toward the center of the dust. There was a 60-foot-tall broken Stele.

At first, Blackie hadn't taken it seriously and thought that Zhang Ruochen was being dramatic.

After seeing the ancient words on the Stele clearly, it shuddered and pounced on it, eyes widening as large as marbles. "Zhang... Zhang Ruochen, this... Where did you get it from?"

Seeing how shocked Blackie was, Zhang Ruochen knew that it definitely knew about the Reverse God Stele. "You don't have to know. Just tell me what exactly this is."

Shock filled Blackie's eyes. "You want to use this Reverse God Stele to defeat the demons of the Yin and Yang Palace."

In Zuling Field, Zhang Ruochen had used the Reverse God Stele to change the rules of the world. It instantly turned Qiu Yu's Mu Fire Bronze City into a pile of scrap metal, wiping away the runes inside.

Back then, Zhang Ruochen had been stunned. He realized that the Reverse God Stele was definitely a terrifying treasure and didn't dare to use it in Heaven World.

There were too many strong cultivators in Heaven World. If a Supreme Saint or god sensed the Reverse God Stele, they might come and kill him for it.

Thus, before using it, he had to make sure what kind of commotion it would cause once exposed.

"If I use the Reverse God Stele, the formation runes in the Yin and Yang Palace will all disappear, right?" Zhang Ruochen said. "The weapons that they have will all become useless, right?"

Blackie circled the Stele. "I can only tell you that more than one god has died to get this Stele."

“It seems to be even more impressive than I thought,” Zhang Ruochen murmured to himself.

“There are no Supreme Saints in the Heavenly Capital Saint Market,” Blackie continued. “Probably no one will recognize it. If you kill everyone in the Yin and Yang Palace and pull up the roots, the secret won’t be exposed. I can also do some things to cover up the aura.

“Of course, you know that even the best plan can have flaws. Have you thought of a way out if the Reverse God Stele is exposed?”

“Way out?” Zhang Ruochen said. “I have no way out anymore. I can only go forward.”

“If you get the Glass Heaven Cover from Ling Feiyu and put it over the Yin and Yang Palace, you can completely cover up the Reverse God Stele’s aura. But there are so many strong cultivators in the Yin and Yang Palace. Can you do it all by yourself? You can only ensure that there are no problems if you kill every single one,” Blackie said with a menacing look.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were a bit red. “They keep forcing me to go to the Yin and Yang Palace. How can I disappoint them? I’ll go and stir up a storm.”

Chapter 1602 - Met Fairy Again

Chapter 1602: Met Fairy Again

“Ah...”

“You’ll all die! One... One day... My brother will kill you all...”

“It hurts... Their Soul-Slashing Whip is crushing my saint soul.”

...

Four monks from the evil way in grey stood outside Yin and Yang Palace, whipping the seventeen heads, rotating.

The seventeen heads had been drained of blood, and nobody could even see their faces.

Bang Bang!

After every whip, the heads screamed in agony, which made Yin and Yang Palace all the more terrifying. No monks dared spend more time around the palace than they had to.

A dwarf that was only five feet tall sneered, “It’s been three days, yet Zhang Ruochen doesn’t even dare come save you. He’s nothing but a coward.”

“Why would he have the guts to come to Yin and Yang Palace. Even if he does, he’ll die no matter what.”

And then, an absolute saint from Thousand Devil Field laughed and whipped a head again.

...

Zhang Ruochen, Blackie, and Ling Feiyu all changed their looks, walking past Yin and Yang Palace without stopping. They didn’t stop until they were three blocks away from the palace.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't look more solemn.

He went back to Jingxiang Cliff Dojo to Borrow Glass Sky-Sealing Dome.

Ling Feiyu was very stubborn as she was only willing to lend Zhang Ruochen the Glass Sky-Sealing Dome unless she also came to Heavenly Capital Saint Market together with him.

Blackie said, "Let's wait longer. I've been trying to establish a new formation flag, and I need one more ingredient. Once I buy that ingredient and integrate it with the flag, its power will surge, which will probably help us a great deal."

"What ingredient?" asked Zhang Ruochen.

Blackie said, "Sun Golden Essence."

Zhang Ruochen frowned, as he'd never heard of it before. Obviously, Sun Golden Essence must be very scarce.

Just as they were about to head to some top-tier saint shops to look for Sun Golden Essence, the space around them shook.

The sky above them turned dark.

"No! Someone found us and sealed the space."

Ling Feiyu summoned Heaven-Burier Sword, formed Sword Way Xuangang, and wielded her sword.

The sword light flew out, shining upon the dark space around them.

Boom!

Ling Feiyu's sword clashed with a transparent finger.

Sword Way Xuangang was warded off.

White petals flew out of the finger, dissolving the Sword Way Xuangang completely.

Ling Feiyu's hair waved in the air as she stared at the woman wearing a veil in front of her. Her Heaven-Burier Sword gleamed brighter and brighter with Xuangang.

Blackie immediately stepped forward, trying to stop the fight. "She's with us, with us."

“With us?”

Ling Feiyu didn't retract her Sword Way Xuangang until she made sure it wasn't her enemy. She then looked to Blackie, waiting for an explanation.

Blackie said, “This is Hundred Flower Fairy, a friend of Zhang Ruochen. I'm not very close with her.”

Ling Feiyu had heard of Hundred Flower Fairy before. She was one of the nine most beautiful women in Heaven World, also the leader of Thousand Pistil Field. She was a woman craved by countless men.

However, Hundred Flower Fairy was known to be aloof, so almost no men were able to approach her.

When did Zhang Ruochen befriend her?

Zhang Ruochen looked at Hundred Flower Fairy in the distance and said, “What did you do to me?”

“Do you really think I'm so despicable? Is that why you left me without saying goodbye, because you were afraid I'd kill you?”

Ji Fanxin still sounded very calm, but everyone could tell that she was blaming Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen said, “How did you find me the second I came to Heavenly Capital Saint Market?”

Ji Fanxin stayed silent for a bit, then she explained, “Because you touched the pollen of Reflection Lotus pedals, and the pollen has got into your body. Once you're less than ten thousand miles away from me, I can sense you.”

“Reflection Lotus pedals? Pollen?”

Zhang Ruochen was first confused, then he looked to Ji Fanxin's hands, after which he realized what had happened.

Zhang Ruochen mobilized his mind power to check his hands, and he did find tiny pollen everywhere.

And not just on his hands...

The pollen had spread everywhere in his body, his marrow, blood, and organs...

Zhang Ruochen tried to force the pollen out of his body, then, he tried to refine it, but both attempts ended in failure. The pollen was attached to his body like maggots.

“Damn it... I should never have touched her.” Zhang Ruochen felt regretful.

Carnivorous Holy Flower said to Zhang Ruochen, “My lord, the pollen of Divine Reflection Lotus is very beneficial to me. If I can absorb the pollen, I can absorb other nutrients ten times faster than now.”

After becoming a half-step saint king, Carnivorous Holy Flower got slower and slower at absorbing nutrients.

Now, it could only absorb half a saint source, which slowed down its improvement.

If it was able to absorb nutrients ten times faster than now, it would be able to take five saint sources every day, then it'd become a saint king very soon.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Can you absorb all the pollen in my body?”

“I should be able to, but it'll take at least several months.” said Carnivorous Holy Flower.

Zhang Ruochen felt relieved after getting the response.

He asked, “Why did you come here to find me, Fairy?”

“No need to watch out for me like this. I mean you no harm. I'm only here to tell you that Shang Ziyan is in Yin and Yang Palace now, so it'd be better for you to leave Heavenly Capital Saint Market. Otherwise, you'll fall into his trap,” said Ji Fanxin.

Zhang Ruochen looked conflicted, and said, “So what, he's in Yin and Yang Palace?”

Ji Fanxin said, “You have no idea how strong Shang Ziyan is. He's attained greatly in the Way of Truth, and he's crossed the seventh level of Ocean of Truth.

“He can definitely cross the eighth level of the ocean domain before becoming a supreme saint, even the ninth level.

“Even if his cultivation is suppressed at half-step-saint-king level, he can crush everyone with his comprehension of the Way of Truth.”

Even Ji Fanxin was intimidated by Shang Ziyang’s power.

She came here because she didn’t want to watch Zhang Ruochen walk into certain death. She wanted to talk him out of it.

Zhang Ruochen suddenly said, “I helped you rescue Queen Danling, and you said you owe me a favor. Now, I hope you can return the favor.”

“You want me to help you attack Yin and Yang Palace, don’t you?” said Ji Fanxin.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, “This is a matter of life and death. Even if I ask you to help me, you won’t. What I have in mind is another thing, and it’s less difficult.”

...

After separating from Ji Fanxin, Zhang Ruochen, Ling Feiyu and Blackie headed to ‘Karma Temple’ opened by Western Buddhist Field and stayed there.

Ji Fanxin came to Karma Temple in the afternoon for Zhang Ruochen again.

“I’ve brought all the Sun Saint Gold from Hundred Flower Palace. It’s thirty-seven grams in total, worth thirty-seven million saint stones.”

After giving Zhang Ruochen the box that held all the Sun Saint Gold, Ji Fanxin took out eight runes and handed them to Zhang Ruochen. “Four Heavenly Sword Runes, three God Demon Runes, and one Hundred Step No Lives Rune. They’re worth one hundred and thirty-five million saint stones in total.

“Thousand Pistil Field didn’t make these eight runes, so even if you use them, Shang Ziyang won’t have any doubts about Hundred Flower Palace. This is the best I can do to help you.

“Heavenly Sword Rune is an attack-type rune. Once you use it, it rivals the full-strength strike of a third-step saint king.

“Each of them is worth five million saint stones.

“God Demon Runes are defense-type runes. If you attach them to your body, you’ll turn into a Godly demon in ten breaths of time, and your body will rival that of a third-step saint king. All the attacks under third-step saint kings will be rendered useless against you.

“Each of them is worth twenty million saint stones.”

“Hundred Step No Lives Rune. Once you trigger it, any monk under third-step saint kings a hundred steps from you will be killed instantly, if they don’t have defense runes. It’s worth sixty million saint stones.”

Every rune on the table was immensely valuable. Even saints would be able to slay saint kings if they had any of them. However, for an ordinary saint, they couldn’t afford even the cheapest Heavenly Sword Rune in a lifetime.

“One hundred and seventy-two million saint stones. Even some supreme saints won’t be able to afford them.” Zhang Ruochen mumbled, then took out the Golden Dragon Carriage and handed it to Ji Fanxin. “I’ll leave it with you for now, and I’ll buy it back once I conquer Yin and Yang Palace.”

“It’s a Nine Yao Ten Thousand Patterns Saint Weapon... Wonderful... Wonderful...”

Ji Fanxin’s eyes gleamed and she was thrilled. She said, “This Nine Yao Ten Thousand Patterns Saint Weapon is worth way more than one hundred and seventy-two million saint stones. Aren’t you worried I won’t return it to you?”

“If I get killed in Yin and Yang Palace, better you have it than Shang Ziyan. If I can annihilate Yin and Yang Palace, then I can do the same thing to Hundred Flower Palace,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Seeing how determined Zhang Ruochen was, Ji Fanxin suddenly thought that Zhang Ruochen might actually be able to rival Shang Ziyan.

If Zhang Ruochen got killed in Yin and Yang Palace, Ji Fanxin would be able to get a priceless Nine Yao Ten Thousand Patterns Saint Weapon, but now, she actually hoped that Zhang Ruochen could get out of the palace alive.

After Ji Fanxin left, Blackie took the Sun Saint Gold to refine the formation flag.

As for Zhang Ruochen, he walked into the inner space of Time and Space Crystal, sat down and pondered how to improve his power.

And then, he took out the Masculine Flower given by Ji Fanxin.

The flower as large as a fist gleamed with starry light, releasing masculine saint Qi like flames.

“I initially completed the eleventh palm of Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm, and I’m one step away from ultimate completion. The most important thing is the accumulation of masculine Qi in my body.”

To complete the tenth palm of Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm, he needed ten thousand times more masculine Qi in his body than ordinary people.

As for the eleventh palm, he needed a hundred thousand times more.

He needed lots of pure masculine divine medicinal pills and saint medicine to increase his masculine Qi to fifty thousand times more than ordinary people.

However, it was a very important step. If he wasn’t careful enough, he would either go mad, or worse, explode and die.

Zhang Ruochen had just reached initial completion, so it was almost impossible for him to reach ultimate completion.

In the end, Zhang Ruochen suppressed his urge and put the Masculine Flower away.

“What?”

Zhang Ruochen noticed a light shadow, and it was the memories of the seventh lifetime, including saintly way

comprehension from ‘Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map.’ That light shadow had been sealed the entire time, and Zhang Ruochen never thought of touching it.

“My power should increase after integrating it. Not much, but still a good thing.”

Zhang Ruochen then recalled Ling Feiyu.

Every time he had mentioned the seventh lifetime, Ling Feiyu always looked awkward. Zhang Ruochen suspected that something must’ve happened in the seventh lifetime, which was why he’d never integrated it.

“What’re you thinking? Improving your power is the most important thing.”

Zhang Ruochen stopped overthinking, broke the seal of that light shadow, and started to refine it.

Chapter 1603 - Time of Dawn

Chapter 1603: Time of Dawn

Yin and Yang Palace

Shang Ziyang's back was straight and his hands were behind his back. His silver eyes gazed at the Truth Way carving above. He'd stood there without moving for five days and nights like a stone statue.

Finally, a smile appeared on his handsome face. "As expected of the Moon Goddess. Other gods won't be able to compare. She really left an incredible carving. I've only studied it for a few days and I've benefited greatly."

Whoosh!

Wang Xu's figure flashed and appeared near Shang Ziyang like a ghostly shadow. Smiling, he said, "That move doesn't seem to be very useful. Zhang Ruochen is still very smart. It won't work at all."

Hearing that, Shang Ziyang turned and looked at Wang Xu. "This move might not be useful to other people, but it'll definitely be useful against Zhang Ruochen."

"But the saint souls of those 17 Saints have been whipped by the soul whip day and night and are about to be destroyed," Wang Xu said. "Zhang Ruochen hasn't appeared yet at all."

"Really?" Shang Ziyang shook his head. "I don't think so. Zhang Ruochen may be around the Yin and Yang Palace right now, staring at those screaming heads."

"He's just controlling himself, like an angry wolf hiding in the darkness. He's furious, but he must bury his claws in the dirt to make himself calm down. He knows that once he approaches the Yin and Yang Palace, he'll fall into the hunter's trap and die without a grave."

“And I am that hunter that makes him feel fearful and not dare to appear.”

“Since he knows the Yin and Yang Palace is a trap,” Wang Xu said, “won’t he never appear?”

Shang Ziyan walked over and patted Wang Xu’s shoulder. Chuckling, he said, “If he doesn’t appear, then force him to appear. Wood Soul Girl, spread the news. Tomorrow at four p.m., take the 17 heads off of the gates and...feed them to the dog.”

“Yes.”

A pretty girl in blue robes left with the order.

The dog was a Phosphor Helldog of Black Demon Field.

The Phosphor Helldog was covered in long red hair and had three heads. It was the size of a house.

It was led outside the Yin and Yang Palace and chained to a bronze pillar. The blood-red eyes of the three heads stared at the hanging heads. It seemed very excited and kept barking.

In practically one night, news spread through the Heavenly Capital Saint Market.

The cultivators of the major worlds mostly all knew what was happening. They knew that the people hanging outside the Yin and Yang Palace were closely related to the renowned Zhang Ruochen.

Of course, very few people knew that Shang Ziyan was in charge of this all.

They only thought that it was the Yin and Yang Palace’s revenge on Zhang Ruochen.

The people who had conflicts with the Yin and Yang Palace all hoped that Zhang Ruochen would appear sooner. It would be best if he could kill all of those Evil Way cultivators.

Of course, some other cultivators sighed inwardly. “Guanghan Field finally produced a top talent, but he’ll probably die in the Yin and Yang Palace before he can become a true top figure.”

“Those Evil Way cultivators of the Yin and Yang Palace are all very frightening. That’s why they use such lowly methods to force Zhang Ruochen to appear.”

“I hope Zhang Ruochen won’t fall into the trap. Otherwise, he has a disadvantage in numbers.”

“If he can bear this now, he’ll be able to defeat the Yin and Yang Palace when he reaches the Extreme Realm under the Supreme Saint Realm. I’m afraid he’ll act impulsively due to his young age.”

...

Actually, many cultivators of the other worlds in Heaven Field pitied Kunlun’s Field and Guanghan Field.

But this was a world where power and interests were the most important. They pitied the worlds, but they didn’t want to get in trouble themselves or bring bad fate to their own worlds.

Helping Zhang Ruochen to a certain degree secretly, like Ji Fanxin, was already very rare.

After exiting the Time and Space Crystal, Zhang Ruochen learned about this news from Ling Feiyu.

However, he acted abnormally calm. Instead, he stared at Ling Feiyu with deep eyes without speaking.

“Why are you looking at me?”

Ling Feiyu felt that Zhang Ruochen’s gaze was strange, but she didn’t overthink it. She’d been thinking about how to attack the Yin and Yang Palace. “Are you going to make the strategy, or should I? If you haven’t thought about it, then listen to me.

“First plan, I’ll take the lead and distract the evil figures in the Yin and Yang Palace. I’ll also test which killing mechanisms and traps they’ve set up.

“If they’ve set up too much or I accidentally die by their hands, you shouldn’t go. You should escape from the Heavenly Capital Saint Market immediately.

“If there’s a hole in their setup, use spatial power immediately and take away the 17 heads from the gates. Then retreat as fast as possible and I’ll take care of the rest.

“The second plan, we act together, but I must be visible while you’re hidden. Your main task is to save the saint souls in the 17 heads...”

Zhang Ruochen listened quietly to Ling Feiyu’s plans.

However, all of her plans had rescuing the saint souls in the heads as the main goal. She didn’t think about killing the demons in the Yin and Yang Palace at all.

Perhaps, she thought that it was impossible.

Or, she might think that it was too dangerous for Zhang Ruochen to do it now.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen cut off Ling Feiyu’s fourth plan. “Give me the Heaven Glass Cover.”

“Why?” Ling Feiyu asked.

“I believe that it’s better for me to be the main attacker. You only have to support me.”

Ling Feiyu’s eyes sharpened. She was about to say something, but Zhang Ruochen cut her off. “I control the powers of space and time. If I want to escape, they won’t be able to stop me.”

“Really? Do you know how wise Shang Ziyan is? How could he not think of that? He must have prepared ways to repress your powers of time and space.”

Ling Feiyu had cultivated for centuries and experienced countless battles of various scales. How could it be easy to fool her?

Zhang Ruochen fell silent. “I think that we must choose a general before the mission. Otherwise, it won’t be good if we have different opinions and do our own things.”

“Okay,” Ling Feiyu said authoritatively. “I have more experience and knowledge than you. I’m stronger than you too. I’ll be the general and you listen to everything I say for this battle.”

As the First Saintess of the Demonic Sect, Ling Feiyu carried an intimidating aura.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't convinced. He shook his head. "Since we're choosing a general, we'll do it by vote. The person with the highest votes will qualify."

"Begin voting now."

"Please raise your right hand if you choose me as the general."

After speaking, Zhang Ruochen raised his own right hand and looked toward Blackie.

Blackie had been with Zhang Ruochen for quite some time now, so it obviously knew his intentions. It raised its right paw.

At the same time, Demonic Sound raised her right hand in the distance too.

Zhang Ruochen put his hand down. "Three votes supporting me, so I think the result is quite clear. You don't have any objections now, do you?"

Ling Feiyu's eyes were like frigid stars. "Then, what is your plan?"

"No hurry," Zhang Ruochen said. "Before acting, all of us must take a blood vow."

"What blood vow?" Ling Feiyu asked.

Calmly, Zhang Ruochen said, "Everyone present must follow the general's orders strictly. Whoever dares to act by themselves and disobey the orders will be destroyed and all their family and friends killed."

Ling Feiyu could tell that this blood vow was only aimed at herself, so she asked cautiously, "What if I take the vow and you order that I cannot go to the Yin and Yang Palace? Would I have to follow that order?"

"How could I do that?" Zhang Ruochen said with a serious expression. "I have an important task for you on this trip to the Yin and Yang Palace."

"Are you sure?" Ling Feiyu asked.

“I can make a blood vow.”

“No need!”

Ling Feiyu was very decisive. Without thinking more, she immediately made a blood vow.

After her, Blackie and Demonic Sound also made blood vows. Finally, Zhang Ruochen nodded with satisfaction and said, “We will act at dawn.”

...

At dawn, the sky was dark and covered in stars that sparkled on the two sides of the Heavenly River. The world was silent.

Even the busy Heavenly Capital Saint Market now seemed cold and quiet.

Strands of white mist floated on the street.

Four powerful Evil Way cultivators stood under the gates of the Yin and Yang Palace, talking on and off.

An Absolute Saint with an alligator head said, “The news has been released for so long. How come Zhang Ruochen still hasn’t appeared?”

“I think he doesn’t dare to,” a dwarf said.

A man with blood-colored hair sat cross-legged on the ground and released his Spiritual Power, seeming extraordinarily cautious.

Now, he huffed coldly. “You two better be careful. If Zhang Ruochen wants to act, it’ll most likely be at midnight or dawn. Since he didn’t act at midnight, it’s highly possible that he’ll act now.”

The dwarf was disdainful and laughed. “Xue Ya, how come you get more scared the higher your cultivation is? So what if Zhang Ruochen comes?”

“Master Lin set up six formations near the gates. Three of them are defensive formations. Even if Zhang Ruochen comes, he’ll take some time to get past them before he has a chance to take away the heads.”

“While he’s undoing them, the top cultivators in the Yin and Yang Palace will be alerted. As long as Lord Qing Liaoya, Lord Zhanyu and the others attack, Zhang Ruochen will be killed no matter how strong he is.”

Other than the man with blood-colored hair named Xue Ya, the other three Evil Way cultivators all started laughing.

But just then, Xue Yao sensitively noticed slight spatial ripples and let out an explosive roar. “Zhang Ruochen, you’ve finally appeared!”

Chapter 1604 - Trap and Dividing Self

Chapter 1604: Trap and Dividing Self

The five-foot dwarf, the absolute saint with a crocodile head, and the evil woman with fangs were all shocked by Blood Cliff's yelling.

All of them were top-tier great beings, so they immediately spread, mobilized their saint Qi, and covered their bodies with saint light.

As for Blood Cliff, he immediately wielded a blood-red thorn, hitting where the space ripples came from.

The blood-red thorn was a ten thousand patterns saint weapon that he'd been hiding in his sleeves.

Blood Cliff had triggered the First Yao Complete Power of the thorn, and the second Zhang Ruochen showed up, he could ambush Zhang Ruochen with it.

Even if he couldn't kill Zhang Ruochen, he'd gain fame among the evil-way monks if he could harm Zhang Ruochen.

“So quick.”

Zhang Ruochen originally meant to get all seventeen heads, but now, he had to change his strategies. After all, a ten thousand patterns saint weapon with its First Yao Complete Power could definitely hurt him.

Whoosh!

Ripples emerged in the space.

At the center of the ripples extended a golden palm, hitting the blood-red thorn. Suddenly, great saint Qi spread everywhere.

“Zhang Ruochen's here!”

“How did he get through three levels of defense formation without us noticing him?”

“Whatever. Let’s activate Three Yuan Devil Star Formation to trap him.”

The five-foot dwarf, the absolute saint with a crocodile head, and the evil woman with fangs all infused the killing formation under them with saint Qi, and then, inscriptions emerged, covering the area within hundreds of square feet around them.

Stone balls with a diameter of a hundred feet were formed above them, and the engravings on them made them look like small planets.

All three stone balls were made of asteroids with a diameter of a thousand miles. After merging them with a killing formation, it could kill a fist-step saint king.

The three killing formations were activated at the same time, forming Three Yuan Devil Star Formation, which could freeze space to some extent, even killing a second-step saint king and trapping a third-step saint king.

“Let’s suppress Zhang Ruochen together.”

All three absolute saints from the evil way were exhilarated. If they could capture Zhang Ruochen, they’d make a huge contribution, and with the help of Three Yuan Devil Star Formation, they were somewhat confident in accomplishing it.

However, just as they were about to trigger the formations and throw the stone balls away, they found that the formations were out of their control already.

Before they realized what had happened, they felt a breeze in their hearts.

Their bodies were pierced through by vines.

On the vines emerged threads that penetrated their flesh, turning them into mummified corpses.

Sizzle!

Divine Fire Jingmie gushed out of the corpses, burning them into ashes.

Demonic Sound walked out and frowned. “I’ve become a saint king, but I feel so full after absorbing only three absolute saints. It seems the blood Qi and saint power of absolute saints are much stronger than other saints’.”

As a plant creature attached to Zhang Ruochen, Demonic Sound gained a lot from Zhang Ruochen.

For example, she absorbed a trace of Divine Fire Jingmie from Zhang Ruochen to attack people.

Boom!

The golden palm in the space ripples held off the blood-red thorn for an instant, and then, its surging power knocked the thorn back.

Blood Cliff was dazed, immediately running off.

Zhang Ruochen walked out of the space ripples. Instead of chasing Blood Cliff, he flew to above the gate of Yin and Yang Palace to release his second senior brother.

A feeble but nervous voice came out of the dry head. “Little brother, step back. They did something to my head.”

“Run, run!”

Third senior brother yelled in agony.

“Stop trying to save us, little brother... Leave now... We’ll be brothers and sisters in the next life... Perhaps we won’t even have a next life...,” said his fifth senior sister.

Granny Baisu said, “Your highness, this is a trap. Please go...”

“Don’t try to avenge us, your highness. Please stay alive for everyone from Sacred Central Empire.”

The seventeen subordinates from Sacred Central Empire all spoke with desolation as if they were nearing the end of a brutal battle.

Sizzle!

All the seventeen dry heads were being hung on the chain, and now, crimson engravings emerged on the iron chain, and the destructive forces were released.

Only shrill screams came out of the heads.

“Can’t believe they’re so vicious.”

Zhang Ruochen knew what was happening, and he knew that he couldn’t bring them back today. They were right in front of him, yet he couldn’t save them.

Zhang Ruochen recalled everything he’d gone through.

“Your third senior brother was always stingy, but I’m not like him. You’re my junior brother, why wouldn’t I give it to you.”
Zhu Hongtao breathed out a Beast Yuan Golden Pill and gave it to Zhang Ruochen.

“I want to become a half saint as well, but I won’t follow this way. Swallowing your Beast Yuan Golden Pill would be like sucking your blood.”

“I admire your character, but we’re brothers. You don’t need to be so polite.”

...

“I’ll be your guardian, little junior brother. I’ll protect you for thirty years. If someone dares do you any harm, I’ll teach him a lesson.”

“Take this Meteor Invisibility Blouse, little brother. I don’t need it anymore.”

...

“Your highness. Are you really our crown prince, your highness? Are you really back?” Granny Baisu said with tears in her eyes.

...

“As long as you’re back, Sacred Central Empire will never die.”

...

“We’ll blow up our saint sources for you, your highness.”

...

Zhang Ruochen recalled everything that had happened before, and without realizing it, his eyes were full of tears.

The seventeen saint sources in the seventeen heads exploded, triggered by a secret technique.

Boom!

The power from the explosion of saint sources triggered by secret techniques couldn't compare to that of the self-explosion of monks, yet they were still horrifying. The power shook half the Heavenly Capital Saint Market.

Many monks were shocked as they realized something major had happened in Yin and Yang Palace.

Those creatures all speculated that Zhang Ruochen had just attacked Yin and Yang Palace, so they all rushed to Yin and Yang Palace as soon as possible.

Outside Yin and Yang Palace, the demonic dog had been blasted by the explosion of the seventeen heads.

Demonic Sound had retreated into the distance, gathering with Ling Feiyu.

Blackie was controlling the three stone balls to ward off the waves coming out of the explosion of the human heads, but the stone balls all cracked after the clash.

As for Zhang Ruochen, he was standing in front of the three stone balls, looking dazed. His body was rugged as if it would fall at any time.

After the dust dispersed, there were already lots of evil beings standing outside Yin and Yang Palace. Some of them looked like human beings, some looked half-human, and some just looked like pure evil beasts.

They surrounded Zhang Ruochen.

Wang Xu, who was wearing a mask, was standing at the front, spinning his Xu Moon Blade and smiling. "My cultivation has surged again, and I want to fight you myself. You're such a great competitor, but unfortunately, you won't have a chance given how injured you are."

Zhang Ruochen looked around at the evil beings, seeing their fierce, smug, or overbearing smiles, and he said with the most solemn voice possible, "You've really pissed me off this time."

Blue Fang, who was ranked seventy-third on the ‘Saints Merits Rank’ opened his mouth, showing his blue teeth, and said, “Everyone can trash talk. So what we’ve pissed you off? It’s the law of nature. It all boils down to who’s stronger.”

A great being on the ‘Saints Merits Rank,’ Zhan Yu, walked out, holding a golden blade with dragon engravings, and said, “Zhang Ruochen has been severely injured. You might look down on him now, Lord Xu, but I really want to fight this person who’s ranked first on the ‘Saints Merits Rank’.”

Aside from Zhan Yu, a couple of other powerful half-step saint kings also walked out and wanted to fight Zhang Ruochen by themselves. They even started to argue with each other.

After all, Zhang Ruochen was ranked first on the ‘Saints Merits Rank’, so it didn’t matter whether Zhang Ruochen had been injured or not, as long as they could defeat Zhang Ruochen, their reputation would be boosted, and they would have something to brag about.

They wanted to use Zhang Ruochen’s life to reap the most benefits.

Zhang Ruochen suddenly started to laugh, louder and louder, and his laughter spread across the sky.

“Wait. Look, guys!” a monk from the evil way yelled.

The prominent beings from the evil way who were arguing immediately stopped and looked to Zhang Ruochen. They saw his body burn into ashes immediately.

“That is only Zhang Ruochen’s dividing self...”

All the monks from the evil way realized what had happened.

They all thought Zhang Ruochen was tricked and had been severely injured, yet it seemed Zhang Ruochen had expected that, so he only used his dividing self.

That dividing self looked too real.

Blood Cliff curved his lips and thought, “We’re both half-step saint kings, yet Zhang Ruochen’s dividing self is stronger than me. How powerful is his real body?”

Blood Cliff wasn't weak. He was one of the top-tier half-step saint kings who could rival a first-step saint king.

The sound of footsteps came from the dark across from Yin and Yang Palace.

Zhang Ruochen walked out with his real body and said, "Who set up the forbidden formation in the heads? I'll drain you of your blood."

Zhang Ruochen had expected the monks from the evil way to mess with the heads, and that he wouldn't be able to take away the heads, which was why he used his dividing self to test it.

Even though he'd anticipated what would happen, he still felt deep grief.

Chapter 1605 - Repay Debt with Blood

Chapter 1605: Repay Debt with Blood

The Heavenly Assassination Organization was despicable, but they only killed after taking money. The more disgusting ones were Shang Ziyan and the Evil Way cultivator who was setting up formations inside the heads.

Zhang Ruochen just wanted to take out their tendons and drink their blood.

The demons could all sense the saintly might crashing within Zhang Ruochen and the fury that could burn the world up.

Suddenly, a shadow flew out of the group of demons. It was so fast that even some Absolute Saints couldn't see it clearly.

It was an Evil Way Saint King. He wanted to sneakily injure Zhang Ruochen before he could activate the equality.

“Zhang Ruochen, I was the one who set up the formation, but I'm afraid you're not strong enough to drink my blood.”

A deep voice rang out.

Zhang Ruochen sensed the incoming evil Qi but didn't move at all. It was like he didn't have time to block it.

The demons were all overjoyed, thinking that they'd overestimated Zhang Ruochen.

Were all those fatal mechanisms unnecessary?

“That is... Oh no!”

The Saint King was shocked and immediately tried to retreat.

But he'd attacked too powerfully and couldn't pull back at all.

Thus, that Saint King quickly activated his Holy Qi and poured it into his black necklace. Instantly, Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon armor covered his body.

He was this frightened because a huge black skeleton walked out behind Zhang Ruochen.

The skeleton stepped forward and slammed down with a huge bone hand.

Thud!

The Saint King's attack and defense waves were all shattered. He fell heavily to the ground. If not for his Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon armor, he probably would've gotten destroyed.

However, even though he didn't die, he was horribly injured and had lost 90% of his combat ability.

"You still want to climb up?"

Zhang Ruochen stepped onto the Saint King's back. He'd wanted to climb back up, but he was forced down again. Eyes cold, Zhang Ruochen said, "I didn't activate equality yet because I wanted to lure you out. Now, you can die."

Poof!

Blue Divine Fire Jingmie poured out from under Zhang Ruochen's feet and wrapped around that Saint King.

The black Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon armor burned red-hot.

Inside the armor, the Saint King seemed to be under arduous torture. His body kept popping and he cursed angrily.

However, he had a cultivation and was protected by the saint armor, so Zhang Ruochen couldn't kill him quickly.

An intimidating voice rang out from the depths of the Yin and Yang Palace. "How dare you step on a Saint King of the Black Demon Field? You're looking for death.

Qiong Lin, leader of the Black Demon Field, transformed into a demonic cloud and flew quickly out of the palace.

Due to his cultivation and status, he hadn't felt like fighting Zhang Ruochen. Otherwise, he would've gotten laughed at by the other top figures.

But for some reason, Zhang Ruochen had been able to increase the combat ability of the Emperor Yi Bone Staff to a fifth step Saint King's level. This way, Qiong Lin was forced to attack personally.

Merely the demonic sound created shocking sound waves that made all the Absolute Saints and half-step Saint Kings turn pale. They had immense headaches.

Zhang Ruochen had already activated the fifth level of the Hundred Saint Blood Armor. One hundred Absolute Land Saint projections stood around him, blocking the force of the sound waves.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen gazed at the Moon Goddess' statue and his lips moved.

Boom!

The snow-white statue shone with brilliant light that shrouded the entire Yin and Yang Palace. In an instant, half of the Evil Qi, Demonic Qi, and Yin Qi was purified. The dojo became a cleansed place.

Divine power spread out.

The power of "equality" fell upon everyone. Even the aura from the black skeleton slid down quickly, reaching the level of a half-step Saint King.

Qiong Lin's demonic mace had released a third level saintly ripple and was at the Third Yao level. But the black light emanating from the mace was fading. Finally, it only had two levels of saintly ripples.

Of course, even a Second Yao force was still shocking.

As soon as the demonic mace touched the 100 saintly projections, the projections retreated back into Zhang Ruochen's arms.

"Dragon and Elephant to the Sky."

A dragon soul rushed out of Zhang Ruochen's left arm. An elephant soul broke out of his right.

Supported by the power of the 100 Saints, Zhang Ruochen attacked with both hands together. A dragon and elephant shadow flew out at the same time, spinning quickly. They formed a whirlpool and crashed against the demonic mace.

After a huge boom, the demonic mace tore the whirlpool apart.

However, the two layers of light on the mace had also shattered. Zhang Ruochen's palm force had actually dissolved the terrifying power.

“A mid-level saint spell?”

Wang Xu had a shocked and uncertain expression.

Last time that he fought against Zhang Ruochen, he'd discovered that Zhang Ruochen's biggest weakness was that he hadn't cultivated mid-level spells or the Way of Truth.

Now, Zhang Ruochen's palm technique was indeed a mid-level saint spell.

How much time had passed... and he'd already succeeded with a mid-level spell? Wang Xu felt like he'd just gotten hit. He wanted to get rid of Zhang Ruochen even more now.

The other cultivators all grew serious. They truly saw Zhang Ruochen as an enemy now.

After all, Qiong Lin's demonic mace could shatter a mountain casually. But Zhang Ruochen had been able to take it without getting harmed. This was incredible.

Seeing the light disappear from the mace, Zhang Ruochen immediately activated spatial power. He grabbed forward to try and steal the demonic mace.

As a weapon of a Black Demon Field leader, it was definitely a treasure.

Stealing it would be like breaking Qiong Lin's arm, and his combat ability would be halved.

“Hmph!”

Now, Qiong Lin finally walked out of the gates. He extended a thick arm through the thick demonic cloud and controlled the demonic mace remotely.

Whoosh!

The mace spun in the air and shook the space.

Zhang Ruochen's spatial power had locked onto the blood mace, but he couldn't collect the mace so quickly. Instead, the mace released pungent Blood Qi shaped like snakes that slithered toward Zhang Ruochen.

The cultivators around him all grew anxious, so Zhang Ruochen ended the stalemate with Qiong Lin. He immediately retracted his spatial power.

Qiong Lin was also worried, so he didn't dare to take risks. He grabbed the demonic mace back, thinking, This Zhang Ruochen is quite cautious. I purposely lowered my power to trap him, but he sensed something wrong and immediately pulled back. It probably won't be easy to capture him today.

This was the Moon Goddess' dojo. They didn't dare to kill Zhang Ruochen directly or else they would break the rules of the Truth Heavenly Domain. They'd have to pay with their lives.

Of course, if it was due to this, they could find a scapegoat. They could beat Zhang Ruochen to his last breath and have that scapegoat kill him. That way, only the scapegoat would die. The other cultivators would be unharmed.

However, more importantly, Shang Ziyan had ordered that Zhang Ruochen must be captured alive.

This was why the cultivators present were all a bit restricted.

A piercing scream sounded.

The Saint King who was stepped on under Zhang Ruochen's foot earlier suddenly realized his saint armor had turned back into a black necklace. The black skeleton now held him in its hands.

Crunch!

The skeleton bit down, biting off the Saint King's head.

Even though the Saint King didn't die completely after his head fell into the skeleton's mouth, he seemed to realize that

Qiong Lin couldn't save him. He yelled sharply, "Let's die together!"

Demonic Qi poured out of his head, wanting to deactivate the saint source inside.

But the next moment, his voice grew shriller. "No, how is it possible, don't refine my...saint...soul!"

The Saint King's saint soul was controlled by the evil spirit of the black skeleton. It was getting swallowed bit by bit.

It was thousands of times more painful to get one's saint soul eaten than getting one's tendons ripped out. Even a Saint King couldn't take it, and he screamed out loud.

Qiong Lin shook in anger. So many cultivators were gathered here to defeat Zhang Ruochen and they'd actually lost quite a talented Saint King.

"Attack!" he uttered. "Disable Zhang Ruochen."

The Evil Way cultivators had all prepared attack formations. Instantly, dozens of full-power Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons flew out.

This shocking force was enough to destroy a first or second step Saint King, let alone a half-step Saint King.

Blackie chuckled. Controlling the three-sided star formation, he struck out with three dozen-meter-wide stone balls.

Boom!

The three balls clashed violently with the dozens of Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons. Rather than getting destroyed, they blocked all the attacks.

This time, all the Evil Way cultivators were stunned.

The three-sided star formation had been one of the mechanisms that they'd prepared against Zhang Ruochen.

But now, it was being used against them instead.

A dozen pairs of cold eyes glared at Master Lin who was controlling the formation. They suspected that he was Zhang Ruochen's spy in the Yin and Yang Palace.

He was covered in sweat now. How could he have guessed that his well-planned formation would be decoded and controlled by an owl?

This was impossible!

Unless this owl's attainment in formations was at the level of a formation master.

But formation masters were even rarer than Supreme Saints. They wouldn't waste time in comprehending the Way of Truth either. How could one appear in the Truth Heavenly Domain?

Qiong Lin obviously knew that Master Lin wasn't Zhang Ruochen's spy, but he was still deeply disappointed. "Can you snatch the star formation back?" he asked in a deep voice.

Master Lin shook his head. "If 'equality' wasn't activated, I could try with my level 56 Spiritual Power. But now, my Spiritual Power is restrained to below level 55..."

Suddenly, he felt that he couldn't move anymore. While he was stunned, he felt coldness in his heart.

Poof!

A black saint sword had penetrated his saint heart.

To martial artists, the Sea of Qi and saint source were the most important.

To a Spiritual Power cultivator, the most important was the saint heart.

Once the heart had been struck, they would die without a doubt.

That was how fragile a Spiritual Power cultivator's body was.

Zhang Ruochen appeared behind Master Lin. Taking back the immobilization rune on Master Lin, he also extracted the Abyss Ancient Sword.

Earlier, when everyone had attacked with Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons, the light and power from the weapons had swallowed up the outside of the Yin and Yang Palace.

Zhang Ruochen had taken advantage of it to use the Spatial Move and appear behind Master Lin.

Zhang Ruochen feared the formations the most, so he obviously had to take out this highly skilled master. This way, the power of the formations would be reduced greatly.

The Immobilization Rune is indeed a great thing to restrain half-step Saint Kings, Zhang Ruochen thought.

Earlier, Zhang Ruochen had taken the risk to use the Immobilization Rune on Master Lin. After applying it, Master Lin was locked down and his Spiritual Power was also restrained.

Without it, Master Lin would've immediately sensed danger and activated his defensive rune to stop Zhang Ruochen's attack. Martial Saint Kings might not have advanced protective runes, but a formation master definitely would.

Also, even if Zhang Ruochen's sneak attack had succeeded, Master Lin definitely would've fought desperately before death. At such a close distance, Zhang Ruochen might not be able to dodge it.

The result with and without the Immobilization Rune was completely different.

“Looking for death!”

Qiong Lin saw Zhang Ruochen kill Master Lin with his own eyes, but he couldn't save the man, so he naturally was furious. He grabbed the demonic mace, dragging out a bloody gale.

In the blink of an eye, the mace was above Zhang Ruochen's head.

The power that radiated from it was countless times stronger than the first strike. It could be said that this was Qiong Lin's true strength.

Chapter 1606 - Zhang Ruochen's Intention

Chapter 1606: Zhang Ruochen's Intention

Zhang Ruochen didn't want to fight Qiong Ling directly, so he performed spatial move and vanished, dodging Qiong Ling's attack.

Boom!

The Blood-Refining Demonic Mace hit the ground, however, it didn't strike Zhang Ruochen. Instead, it knocked a couple of monks from the evil way away.

The Blood-Refining Demonic Mace fell onto the ground. Qiong Ling couldn't be angrier; just as he was about to give an order to suppress the space, he felt a grave danger coming at him, about to explode.

He saw Zhang Ruochen take out the only Tiangang Purple Fire Rune he had, mobilized his saint Qi and infused it into the rune.

Qiong Ling was horrified and yelled, "Careful!"

All the monks from the evil way realized a danger coming. Some used defense-type saint weapons, and some tried to get away as far as possible.

Blue Fang, who was ranked seventy-third on the 'Saints Merits Rank' was the quickest to react. He took out a high-grade rune and pressed it against Zhang Ruochen.

Boom!

Tiangang Purple Fire Rune exploded, and purple flames spread, making rumbling sounds and dashing everywhere.

The blazing flames melted the gate of Yin and Yang Palace.

The power of Tiangang Purple Fire Rune could rival a saint spell of a fourth-step saint king.

And now, all the monks were suppressed at half-step saint king.

No monks were able to ward off Tiangang Purple Fire Rune. Everyone was trying to run away, including the leader of Black Demon Field, Qiong Ling.

Sizzle!

Some of the monks from the evil way didn't react fast enough, and the purple flames burned them instantly, turning them into balls of fire.

There were more than twenty fireballs burning, and they were yelling and cursing in agony.

The demonic cloud on Qiong Ling was burnt thin, and his real face was exposed. He looked young, with a blue face, and there was an iron collar on his forehead. His eyes were slanted, connected with his ears.

There were eighteen pupils on that pair of eyes, nine on the left and nine on the right.

Qiong Ling sneered, raised his palm, and two gloomy demonic clouds flew out, covering those twenty-something fireballs.

After a while, the purple flames were dispersed, leaving only corpses blackened by fire.

Qiong Ling kicked one of the corpses, and that body turned into ashes.

In another direction, Blue Fang used a defense rune, forming a white light net, warding off the purple fire for a breath of time.

That time was enough for the monks from the evil way to escape, saving their lives. Otherwise, there would've been more than twenty-something corpses on the ground.

When they were alive, they were all top-tier beings from their large fields, and they had a ten to twenty percent chance to become supreme saints. Killing them meant killing a couple of future supreme saints.

Such a loss was too great for any large field to bear.

Everyone in Yin and Yang Palace turned silent.

All the monks from the evil way were on guard. They now knew why Shang Ziyang said Zhang Ruochen was a calamity to the Yin and Yang Palace. He was indeed difficult to deal with.

All the monks outside the Yin and Yang Palace took a deep breath.

A group of Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies flew in the sky and said, “That easy? He crushed the Yin and Yang Palace using only an attack rune?”

“An attack rune? That attack rune is worth at least ten million saint stones. I’d be bankrupt if I wanted to buy one,” said Demonic Butterfly Princess.

“Even with that attack rune, you need to have space skills like Zhang Ruochen’s to wield its real power. And you need to seize the chance perfectly...fast, accurate and decisive.

“Otherwise, the monks from the evil way would’ve fled no matter how powerful your rune was, then you’d waste all the ten million saint stones you spent on the rune.

“That means Zhang Ruochen is a force to be reckoned with. Hope he can teach those bastards in the Yin and Yang Palace a lesson.’

...

Those Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies hated the Yin and Yang Palace’s guts, so they all had a much better impression of Zhang Ruochen seeing him kick their asses.

Ji Fanxin, Queen Danling, and Fairy Extreme King all smiled, standing nearby.

They all knew that Zhang Ruochen had managed to crush the Yin and Yang Palace with one strike because they had underestimated him.

Zhang Ruochen knew that mentality well enough to make them suffer from a huge loss.

It was almost impossible for them to do it again.

Fairy Extreme King frowned and asked, “Zhang Ruochen was able to break the encirclement of the monks from the evil way

in Yin and Yang Palace using that attack rune...why didn't he flee?"

Queen Danling was also a bit confused. "Yin and Yang Palace has lost two saint kings and more than twenty top-tier talents. Zhang Ruochen has avenged the owners of those seventeen heads. He shouldn't stay in Yin and Yang Palace anymore. Did Yin and Yang Palace use some other power to trap Zhang Ruochen?"

Fairy Extreme King and Queen Danling weren't the only ones confused. The monks from Heavenly Capital Saint Market watching the fight were also curious about the reason.

Ji Fanxin said, "Zhang Ruochen wanted to take down the Yin and Yang Palace."

"What?"

Both Fairy Extreme King and Queen Danling were astounded.

To them, it wasn't one person, or even several people's job to take down the Yin and Yang Palace.

The Yin and Yang Palace had experienced a couple of dangers in the past, being encircled by monks from dozens of large fields, but they had survived that.

It was almost impossible for Zhang Ruochen to take down the Yin and Yang Palace, and to be more honest, he was being suicidal.

...

There was a Star Observatory that was a thousand feet tall near the Yin and Yang Palace. It was made of saint jade, glowing with white light.

There were four divine beasts around the Star Observatory: Dragon, Tiger, Peacock, and Turtle.

The shadows of the four divine beasts showed up under the saint light. They looked like four divine mountains surrounding the Star Observatory.

There were two men playing chess on the two sides of the chessboard.

One of them was wearing a Taoist cape, looking refined and wearing a smile.

The one sitting across from him was Shang Ziyan, wearing three-colored saint armor.

Nobody could've expected Shang Ziyan not to guard the Yin and Yang Palace on such a crucial night.

Shang Ziyan pinched a chess piece for a long time before putting it on the board. He said, "I could've prepared better if I knew you came to Truth Godly Domain."

The man in the Taoist cape smiled and said, "There're still some flaws in the heavenly way. No matter how well you've prepared, there'll be loopholes. You'd better leave it the way it was."

Shang Ziyan put the chess piece on a spot on the board and said, "Are you really interfering? I don't think it's a good idea."

"Who's interfering? I only invited you here to play chess with me. Don't overthink it, otherwise, you'll lose."

The man in the Taoist cape picked up a chess piece, putting it on the chessboard. Suddenly, the situation changed drastically, and Shang Ziyan lost a great many chess pieces.

An hour ago, Shang Ziyan had received a letter with the name 'Lian Xi' on it.

Lian Xi was the name of No Shadow Angel on the 'Nine Angels Beauty Scroll', and she was the senior sister of King Hun, 'Queen Daxi', the leader of her generation from Soul Field.

Shang Ziyan invited her to Truth Heavenly Domain to seize the saint soul of Zhang Ruochen.

Queen Daxi had promised him she'd come, but it'd been more than two months and Queen Daxi still hadn't arrived. Instead, Shang Ziyan lost contact with her, which concerned her a bit.

Shang Ziyan immediately came after receiving the letter.

Shang Ziyang stared at the chessboard and asked, "Where is Queen Daxi?"

The man in the Taoist cape moved his finger and said, "Play chess with me first. If you can defeat me, I'll tell you."

Shang Ziyang said, "You Taoist people are always open and upright. You're the leader of your generation of the Five Element Temple; how could you do something so obscene? Release Queen Daxi. Don't damage your reputation."

The man in the Taoist cape knew that Shang Ziyang was testing him, trying to figure out whether he had Queen Daxi or not.

The man in the Taoist cape smiled and said, "And you're the leader of your generation from the Merits Godly Palace. You should keep calm and not disappoint me."

Shang Ziyang thought for a while, smiled, picked up a chess piece and said, "You thought you could hold me off so that Zhang Ruochen could get out of the Yin and Yang Palace alive? Zhang Ruochen wanted to take down the Yin and Yang Palace, and that intention alone is enough to kill him. Let's see who can keep calm tonight."

...

Outside the Yin and Yang Palace.

Qiong Ling stared at Zhang Ruochen coldly and said, "You didn't run away?"

"Why would I run away?"

Zhang Ruochen took out the Abyss Ancient Sword, holding it in his hand.

"Seems like you have other thoughts in mind, but you'll regret not running away."

Qiong Ling yelled, "Operate the formation."

The guarding formation of the Yin and Yang Palace, Massive Heavenly Net Formation, immediately emerged.

The light spread in the air, forming a formation net, and the net bulged, covering Zhang Ruochen and Blackie instantly.

Whoosh!

A trace of black light rushed out of the formation, hitting Zhang Ruochen and Blackie.

Boom!

The three stone balls in front of Zhang Ruochen and Blackie were dismantled.

The three stone balls were made of asteroids, which meant they were very solid.

The power of Massive Heavenly Net Formation was tremendously powerful.

Zhang Ruochen performed spatial move, showed up beside a monk from the evil way and wielded his sword.

The sword light was as fast as lightning.

Before the monk could realize what happened, Zhang Ruochen cut his head and lower abdomen with his Abyss Ancient Sword, spilling blood.

Right before Zhang Ruochen was about to perform spatial move again, he found the space around him to be solid, which made him extremely nervous.

“Do you really think the Yin and Yang Palace can’t counteract you, Zhang Ruochen?”

Four black shadows with tremendous forces showed up in four directions around Zhang Ruochen, and all of them were holding powerful ancestral weapons. Blazing Sun Ball, Moon Pearl, and two Star Spears.

The four ancestral weapons froze the space.

The four great beings were the four Song siblings from Thousand Devil Field, Song Yang, Song Yue, Song Xing, and Song Chen.

All of them had complete constitution. Although none of them got into the ‘Saints Merits Rank’, they had defeated Blue Fang when they teamed up, and each of them was stronger than an heir from a weak field.

Chapter 1607 - Two Top Broadsword Way Figures

Chapter 1607: Two Top Broadsword Way Figures

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Once trapped, he would definitely be killed by the Massive Heavenly Net Formation.

The four Song siblings surrounded Zhang Ruochen. After locking down the space, the tops of the ten formation towers in the Yin and Yang Palace shone with blinding light.

The Massive Heavenly Net Formation was building up offensive power again. A terrifying aura was released, making all the Evil Way cultivators change their expressions. They put distance between them and the Song siblings and Zhang Ruochen so they wouldn't get killed by the formations' shockwaves.

Zhang Ruochen obviously wouldn't be a sitting duck. He grabbed his Abyss Ancient Sword and its light magnified. He held it horizontally and hacked down on Song Xing to the east.

Whoosh!

A piercing gale sounded.

“Good, I've wanted to see the number one of the Saints Merits Rank.” Song Xing huffed conceitedly. He lifted his silver starry lance and went to meet Zhang Ruochen.

He thought that he didn't have to fear Zhang Ruochen since they'd locked the space.

But the moment the two weapons touched, Song Qing's expression changed drastically.

The power from the Abyss Ancient Sword wasn't only heavy. It also came endlessly and he couldn't handle it at all. There was a boom and Song Qing was tossed back like a rag.

“Third brother!”

“Third brother!”

Song Yang, Song Yue, and Song Chen were all shocked. They didn't think that Zhang Ruochen was so aggressive. He could send Song Xing flying with just a projection?

Song Xing felt that all his organs were displaced and he was in immense pain. Blood poured out of his stomach into his mouth.

More terrifying was that Song Xing had been forced back, so the composite formation had an opening. If Zhang Ruochen escaped from the restricted space, he would be like a dragon bursting out of the sea. Who'd be able to stop him then?

Zhang Ruochen indeed had this kind of thought.

Thus, he activated the power of time and displayed the time sword technique. He charged at the Sun and Moon Star Combined Formation and tried to kill Song Xing.

Whoosh!

Suddenly, a dark shadow flew past with incredible speed.

“Wang Xu.”

Zhang Ruochen sensed danger. He was forced to stop the time sword technique and strike backward with his sword.

Sword light passed by Zhang Ruochen's head like a black wave and poured back.

Thud!

The sword and broadsword clashed.

It could be said that if Zhang Ruochen had been a shred slower, his head would've been cut off by Wang Xu.

“You're still so cautious. Wanting to sneak up on you is harder than sneaking up on a Saint King.”

Wang Xu's laugh came from behind him.

Next, an even greater force poured out of Wang Xu's Xu Moon Blade.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes narrowed. He twisted forcefully and a dragon and phoenix's projection appeared on his legs. He took 14 steps to the right and resolved the broadsword force.

But Wang Xu was like a shadow. He kept adding Holy Qi into his broadsword and quickly activated the First Yao complete power.

More runes were emerging on the blade. He seemed to want to activate the Second Yao complete power.

Wang Xu met eyes with Zhang Ruochen and a crazed smile appeared below his mask. "Zhang Ruochen, I didn't have a treasure to enhance my power last time, so I lost in the fight. This time, it's different!"

The Xu Moon Blade's power kept strengthening. It seemed to transform into a demonic moon pressing down on Zhang Ruochen. The light flashed on Zhang Ruochen's face.

"Ha. My abilities haven't been at a standstill either."

Eyes cold, Zhang Ruochen also activated his Holy Qi. It poured into the Abyss Ancient Sword and activated its runes.

Song Xing, who'd been thrown back, finally steadied himself. He quickly ate a healing pill and flew back in a streak of light before he'd fully recovered from his injuries.

He poured Holy Qi into his weapon and reformed the Sun and Moon Star Combined Formation with Song Yang, Song Yue, and Song Chen. They locked the space to prevent Zhang Ruochen from escaping.

"Right now, cut him in half."

Zhan Yu, at the top of the Saints Merits Rank, held his Dragon-vein Gold Broadsword with one hand. Like a dragon shadow, he rushed into the formation and cut down from behind Zhang Ruochen.

Zhan Yu and Wang Xu both used the broadsword, but their ways were very different.

Wang Xu was unpredictable and tried to win with speed.

Zhan Yu was aggressive and won with power.

Both were top figures in the Saint Realm. Barely anyone under the Saint King Realm could fend them off when they were together.

When the cultivators outside the Yin and Yang Palace saw Zhan Yu attack, they involuntarily held their breath. In their opinion, Zhan Yu's attack may really cut Zhang Ruochen in half.

Zhang Ruochen had enemies on either side. Wang Xu was restricting him from the front. Zhan Yu's aggressive sword was behind him. He would definitely be injured greatly.

“Abyss!” Zhang Ruochen yelled at the sword.

The sword spirit emerged from the Abyss Ancient Sword. It stood on the blade and activated the nine Rules of Truth, gathering on the sword.

Instantly, the light and power radiating from the sword doubled and actually forced Wang Xu back.

Deafening elephant roars came from Zhang Ruochen's arm. He spun quickly, waving his sword in a semicircle, and started fighting Zhan Yu behind him.

The power of 100 Saints, the elephant soul, and all of Zhang Ruochen's own strength burst forth.

Boom!

In this clash, the shockwaves poured out violently. Sword and broadsword shadows filled the sky.

Even if Zhang Ruochen used all his might, he was still weaker than Zhan Yu. He took a small step back before resolving all the force of the Dragon-vein Gold Broadsword.

Zhang Ruochen had read about Zhan Yu before. He knew that he had the Supreme Complete Body Constitution and was skilled in an ancient physical technique. He was the pureblood descendant of a divine dragon and had refined many dragon

souls, divine dragon blood, and bones into his body. He was impossibly strong.

In the aspect of strength, Zhan Yu was practically undefeatable in his realm.

While Zhang Ruochen was shocked, Zhan Yu was even more shocked. He didn't think that someone in the same realm could compete with him in strength.

Earlier, Zhang Ruochen had also forced Wang Xu back before coming at him.

This meant that if they really were fighting against each other, Zhang Ruochen would be even stronger.

Wang Xu looked at the Abyss Ancient Sword with slight shock in his eyes. "The sword spirit actually learned the Rules of Truth. Your sword is a true treasure."

The Rules of Truth could indeed enhance a spell, but it took time to use. In a fight between truly powerful people, an instant could determine life or death.

For example:

Zhang Ruochen spent an instant to use the Rules of Truth. Before Zhang Ruochen could cast a spell, Wang Xu could already use his terrifying speed to halve him in an instant.

The sword spirit automatically using the Rules of Truth helped give Zhang Ruochen a great advantage in battle.

Zhan Yu looked at Wang Xu. "Zhang Ruochen isn't any slower than you. He isn't any weaker than me. He practically has no flaws. We must work together to injure him."

"Even though I hate working together with people, I'll make an exception for Zhang Ruochen."

Wang Xu honestly wasn't confident to face Zhang Ruochen alone. He realized that Zhang Ruochen had indeed improved greatly from the last time.

More annoyingly, his sword could use Rules of Truth too.

Roar!

Twelve dragon souls broke out of Zhan Yu's back. Each one was a Saint King. Blazing divine light shone from his skin. Faint divine power poured out, twisting with the Dragon-vein Gold Sword.

Faced with Wang Xu and Zhan Yu, Zhang Ruochen didn't dare to be careless. He lifted the Dragon and Mad Oxen Wine and gulped it down. His Holy Qi and blood started circulating wildly.

This time, Wang Xu also had a treasure to enhance strength. It was a red ring on his right thumb. Instantly, the arm holding the broadsword more than doubled in strength.

After a slight pause, Wang Xu, Zhang Ruochen, and Zhan Yu attacked and entangled with each other.

They were too intense, so the other cultivators couldn't join at all.

A half-step Saint King who thought he was strong saw that Wang Xu and Zhan Yu couldn't take Zhang Ruochen down, so he rushed over to help.

But as soon as he stepped into the formation, before he could attack, he was injured greatly by three Sword Qi and five Broadsword Qi. Terrified, he fled from the formation.

Qing Liaoya had a similar level, so he was able to attack. But he discovered that Zhang Ruochen's owl was actually studying the Massive Heavenly Net Formation and was frightened.

If that owl controlled the Massive Heavenly Net Formation, the consequences would be unimaginable.

Thus, Qing Liaoya led a dozen cultivators to surround the owl and capture it.

But the owl was very crafty. It was sometimes fast, sometimes slow. Its body was sometimes huge and sometimes as small as a mosquito. It was very hard to capture and made them end up looking pathetic and sweaty.

The owl also had a dirty mouth. While escaping, it kept yelling and insulting them, cursing out all their ancestors. Qing Liaoya

and the others gritted their teeth in anger, wishing they could roast and eat this owl.

Zhang Ruochen, Wang Xu, and Zhan Yu's battle continued. It was difficult to end. They exchanged more than 1,000 blows, using all their trump cards, but they still couldn't produce a winner.

A destructive ball of light formed in the Massive Heavenly Net Formation above Zhang Ruochen's head. If it fell, he could be turned to dust.

But the cultivator in charge didn't dare to move. He was afraid of accidentally killing Wang Xu and Zhan Yu.

The elites of all the major worlds outside the Yin and Yang Palace were dumbfounded.

"Zhang Ruochen is quite terrifying. Even Wang Xu and Zhan Yu together can't take him down." A young half-step Saint King gulped in fear.

Wang Xu wore a mask, but many cultivators recognized his broadsword and techniques, so they guessed his identity.

The Saintess of an ancient sect looked on with glittering eyes. "A powerful god's grandson of my world once fought with Wang Xu. Wang Xu cut off his right arm with one strike. If Wang Xu hadn't been afraid of offending a god, he probably would've cut off more."

"Half a year ago, I saw with my own eyes in the merits battlefield that Zhan Yu killed a second step Saint King from Hell Field with one strike. Just one strike."

...

Actually, everyone thought that Wang Xu and Zhan Yu together were more than enough to take Zhang Ruochen down.

Even Qiong Lin thought so.

Thus, he didn't attack and just stood on the side of the Sun and Moon Star Combined Formation to prevent Zhang Ruochen from escaping. If Zhang Ruochen tried to break out of the formation, he'd be forced back.

But as time passed, Qiong Lin grew more and more disappointed in Wang Xu and Zhan Yu.

Thus, he looked at a couple among the Evil Way cultivators.
“Sir and Lady Mu, I’m afraid you two must act now to end the battle quickly.”

Chapter 1608 - Hundred Step No Lives

Chapter 1608: Hundred Step No Lives

The man called Mr. Mu looked to be around thirty years old. He had thick eyebrows, wearing a wooden hat. He'd been staring at the three people fighting at the center of Sun and Moon Star Combined Formation.

"They're too young to put up a good fight," said Mr. Mu.

Mrs. Mu looked very young. She had smooth skin and a beautiful face. She said, "We're much better at saint spells than Wang Xu and Zhan Yu. We can defeat them within a hundred moves if we're at the same level.

"But that Zhang Ruochen kid is difficult to deal with. From every aspect, he's a pinnacle being under saint kings. He doesn't have any weaknesses."

Mr. Mu shook his head and said, "He isn't perfect. Zhang Ruochen's still very weak in the Way of Truth, and if I'm correct, he's only fully comprehended the second Visualization Picture on the first level of Truth Godly Palace. He can only amplify his saint spells three times.

"As for Zhan Yu, he's fully comprehended the third Visualization Picture, and he can improve his saint spell by four times.

"Wang Xu is more impressive. I heard that he's comprehended 'Flower in the Haze' and crossed the fourth level of Ocean of Truth. He's one step away from out comprehension on Way of Truth."

Mrs. Mu chuckled. "Zhang Ruochen drank saint wine that can improve his strength, which is more than enough to make up for his weakness in the Way of Truth."

"Seems like we need to take action to end the fight," said Mr. Mu.

Before becoming saint kings, both Mr. and Mrs. Mu were on the ‘Saints Merits Rank’, but they were ranked low.

It’d been more than a century since they became saint kings.

They’d comprehended a great many saintly way rules in the past hundred-something years, and they’d refined top-tier saint spells and collected powerful saint weapons, having better battle experience.

Which was why they were still more powerful than Wang Xu and Zhan Yu even if their cultivation was only at half-step-saint-king level.

“Evil Vase Finger.”

Mr. Mu pinched his right hand into a bizarre finger technique.

Evil Qi spun around his fingers, forming a vase.

It was an ordinary mid-class saint spell, but with Mr. Mu’s great power and the great number of saintly way rules in his body, he mobilized almost a hundred finger way rules, merging them with his saint spell.

Evil Qi gushed out, turning Mr. Mu’s body into a black whirlpool.

Wang Xu was only able to mobilize twenty to thirty saintly way rules when he was performing a mid-class saint spell.

The same mid-class saint spell would have completely different power when it was merged with a different number of saintly way rules.

Just as Mr. Mu’s body turned into a black hole and he was about to rush into Sun and Moon Star Combined Formation, Mrs. Mu also performed a mid-class saint spell, turning into a white whirlpool and crashing the formation.

There were originally three great beings in the formation, but now, there were five.

Everyone thought that Zhang Ruochen would be defeated and killed very soon.

However, the fight only got fiercer and fiercer.

Ling Feiyu was hiding in the dark outside Yin and Yang Palace. She was clinging to her Heaven-Burier Sword, staring at the five people fighting in the formation. If she hadn't known Zhang Ruochen's plan beforehand, she would've rushed in already.

The power ripples coming out of the fight among the five great beings got stronger and stronger, which exerted much more pressure on the Song siblings, and their ancestral weapons were shaking, numbing their arms.

All the monks from the evil way around them looked at each other, shocked.

Zhang Ruochen was unbelievably strong. The combined effort of Wang Xu, Zhan Yu, Mr. Mu, and Mrs. Mu couldn't take him down.

Gradually, Qiong Ling noticed something off.

“Wait, Zhang Ruochen only rivaled Wang Xu, and after Zhan Yu joining the fight, they're at a stalemate. Now after the Mus joined, how can they still be in a stalemate?”

Suddenly, Qiong Ling realized something, and he yelled, “Careful! Get away from Zhang Ruochen!”

Wang Xu, Zhan Yu, Mr. Mu, and Mrs. Mu all realized a danger coming with their experience.

Just as they were about to get out of Sun and Moon Star Combined Formation, they saw Zhang Ruochen smile wickedly.

Two runes showed up in Zhang Ruochen's left hand.

Actually, Zhang Ruochen had had those two runes in his hand for a long time, but they didn't notice them until now.

Zhang Ruochen put a rune on his body, then wielded another rune and mumbled, “Hundred Step No Lives.”

Dozens of engravings emerged on the rune, and then, it gleamed with saint light.

Even the monks far from the Yin and Yang Palace felt that their eyes pained seeing the light coming out of Hundred Step

No Lives Rune. They saw a giant light ball with a diameter of a thousand feet outside Yin and Yang Palace.

The energies turned into an apocalyptic storm, engulfing the entire Yin and Yang Palace. If it weren't for Massive Heavenly Net Formation, that storm would've rushed into Heavenly Capital Saint Market, destroying a lot of saint shops.

Wang Xu, Zhan Yu, Mr. Mu, Mrs. Mu, and the Song siblings were the closest, all less than three hundred feet away from Zhang Ruochen, so they were hit the hardest.

The protection runes on the Song siblings all exploded, and their flesh turned into saint bones. Their ancestral weapons also bounced away, hitting the light wall of Massive Heavenly Net Formation, leading to ripples.

If Mr. Mu and Mrs. Mu's cultivation wasn't suppressed, they could easily ward off the power from the Hundred Step No Lives Rune. They'd probably only be slightly injured.

However, after their cultivation was suppressed, they fell in blood, seriously harmed.

Mr. Mu's chest caved in, and his left arm was crushed. Half his body was ragged.

As for Mrs. Mu, her face was covered with blood, and half her head was blown off. There was a crack on her lower abdomen, and lots of saint Qi gushed out of it.

Zhan Yan had a sturdy body, so he wasn't killed by the Hundred Step No Lives Rune. He was still breathing.

Only Wang Xu was still standing, but there was blood on his lips.

It wasn't because Wang Xu was more careful or powerful than other monks, but because he was very intimidated by Zhang Ruochen's Sword Technique of Time last time, and he knew there was nothing he could do himself to ward it off.

After getting back to Ruiya Field, Wang Xu asked his father, who was a God, to carve defense godly engravings on his body.

Before meeting Zhang Ruochen, Wang Xu didn't want godly engravings at all.

With godly engravings, monks would lose a sense of danger, which was harmful to refining. The prouder a monk was, the less they wanted outer power to protect themselves.

Wang Xu felt lucky now. "Thank God I asked my father to carve defense godly engravings, otherwise, I would've been killed. I don't have as sturdy of a body as Zhan Yan."

However, after the destructive power from the Hundred Step No Lives Rune, Wang Xu's godly engravings became dimmer.

A God didn't want his son to rely on godly engravings too much, so he didn't carve any permanent godly engravings, and besides, the engravings could only ward off ninety percent of attack power.

Aside from Wang Xu, Zhan Xu, and the other six people closest to Zhang Ruochen, there were also seventeen other monks from the Evil Way a thousand feet away from Zhang Ruochen who got killed by the rune.

Dozens of monks from the Evil Way got injured.

The rune was way stronger than Tiangang Purple Fire Rune, and Zhang Ruochen lured Wang Xu, Zhan Yu, Mr. Mu, Mrs. Mu, and the Song siblings to his side, and then he crushed the Yin and Yang Palace again.

"Hundred Step No Lives Rune. It's a Hundred Step No Lives Rune. How did Zhang Ruochen get a rune like that?"

"Hundred Step No Lives Rune? I heard only Taoist King Tome had that kind of runes, and there're only around ten Hundred Step No Lives Runes in the world."

"Almost no monks under supreme saints can afford a Hundred Step No Lives Rune. How did Zhang Ruochen get so many saint stones to buy a Hundred Step No Lives Rune? Who sold it to him?"

...

Shang Ziyang suddenly looked cold. He said, "You Taoist people are being preposterous. Did you use the Hundred Step

No Lives Rune to trigger bloodshed? I'll summon some Death God Arrival Runes to Truth Godly Domain."

The man in the Taoist cape said, "That Hundred Step No Lives Rune has nothing to do with Taoist Sect."

Shang Ziyan always had a good temper, but just now, he almost lost control, which showed how angry he was.

"Nothing to do with Taoist Sect? Do you really think Guanghan Field can manage to get a Hundred Step No Lives Rune? Or do you think Zhang Ruochen himself can afford a Hundred Step No Lives Rune? Besides, nobody will be willing to sell a Hundred Step No Lives Rune.

Shang Ziyan didn't believe what the man in Taoist cape said at all. He stood up and prepared to head back to the Yin and Yang Palace.

Who knew how many runes Zhang Ruochen had obtained?

Even if Shang Ziyan wouldn't go capture Zhang Ruochen himself, he had to head back and tell Qiong Ling to stop trying to capture Zhang Ruochen alive and that they could kill Zhang Ruochen when necessary so that they wouldn't be tricked by Zhang Ruochen again.

The man in the Taoist cape smiled and said, "I've set up Four Symbols God-Sealing Formation around this observatory. Neither of us can get out of here. Stay and play chess with me. Remember, keep calm."

"Damn it."

Shang Ziyan took out a saint lamp, infused the lamp with his saint power, and triggered the Six Yao Complete Power of the saint lamp, dashing toward the night screen.

The light coming out of the saint lamp became brighter and brighter like a sun.

Boom!

The phantoms of the four divine beasts around the observatory became larger and larger, ascending from the four directions, warding off the saint lamp.

Shang Ziyan frowned, retracted his saint lamp, and was rendered speechless.

After a long while, Shang Ziyan smiled as he thought of something. He sat back to across from the man in the Taoist cape and said, "Okay. I'll stay here to play chess with you. Let's see whether Zhang Ruochen can hold them off with a couple of runes or not."

Seeing Shang Ziyan's smile, the man in the Taoist cape got confused.

Had Shang Ziyan figured out who was helping Zhang Ruochen and that he only had a limited number of runes?

Chapter 1609 - Third Party Involved

Chapter 1609: Third Party Involved

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The destructive abilities of the Hundred Step No Lives Rune was indeed very powerful. It injured countless top cultivators and killed a mass of Evil Way cultivators, shocking the entire field.

However, Zhang Ruochen was at the center of the destruction. Wouldn't he be killed even more horribly?

Evidently, their worry was unnecessary.

Just as Zhang Ruochen struck with the Hundred Step No Lives Rune, the seventh level Pagoda Rune on his body shone with dazzling light. It transformed into a seven-floor pagoda that covered his entire body.

Inside it, the Hundred Saint Blood Armor was caved in at his left shoulder. An injury appeared there and blood poured out.

That injury had nothing to do with the Hundred Step No Lives Rune. It was from Sir Mu's evil finger attack when he'd fought against four strong cultivators by himself.

In the end, Sir Mu, Lady Mu, Wang Xu, and Yu Zhan were very strong. Zhang Ruochen couldn't fend off their attacks by himself at all.

If not for the Hundred Step No Lives Rune, Zhang Ruochen would've definitely lost tragically as time dragged on.

Of course, without it, Zhang Ruochen wouldn't have let himself be surrounded by four strong cultivators. He would've

retreated elsewhere long ago.

“Now!”

Zhang Ruochen used the Spatial Move and appeared before Zhan Yu, stabbing at his forehead.

Twelve Saint King dragon souls rushed out of Zhan Yu. They clawed at Zhang Ruochen, trying to protect their master.

Poof!

Zhang Ruochen’s sword cultivation was incredibly advanced. He forced aside the 12 dragon souls and, taking advantage of how Zhan Yu was gravely injured, he stabbed through Zhan Yu’s head.

His head exploded with a burst, transforming into a cloud of bloody mist.

The 12 dragon souls didn’t scatter. They still snaked around Zhan Yu’s corpse.

Twelve Saint King dragon souls are more than one hundred million saint stones. Zhan Ye probably spent his entire fortune on them.

Zhang Ruochen was very tempted. If he refined all 12 dragon souls into his arm, not only would he be strengthened physically, he’d also complete the 11th palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm.

Now wasn’t the time to collect dragon souls. He had to take care of the other Evil Way cultivators first.

Zhang Ruochen was extremely fast. He flew to Mr. and Mrs. Mu and killed them.

Mr. and Mrs. Mu were strong fifth step Saint Kings and had the ability to become Supreme Saints. It was an incredible pity for them to die in the hands of a half-step Saint King.

Finally, Zhang Ruochen brought his sword down on Wang Xu to kill him.

Hit by the Hundred Step No Lives Rune, Wang Xu felt dizzy, his vision was blurry, and his ears rang. He was in a horrible state and could barely manage to stand.

By the time he circulated his Holy Qi and recovered, he saw black sword light stabbing toward his forehead.

He was very shocked.

It was too late to block it with his broadsword, so he could only activate the divine pattern on him again.

Boom!

The Abyss Ancient Sword hit Wang Xu's forehead but was stopped by the divine patterns. It was like hitting metal.

Divine light and sword Qi scattered in all directions.

Wang Xu heard ringing in his head as he flew out again and fell heavily onto the ground.

Right now, Wang Xu's head felt heavier than a mountain. It was very hard to stand up again. This was a bad sign.

“What powerful divine patterns.”

Zhang Ruochen looked at Wang Xu's patterns and frowned. He activated spatial power in preparation of tearing the space.

Even divine patterns shouldn't be able to resist the spatial crack.

This time, he must kill his mortal enemy, Wang Xu.

Zhang Ruochen stomped onto the ground with his right foot, making the earth collapse. Then he shot forward like an arrow.

At his fingertip, the space started trembling and fissuring.

The spatial crack was expanding.

Zhan Yu, Mr. and Mrs. Mu, and the four Song siblings had died, humiliating Qiong Lin. He obviously wouldn't watch as Zhang Ruochen killed Wang Xu now.

“Blood Light in the Sky!”

Qiong Lin's blood demon mace shone with brilliant bloody light, reflecting on the earth with blood. It was as if it had been dyed red.

Boom!

Dozens of bloody snake projections flew out of the mace. They had wings and their eyes were bloody.

The Blood Light in the Sky was a mid-level saint spell mace technique. When Qiong Lin used it, he was like a demon god. He waved the blood pillar, creating horrifying waves of power.

Before Zhang Ruochen could fully activate the spatial crack, it shrunk under the attack of the dozen snakes and finally closed shut.

“The saintly ripples are actually strong enough to disturb space.”

Seeing the spatial crack disappear, Zhang Ruochen knew that he'd lost the chance to kill Wang Xu. Unhappy, he waved his arm and threw the Emperor Yi Bone Staff out.

After it flew out, it transformed into a black skeleton and stepped on Wang Xu, continuing to attack the divine patterns on his body.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen waved his Abyss Ancient Sword and clashed against Qiong Lin's demonic mace.

As soon as they touched, Zhang Ruochen flew backward like a broken kite. He slammed heavily against a wall in the Yin and Yang Palace.

Qiong Lin's earlier hit had been even stronger than Zhan Yu. Zhang Ruochen used a sword technique hurriedly to block it, but he obviously couldn't.

Of course, this was because Qiong Lin's cultivation was very advanced. He was even better than Zhan Yu in the Way of Truth and spells, so that was why he was so strong.

If they didn't use the Rules of Truth or saint spells, only fighting with strength, Qiong Lin might not be able to beat Zhan Yu.

Qiong Lin looked back and roared, “Immediately repress that black skeleton!”

The cultivators of the Yin and Yang Palace had all been stunned by the destructiveness of the Tiangang Purple Fire Rune and Hundred Step No Lives Rune. They'd all released

defensive techniques. Some had activated their Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon armor, some pulled out defensive rune scrolls and held them in their hands, while others wrapped defensive images around them.

Hearing Qiong Lin's order, seven evil shadows rushed out, each attacking. Soon, they used a ghost-fire bronze tripod to repress the black skeleton and save Wang Xu.

Seeing this, Qiong Lin was finally a bit relieved. He prepared to fight Zhang Ruochen with his full focus.

“How come I suddenly feel weak? I can't gather my strength.”

Qiong Lin felt strange. Afraid of getting tricked by Zhang Ruochen, he grew cautious and hurriedly used spiritual power to check his body.

If he died without a clear reason like Mr. and Mrs. Mu, his reputation would be ruined completely.

Careful. He had to be extremely careful.

But after checking, Qiong Lin didn't discover anything strange. As he circulated his demonic Qi, the faint weakness disappeared too.

“Did something happen with my hell technique?”

Qiong Lin decided to repress Zhang Ruochen and then isolate himself to improve his technique.

If he ignored this small problem and let it grow, it could turn into a fatal flaw.

After that huge battle, all buildings within 900 feet of the Yin and Yang Palace's gates were flattened, other than the Moon Goddess' statue.

Inside, other than the ten major pavilions and formation towers, all other pagodas and buildings were all rubble.

Zhang Ruochen slammed into a wall of a pavilion. Before he could stand up, the Massive Heavenly Net Formation appeared above his head, forming a ball of light.

Whoosh!

A beam of white light fell out of the ball. It made the air within 100 feet grow heavier.

After clashing with Qiong Lin, Zhang Ruochen's blood Qi was rumbling and his Holy Qi was in a mess. He could only gather 30 to 40% of his power. How could he block the Massive Heavenly Net Formation's attack?

Before the white light even fell down, Zhang Ruochen already felt like his body was being pressed under a divine mountain. He couldn't move at all.

I heard that the Massive Heavenly Net Formation is able to injure a seventh step Saint King. It seems like I'll have to use the seventh level Pagoda Rune.

The seventh level Pagoda Rune had to cool for two hours after each use. If it was used before cooling, then the lifespan would be shortened greatly.

But Zhang Ruochen couldn't care about so much now. He could only save his life by using the rune.

He'd actually thought about using the Reverse God Stele to destroy all the formation runes in the Yin and Yang Palace and the Evil Way cultivators' weapons.

After thinking carefully, Zhang Ruochen felt that it was still too risky to use the Reverse God Stele.

He'd made such a large commotion here tonight. He may attract Supreme Saints from the Truth Heavenly Palace. How could a Supreme Saint not recognize the Reverse God Stele?

Even with the Glass Heaven Cover, it might not be able to fool a Supreme Saint.

Thus, Zhang Ruochen had decided not to reveal the Reverse God Stele unless he was in the most desperate state.

Even if he couldn't destroy the Yin and Yang Palace tonight, he could retreat and plan for the long-term. He couldn't take such a big risk.

Neither losing the Reverse God Stele nor losing his life was something that Zhang Ruochen wanted to see.

Buddhist light spewed out of the rune, forming a seven-floor pagoda. Each level wrapped around Zhang Ruochen's body, clashing against the falling white light.

Boom, boom!

An explosion sounded.

The seven-level Buddhist pagoda that could stop a seventh step Saint King was actually shattered by the formation's light beam.

With each level that shattered, Zhang Ruochen's heartbeat sped up a bit more.

Even a seventh level Pagoda Rune can't block the Massive Heavenly Net Formation's attack? Zhang Ruochen clenched his teeth. He hurriedly circulated his Holy Qi, trying to calm the chaotic Blood Qi and Holy Qi inside.

He could only face this crisis more calmly after recovering his cultivation.

Thankfully, after five levels were shattered, the attack from the Massive Heavenly Net Formation weakened quickly and disappeared.

Outside the Yin and Yang Palace, Ling Feiyu let out a sigh.

Before attacking the palace, Zhang Ruochen had ordered her to stand outside and wait for his command. Once he prepared to use the Reverse God Stele, Ling Feiyu would use the Glass Heaven Cover and cover up the Yin and Yang Palace.

But she still didn't get any news from Zhang Ruochen.

She was very confused. "The Massive Heavenly Net Formation is so powerful. Why hasn't Zhang Ruochen used the Reverse God Stele yet to destroy it?"

"Perhaps Master changed his plan suddenly," Demonic Sound wondered. "After all, using the Reverse God Stele... isn't just an average risk."

Just then, Ling Feiyu's eyes narrowed. She saw a small door of light open at the side of the Massive Heavenly Net Formation.

Two Evil Way cultivators helped the heavily injured Wang Xu out of the Yin and Yang Palace.

Wang Xu's identity was extraordinary. If he was killed by Zhang Ruochen, all the Evil Way cultivators in the Yin and Yang Palace would be in trouble. Thus, Qiong Lin ordered two strong figures to help Wang Xu away.

“Capture him!”

Ling Feiyu was clear that Wang Xu had a special status. If he was captured, then she would be able to negotiate with Shang Ziyang if Zhang Ruochen was captured in the palace.

But before she could attack, another group of cultivators came out first, surrounding the two Evil Way cultivators and Wang Xu.

Chapter 1610 - Luo Xu and Li Xian

Chapter 1610: Luo Xu and Li Xian

Wang Xu was severely injured, and his face paled.

This was the second great defeat in his life, and he fell into the hands of the same person.

Actually, Wang Xu didn't want to retreat, as he still had a couple of slaying skills, and he might be able to crush Zhang Ruochen once he performed them.

However, the monks from the evil way in the Yin and Yang Palace didn't think he was capable of that.

Which was why two saint kings from the evil way, 'Blue Ghost' and 'Ghost Wind,' escorted him out of the Yin and Yang Palace.

As long as they left the Yin and Yang Palace, they would get out of the suppression of All Lives Equal, so Blue Ghost and Ghost Wind would be able to deal with Zhang Ruochen, as they were third-step saint kings.

Safety first.

"Let me go. I have an upper-grade healing divine medicinal pill, and I'll be back in my prime after fifteen minutes."

Wang Xu looked cold, as he didn't want to run off like a loser. He wanted to head back to the Yin and Yang Palace to capture Zhang Ruochen himself to save face.

If it weren't for Zhang Ruochen's Hundred Step No Lives Rune, he wouldn't have been crushed like that.

He also had an attack-type rune. Although it wasn't as powerful as Hundred Step No Lives Rune, it was more than enough to kill Zhang Ruochen. He just didn't have the time to use it.

Blue Ghost shook his head and said, “We have Lord Qiong Ling, Lord King Flame, Lord Queen Lian, and Lord Xie Cheng to guard the Yin and Yang Palace. Zhang Ruochen won’t be able to turn it upside down. Let’s leave here now, your highness.”

Wang Xu was reluctant, but he had to take out a blue divine medicinal pill, swallowing it to heal himself.

However, just as they walked out of the Yin and Yang Palace, they heard clacking sound as if metal scales were clashing with each other.

“Our enemies are hiding in the dark.”

Ghost Wind was alerted. He twisted his waist, and then, a small triangular golden shield showed up in his hand.

Saint Qi was infused into the small shield, and it glowed brighter and brighter.

There were silver light spots in the dark like the milky way.

As the milky way got closer and closer, Ghost Wind, Blue Ghost, and Wang Xu saw that there were silver scales in the milky way, and the scales emanated ancient forces, looking sharp.

The sound got louder and louder, and the milky way made of silver scales hit them all down.

Ghost Wind’s small shield was divided into two parts, and then four parts. In the end, it turned into sixty-four golden triangular shields, standing in sixty-four directions, warding off all the silver scales.

Blue Ghost’s eyes glowed with ghost fire, and he yelled, “Which field are you from? How dare you attack us, from the Yin and Yang Palace?”

Someone laughed in the dark. “You guys killed the saints from Kunlun’s Field. Why can’t we attack you?”

“Kunlun’s Field?”

Blue Ghost and Ghost Wind were both dazed.

The creature controlling the silver scales was immensely powerful, in the same class as Ghost Wind. They didn't expect Kunlun's Field to have such powerful beings.

After wind sounds, more than ten people rushed out of the dark, encircling the three of them.

An ordinary-looking woman reached out her arm and waved at the silver scales in the sky, and then, the scales flew back, turning into a silver-scaled long robe.

That woman was a creature from Kunlun's Field, but she wasn't a human monk. Instead, she was a Taigu remain from 'Nine Li Palace,' a superpower from Savage Barren Territory.

She was Li Xian, from Dragon Li Cat Clan.

Lian Xian, Prince White Li and Princess White Li were all discovered from a Taigu divine mountain by Nine Li Palace. Li Xian was incubated before the latter two, and her bloodline was stronger, so she'd become a saint king a long time ago.

As for Princess White Li, she took godly medicine and went through the Genesis, so her bloodline was slightly stronger than Li Xian's.

Prince White Li and Princess White Li were standing behind Li Xian, and aside from them, there were three descendants from Taigu four ferocious beasts, Rosefinch Fairy, Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon and the Royal Prince of the Kun.

As for the human race, Luo Xu, who was wearing a blue blouse, was standing at the front.

The five people on 'Five Heroes List,' Wan Zhaoyi, Pei Yutian, Buddha Xinshu, Chen Wutian, and Wu Hao, and Empress Chi Yao's disciples, Xue Wuye, Monk Lidi, and Gai Tianjiao were also there.

Obviously, Kunlun's Field was worried that its monks would be humiliated if they only sent saints to Truth Heavenly Domain.

Which was why they picked one saint king to lead both the human team and the beast team.

Not all the saint kings were eligible to enter Truth Godly Palace, as it had strict age restriction, which could screen ninety-nine percent of the saint kings from Kunlun's Field. Perhaps only less than ten people fit the criterion.

Kunlun's Field was under the rule of First Central Empire, so the monks who were selected to refine in Truth Godly Palace were either from the imperial government or the powers close to the imperial government.

Which was why the leader of the human race was Luo Xu from Martial Market Bank, not Ling Feiyu, who was rebellious from the demonic sect.

All of the monks from Kunlun's Field were extraordinary beings. They managed to become saints when the heavenly way rules were broken.

Now that they came to Heavenly World, with the Spinning Mark that could speed up time by thirty times and the godly corpse, their refining efficiency was boosted.

It'd only been a short time since Luo Xu became a saint king, but now, he was already a third-step saint king, and it would only be a matter of time before he became a supreme saint.

“You monks from Kunlun's Field dare interfere with what's happening tonight? Are you tired of being alive?” Blue Ghost sneered.

Luo Xu said, “When Kunlun's Field was roaming Heaven World, none of you guys dared talk like that with us. Even if Kunlun's Field has fallen, the monks from Kunlun's Field are still fearless. You killed the monks from our field, so today, you'll pay.”

“Haha. Even if we're both third-step saint kings, I can easily suppress you with one hand.”

Blue Ghost raised his left hand, and tumbling demonic Qi gushed out, turning his palm into a vast five-finger land.

He flipped his palm, suppressing toward Luo Xu.

Luo Xu looked calm. He clenched his fist, raised his arms, and all the water Qi in Heavenly Capital Mountain gathered

toward him.

At the next moment, a tumbling river showed up, flying out with Luo Xu's fist print.

Boom!

The river clashed with the five-finger land, tearing the latter apart and hitting Blue Ghost.

Bang!

Following a clacking sound, Blue Ghost's saint armor caved because of the fist print, and he bounced away, hitting the light wall of Massive Heavenly Net Formation.

He easily took down a great being from Black Demon Field.

Luo Xu's power thrilled the monks from all the fields, and besides, his Luo Water Fist Technique was recognized by some knowledgeable beings.

"The conception in that fist technique looks like Heavenly River Fist."

"Heavenly River Fist? How is that possible? Luo Goddess died a couple hundred years ago, and her Heavenly River Fist should've been lost, as she didn't pass it to anyone."

"It must be a fist technique that's similar."

...

Ling Feiyu, standing in the dark, was also surprised.

Ling Feiyu became a saint king before Luo Xu did, and she'd cultivated longer when she was a saint, yet Luo Xu's power was already in her class.

After all, Luo Xu came from Martial Market Bank, which was close to the imperial government, so he got to use all the core resources in Kunlun's Field, like refining in Spinning Mark and the godly corpse.

On the contrary, the entire Kunlun's Field knew that Ling Feiyu was a friend of Zhang Ruochen, so there was no way the imperial government would give its best refining resources to her.

And besides, Luo Xu's talent, comprehension, and willpower were all in her class, so with the proper external help, he improved faster than her.

As the granddaughter of a demonic emperor and the daughter of a mind power supreme saint, Ling Feiyu knew a lot of secrets.

Actually, Kunlun's Field's refining environment had changed since eight hundred years ago, as if an invisible force was repairing the broken rules of heaven and earth.

Which was why the refining environment of Kunlun's Field got better bit by bit.

Everyone else only knew that she and Luo Xu only reached Peak Realm in Heavenly Realm, but they'd both reached Peak Realm in all Martial Way Four Realms. They just kept it a secret.

The top talents in Kunlun's Field in the past eight hundred years, Death Zen Ancestor, Ling Feiyu, Luo Xu, Wan Zhaoyi and Zhang Ruochen had all reached Peak Realm four times, but all of them kept it a secret.

Blue Ghost and Ghost Wind were both severely injured, and they weren't able to hold Luo Xu and Li Xian off for long.

Luo Xu and Li Xian didn't dare kill people in Heavenly Capital Saint Market, so they tied them up with Saint-binding Chains.

Princess White Li, standing behind Li Xian, said, "Throw them into the Yin and Yang Palace and ask Zhang Ruochen to kill them."

Li Xian nodded.

The Yin and Yang Palace was Moon Goddess's dojo, so only monks from Guanghan Field could get away with killing people inside.

Li Xian frowned and said, "I'm still not one hundred percent sure. Zhang Ruochen was forced out of Kunlun's Field by her majesty, and the grudge between them is deep. Will he really help us take back Kunlun's Field's dojo if we help him now?"

Luo Xu said, “Rest assured. Zhang Ruochen never mixed feelings with real issues. He won’t hate the monks from Kunlun’s Field because of the empress. We need to make some compromises if we really want him to help us, of course.”

“Let’s take down Wang Xu using Light Myriad Scroll to break Massive Heavenly Net Formation.” Li Xian looked ferocious.

Chapter 1611 - Light Myriad Scroll

Chapter 1611: Light Myriad Scroll

Wang Xu was hurt, but he was still seventh on the Saints Merits Rank. When Luo Xu and Min Xuan were fighting Blue Ghost and Ghost Wind, he immediately used the Rule of Fleeting Light and sped toward the Yin and Yang Palace.

“Open the formation!” he yelled.

Wang Xu knew that when faced with a siege from Kunlun’s Field, going back to the Yin and Yang Palace was the best choice.

But there was a human in white clothing standing below the formation’s light curtain.

He was very handsome and attractive. He carried a three-foot-long sword and smiled at Wang Xu.

“Spatial Move? You cultivated the Way of Space too?” Wang Xu was incredulous.

Xue Wuye stood across from Wang Xu and looked at the spatial mark on his palm. He smiled thinly. “My attainment in the Way of Space is still very shallow. I just learned how to do the Spatial Move.”

Wang Xu could tell that this human was only a spatial cultivator and not a space manipulator. His usage of the Way of Space was far from Zhang Ruochen.

His cultivation also hadn’t reached the Saint King Realm either.

Thus, even though Wang Xu was injured, he didn’t take it seriously. He lifted his Xu Moon Blade and moved with the broadsword. A dozen beams of sword light flew toward Xue Wuye.

Xue Wuye had a serious expression. He didn't dare to underestimate Wang Xu and fought with all his might.

As sword light flew out, it actually lured over thunder, lightning, dusk, starry mist and other phenomena. They resolved Wang Xu's broadsword techniques.

This man's attainment in the Sword Way is so advanced. He must've cultivated the Wordless Sword Manual, the top technique of the Taichi Way from Kunlun's Field.

If Wang Xu was at his best state, he wouldn't be afraid of this precise sword technique.

But now, he couldn't even block this nameless junior from a fallen world. He couldn't do anything.

It seems that Kunlun's Field hasn't fallen completely, Wang Xu thought. We must rob them of their cultivation techniques, top saint spells, divine weapons, and end their ways. Otherwise, as long as their techniques are still passed down, some powerful figures will still be produced.

Kunlun's Field had fallen for 100,000 years, but as the saying went, a starved camel was still larger than a horse.

Kunlun's Field had some techniques, saint spells, and divine weapons that tempted even the gods and Supreme Saints of Heaven Field. For example, Wang Xu had heard his father mention the Wordless Sword Manual many times before. His father was an ancient god who had lived for almost 200,000 years, but he still yearned for it.

Xue Wuye didn't plan on fighting with Wang Xu alone. He looked toward Monk Lidi and Gai Tianjiao. "Attack together and finish this quickly."

Whoosh!

Monk Lidi was like a golden arhat. He grabbed the hilt of his Buddhist Butcher Sword and lifted the two-meter-long demonic sword.

Demonic Qi instantly poured out of the sword, turning into a black cloud.

Kaboom!

After clashing with the Buddhist Butcher Sword, Wang Xu was actually forced to stumble back and he coughed out blood again.

Such strong Demonic Qi. Could this monk's sword be the sword of the legendary demon god from Kunlun's Field, the Buddhist Butcher Sword? No, the Buddhist Butcher Sword's demonic elements are so strong. How can a mortal body withstand the invasion of such strong demonic elements?

Wang Xu's father had once fought with the owner of the Buddhist Butcher Sword and had told Wang Xu about it.

Wang Xu also cultivated the Broadsword Way, so he'd read about relevant records in an ancient book. He had a deep impression of the Buddhist Butcher Sword.

However, Wang Xu couldn't believe that such a powerful and legendary demonic sword was held in the hands of a half-step Saint King.

Wang Xu studied Monk Lidi. He immediately realized that this aggressive monk actually had a Bodhisattva's golden body.

He finally understood why the man could force him back with one strike.

A Bodhisattva's cultivation was as strong as a Supreme Saint. How could he not be strong if he'd melded with a Bodhisattva's golden body?

While Wang Xu was in shock, another burly man attacked from the distance.

This burly man's body surged with Divine Fire Jingmie and rode a Bi'an beast. He looked very menacing.

What was strange was that this man actually wore a loose feminine dress and had full breasts.

This burly man was none other than Gai Tianjiao, the first senior sister of the Yin and Yang Sect.

The Bi'an beast that Gai Tianjiao rode was extraordinary too. It was one of the four Taigu menaces. However, the technique that it cultivated countered Gai Tianjiao's, so she could tame it and turn it into a mount.

Even in Wang Xu's optimal state, he might not be able to win against three people at the same time. Now that he was hurt, it would be even harder.

Seems like I'll have to use that rune scroll.

Heavy murderous intent surged in Wang Xu's eyes. He took out a white rune scroll between two fingers and poured Holy Qi in.

This Snow Furnace Rune was extremely expensive and powerful.

"No, stop him!"

Luo Xu sensed something amiss. He immediately attacked Wang Xu's chest with overwhelming fist prints.

Li Xian was even faster. Her silver saint robe flew out and swelled with wind. It flew above Wang Xu, Xue Wuye, Monk Lidi, and Gai Tianjiao, becoming hundreds of feet long.

As soon as the Snow Furnace Rune flew out, it was wrapped by the silver robe.

Xue Wuye, Lidi, and Gai Tianjiao were relieved. After all, a Deity's rune would definitely be strong. If it exploded, they wouldn't be able to stop it.

"That is..."

Xue Wuye's eyes stared at the silver robe that was clumped into a ball. He then flew back as a streak of sword light.

Kaboom!

There was a huge boom.

The silver robe was torn apart by the Snow Furnace Rune, transforming into silver scales in the sky.

Those scales flew in all directions like streaks of silver.

Gai Tianjiao and Lidi had reacted a bit too slowly. They were hit by the rune scroll's power first and flew back like rags. They landed heavily on the ground.

The Snow Furnace Rune's power was extremely frigid. Lidi and Gai Tianjiao's bodies were immediately frozen into ice

cubes. Of course, Gai Tianjiao's mount, the Bi'an beast, was also frozen.

Luo Xu and Li Xian both used defensive spells to block the remaining power of the Snow Furnace Rune. But even with their cultivation, they were forced back a few dozen steps.

By the time the rune's power dissipated slightly, the cultivators from Kunlun's Field discovered that Wang Xu had already escaped back into the Massive Heavenly Net Formation. He'd regrouped with the Evil Way cultivators in the Yin and Yang Palace.

"A Deity is indeed powerful. He has a lot of tactics." Luo Xu frowned slightly.

Li Xian had a cold expression. Strings of Holy Qi flew out to connect the silver scales. She collected them back and reformed a saint robe.

However, the silver light had dimmed.

Luo Xu looked at the frozen Lidi and Gai Tianjiao. With a worried expression, he walked over quickly.

These two Heirs were Empress Chi Yao's proud disciples. They'd received quite incredible inheritances and carried the important mission of Kunlun's Field. Nothing should happen to them.

Boom! Boom!

Luo Xu was still a dozen feet away from them when the two ice cubes exploded by themselves.

Divine Fire Jingmie poured out of Gai Tianjiao's body. The ice shards were instantly burned into white vapor. She shuddered. "Thankfully we had Miss Li's silver scale robe that stopped most of the destructive power from the rune scroll. Otherwise, I would've definitely been hurt badly."

Buddhist light shone from Monk Lidi's body. Countless Sanskrit words emerged on his skin like tadpoles. He actually didn't have any injuries at all.

The Bi'an beast also broke free from the ice and was slightly injured.

Inside the formation, Wang Xu saw this and sighed deeply. If not for that silver scale robe, the Snow Furnace Rune might've really been able to kill many Kunlun cultivators at once.

What a pity!

“Break the formation first.”

Luo Xu took out a long wooden box. He opened it, took out a scroll, and opened it slowly.

The painting was very long. With Luo Xu's cultivation, he could only reveal one meter and no more.

The one-meter-long scroll had the painting of an ancient city. It was built in the wilderness. The houses were very crude and made out of piles of stone and dirt. Most of the roofs were made out of straw. Outside the houses, humans in beast hide were making stone weapons. Some humans with wooden bats carried their prey back to the city.

It seemed to be a drawing of prehistoric humans. They were building the first human city, representing a new height of human civilization.

Only one meter was revealed, but an intimidating ancient aura floated out.

This painting was the sect treasure of the Art Sect, called “Light Myriad Scroll.” It was comparable to the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map, but it was even more ancient. Apparently, a famous human cultivator had drawn it in prehistoric ages and it was passed down until now.

The Light Myriad Scroll was both a defensive and protective treasure. It had had countless accomplishments throughout the history of Kunlun's Field.

In history, there was even a saying popular for a time: whoever has the Light Myriad Scroll has the world. When the painting is open completely, the entire Kunlun's Field will be illuminated.

For 100,000 years, Kunlun's Field had incomplete ways and rules but still produced Supreme Saints. Some of the top Supreme Saints wanted to control Kunlun's Field. They also

rose up in the Art Sect and tried to open the Light Myriad Scroll.

But, without fail, no one could open it completely.

Luo Xu glanced at Li Xian. “Let’s work together to illuminate all the lights.”

Holy Qi continuously poured out of them and went into the Light Myriad Scroll.

The scroll flew up and opened a bit more.

At the same time, specks of light actually emerged in those buildings. They were like lights shining from a city at night.

The Light Myriad Scroll flew above the Yin and Yang Palace, turning into a huge painting with overwhelming power. It covered the entire palace.

The Heavenly Capital Market City was lit up like daytime instantly.

Looking at the floating Light Myriad Scroll, the cultivators of the various worlds had different expressions. Some were surprised, some were tempted, and others were thoughtful.

Ji Fanxin saw how extraordinary it was and shock filled her eyes. “The ancient figures of Kunlun’s Field left behind quite a lot of treasures. Any random one can be the world treasure of a weaker world. But how can two third step Saint Kings dare to expose such a powerful treasure? Aren’t they afraid of getting killed?”

“It’s the same whether they reveal it or not.” The Fairy Extreme King chuckled. “Heaven Field and Hell Field both know about the divine battle from years ago. Many gods from both sides died in the Kunlun’s Field battleground and left behind many divine treasures and heritages. When the defense of Kunlun’s Field is broken down by Hell Field, both sides will carve it up again. Those treasures are in the hands of Kunlun’s Field now, but as for the future...ha.”

Chapter 1612 - Encirclement

Chapter 1612: Encirclement

“Massive Heavenly Net Formation is too powerful. My seventh-grade Pagoda Rune can only ward it off once or twice. I need to destroy this formation, otherwise, I won’t even be able to get out of here alive, not to mention destroy it.”

Zhang Ruochen could only have the advantage after he destroyed Massive Heavenly Net Formation.

He looked up and saw a black formation tower nearby.

The formation tower was around three hundred feet tall with twenty-seven levels. It seemed to be made of metal, and there was a formation tower beside each of the ten palaces in the Yin and Yang Palace.

The ten formation towers were the foundation of Massive Heavenly Net Formation.

It was impossible for Zhang Ruochen to break the formation with his strength, so he needed to destroy the formation towers to make the formation crumble.

Just as that thought hit his mind, he suddenly saw gleaming stars in the sky, and the stars glowed brighter and brighter as if they were falling.

All the monks in the Yin and Yang Palace felt a grave pressure, and they couldn’t help looking to the sky.

Where did the stars come from?

It was a scroll.

There were ancient cities on the scroll, and there were light spots in the cities. The light spots looked like stars, and some of them gave off terrifying heat.

Boom!

The scroll dived, and when it was around five hundred feet away from the ground, it hit the reticle of Massive Heavenly

Net Formation, giving out storming energies.

The reticle looked like a thin bubble that was about to burst.

The formation masters and monks from the Evil Way that were guarding the ten formation towers were all horrified.

The Yin and Yang Palace had hired an incredible formation saint master to set up the Massive Heavenly Net Formation.

Even a ninth-step saint king would find it difficult to break the Massive Heavenly Net Formation from the outside.

Because of Massive Heavenly Net Formation, the Yin and Yang Palace still managed to boom in Heavenly Capital Saint Market even if they had offended lots of large fields.

As Massive Heavenly Net Formation was shaken, the two leaders of the Yin and Yang Palace, King Flame and Queen Lian, couldn't stand there and watch anymore. They rushed out of Bliss Dungeon like a ball of flames and a breeze.

Inside the fireball stood a man that was around seven feet tall. He had muscles that looked like iron, and the light and flames coming out of his body scared all the absolute saints from the Evil Way.

As for that breeze, it formed a beautiful woman, looking slender and regal beside King Flame.

They all looked solemn, staring at 'Light Myriad Scroll' in the sky.

"It's such a priceless scroll. If I can get it, I won't be afraid of anyone under a supreme saint." Queen Lian was tempted.

King Flame yelled, "The masters of the ten formation towers, trigger your ten thousand patterns saint weapons to kill our enemies."

Whoosh!

Light pillars ascended from all the ten formation towers, rushing into the evil clouds.

A ten thousand patterns saint weapon that looked like a ruler in the cloud, giving off crimson light.

It was 'Life Blood Ruler,' which was an ancient ten thousand patterns saint weapon.

The inscriptions on the ruler merged with those on Massive Heavenly Net Formation. Life Blood Ruler floated above the Yin and Yang Palace, hiding in the evil clouds.

If saint kings made trouble in the Yin and Yang Palace, Life Blood Ruler would rush out of the evil clouds and injure him.

Inscriptions emerged on Live Blood Ruler, and four levels of saint power ripples emerged.

Its forces surged, and it seemed that the fifth level of saint power ripple was about to emerge.

A half-step saint king was only able to trigger two levels of saint power ripples of a ten thousand patterns saint weapon, utilizing its Second Yao Complete Power.

Live Blood Ruler wasn't triggered by the monks from the Yin and Yang Palace. Instead, it was triggered by the ten formation towers and Massive Heavenly Net Formation. It could exert Four Yao, or even Five Yao Complete Power.

Even King Flame and Queen Lian needed to put in lots of effort to activate the Five Yao Complete Power of a ten thousand patterns saint weapon.

Whoosh!

The fifth level of saint power ripples emanated, turning into bloody clouds and rushing into Massive Heavenly Net Formation, clashing with 'Light Myriad Scroll.'

Boom!

The two storming power clashed with each other, and power spread.

The saint shops and dojos in Heavenly Capital Saint Market immediately turned on their defense formations.

Light pillars surged on Heavenly Capital Mountain, dispersing the clouds surrounding the mountain.

Some prominent beings in Truth Godly Palace were alerted. The disciples of Gods patrolling Truth Heavenly Domain all

rushed to Heavenly Capital Saint Market.

Nobody knew whether there was a supreme saint here.

However, the disciples of Gods from Truth Godly Palace didn't stop the people from fighting each other, which confused many monks. Only a few monks figured out why.

Life Blood Ruler was extremely powerful, and it could easily kill a saint king.

However, 'Light Myriad Scroll' was stronger. Only Luo Xu and Li Xian were supporting it, yet they managed to ward off the power of Life Blood Ruler.

"Everyone."

The monks from Kunlun's Field stood behind Luo Xu and Li Xian, wielded saint Qi light pillars, and infused them into 'Light Myriad Scroll.'

Suddenly, the power coming out of the scroll became stronger, suppressing Life Blood Ruler.

Whoosh!

Another ten thousand patterns saint weapon flew out of the evil clouds in Massive Heavenly Net Formation, clashing with 'Light Myriad Scroll.'

It was a bronze spear whose Five Yao Complete Power had been activated. Combined with Life Blood Ruler, it was about to tear the scroll apart.

"'Light Myriad Scroll' wouldn't be broken, but the monks from Kunlun's Field weren't able to wield the true power of the scroll.

Under two Five Yao ten thousand patterns saint weapons, the monks from Kunlun's Field found it difficult to ward them both off.

"Let's help them. We need to hold off those ten thousand patterns saint weapons in Massive Heavenly Net Formation so that Zhang Ruochen has a better chance of destroying the formation towers."

Ling Feiyu immediately mobilized the demonic Qi in her body, pressed forward, and infused a demonic Qi light pillar into 'Light Myriad Scroll.'

Demonic Sound followed.

The three great beings from Hundred Flower Palace, Ji Fanxin, Queen Danling, and Fairy Extreme King, looked to the Yin and Yang Palace.

Queen Danling's eyes gleamed with fierce light. She said, "I didn't have hope for Zhang Ruochen, but I have to admit that he's the only creature who has a shot at taking down the Yin and Yang Palace. As long as he can destroy Massive Heavenly Net Formation, those who hate the Yin and Yang Palace will definitely go attack it."

Queen Danling then vanished, rushing into the night.

Fairy Extreme King was very concerned. He tried to stop Queen Danling, but he couldn't.

Both Fairy Extreme King and Ji Fanxin knew the torture and humiliation Queen Danling went through in the Yin and Yang Palace. Nothing else could placate her, and now that she saw the hope of annihilating the Yin and Yang Palace, she didn't hesitate to join.

However, Fairy Extreme King and Ji Fanxin couldn't take any action.

Their identity and cultivation made them a target. Once they helped, it would be impossible for them to hide from the Yin and Yang Palace and the power behind it.

If they failed to take down the Yin and Yang Palace, it'd bring a lot of trouble to Thousand Pistil Field and Hundred Flower Palace.

After a while, Queen Danling, who changed her appearance, infused 'Light Myriad Scroll' with a saint Qi light pillar.

The monks from large fields that held grudges against the Yin and Yang Palace and those whose friends and families were captured by the Yin and Yang Palace were all pondering whether they should help or not.

They were speculating about the chance of Zhang Ruochen's annihilating the Yin and Yang Palace.

If Zhang Ruochen failed, could they handle the revenge from the Yin and Yang Palace?

After a while...

Whoosh!

Whoosh!

...

Light pillars ascended in the night, infusing 'Light Myriad Scroll,' making the scroll stronger and stronger.

The Massive Heavenly Net Formation had been fully utilized, and all the six Five Yao ten thousand patterns saint weapons surged to barely ward off 'Light Myriad Scroll.'

King Flame was furious. "How dare those monks attack the Yin and Yang Palace." King Flame rushed out of the formation, wanting to find out those monks hiding in the dark.

However, 'Light Myriad Scroll' enveloped Massive Heavenly Net Formation, forbidding King Flame from going out.

King Flame's cultivation was only as strong as a half-step saint king inside Massive Heavenly Net Formation, so he couldn't do anything to the monks outside the formation.

Queen Lian was calmer. She sneered, "Massive Heavenly Net Formation isn't only an attack formation, but a defense formation as well. Even if they manage to support a divine scroll, they can't break Massive Heavenly Net Formation. Unless... Where is Zhang Ruochen?"

Queen Lian knew that the only way a monk broke the formation was to break the ten formation towers inside.

The biggest threat to the Yin and Yang Palace was Zhang Ruochen and that owl. As long as they killed them both, they could resolve the crisis the Yin and Yang Palace was facing.

Queen Lian tried to inspect Zhang Ruochen's traces because of that.

To her surprise, Zhang Ruochen was nowhere to be found, which made her heart skip a beat.

Chapter 1613 - Surrounded by Danger, Fighting Group of Demons Alone

Chapter 1613: Surrounded by Danger, Fighting Group of Demons Alone

“Use the Yin Yang Mirror and find Zhang Ruochen!” Queen Lian yelled.

The Yin Yang Mirror hovered in the air. Pushed by two Spiritual Power cultivators of the Blood Fox Race, black and white light spread out, shining in every corner of the Yin and Yang Palace.

Qiong Lin had 18 pupils, so he had shocking vision and soon found a figure in the light of the Yin Yang Mirror.

“There!”

He pointed in the direction of the Yi Formation Tower.

The Yin Yang Mirror is so powerful, Zhang Ruochen sighed. I used the True Hallucination Flower and Unfounded Pearl and even twisted the space, but I was still discovered.

Thankfully, he'd used the short time earlier to rush 30 feet toward the Yi Formation Tower. He struck with a six-foot-long spatial crack.

Since he wanted to destroy the formation tower, he obviously had to use his strongest move.

Poof!

Suddenly, a palm-sized rune scroll appeared on the Yi Formation Tower.

The rune dissolved into light specks in the sky.

The space around the formation tower was actually frozen. The leaves floating in the air all stopped.

When the spatial crack was within three feet of the formation tower, it slowed down and its width shrunk quickly. When it was about to hit the tower, the spatial crack closed completely and lost its power.

“A spatial freezing rune.”

Zhang Ruochen was very sensitive about space and discovered the reason.

The spatial freezing rune was recorded in the Time and Space Secret Guide, but it was very hard to create. Only a cultivator of Space and Rune Way could produce it.

In Kunlun’s Field, Zhang Ruochen could use spatial freezing to attack or stop enemies.

He could use it in Heaven Field too, but the space here was more stable and resilient. With his cultivation, he could only freeze a small range. He also couldn’t block too much power.

This way, the spatial freeze wasn’t exactly useful.

Zhang Ruochen’s grasp of space would only improve vastly again after he reached the Saint King Realm. Then, he could truly utilize the spatial freeze even in Heaven Field.

Queen Lian was relieved. “Thankfully, I bought a batch of spatial freeze runes from the Spatial Heavenly Palace beforehand.”

“Spending a fortune on buying spatial freeze runes was just to prevent Zhang Ruochen from attacking the ten formation towers secretly,” King Yan said. “I’d thought that it was unnecessary. I didn’t expect that it would really be useful.”

Tonight’s battle was a huge crisis for the Yin and Yang Palace. They couldn’t make any more mistakes.

Zhang Ruochen was sure that the Yi Formation Tower only had one spatial freeze rune and it had been used up now. Thus, he gathered power to strike with a second spatial crack.

“Heavenly Devil Eyes.”

Eighteen rivers of Blood Qi poured out of Qiong Lin’s 18 eyes. Eighteen demonic figures emerged at the top of the

rivers. Each one was majestic and charged forward like 18 mountains.

“Heavenly Devil Eyes? Could Qiong Lin have cultivated the horrible demonic technique on the Heavenly Devil Stone Inscription?”

Zhang Ruochen didn't have time to think carefully because the 18 blood rivers were before him.

It was impossible for Qiong Lin to give him time to produce another spatial crack.

“Break!”

Zhang Ruochen fought with all his might and struck horizontally with his sword.

Boom!

The 18 blood rivers and devilish figures were all cut by the Sword Qi, turning into strands of bloody mist.

Qiong Lin only cast the Heavenly Devil Eyes to delay Zhang Ruochen.

During this, Qiong Lin used lightning speed to reach within 100 feet of Zhang Ruochen. He slammed down with his demonic mace.

A horrible wave of demonic Qi flooded over.

Zhang Ruochen felt like he was standing on a vast demonic sea. Above him, a red pillar the size of a mountain crushed down. It was unavoidable.

Zhang Ruochen didn't retreat. Instead, his eyes sharpened.

Whoosh!

The blood and Holy Qi within him galloped like wild oxen. The Unmovable Emperor Ming broke out of his back. A phoenix and Luan emerged on his legs. The dragon and elephant soul appeared on his arms. The power from the Hundred Saints Blood Armor gathered toward the Abyss Ancient Sword.

“Eight levels of the world, all under my control.”

An incomplete Sword Eight cut down.

Kaboom!

The Abyss Ancient Sword and demonic mace clashed. Zhang Ruochen retreated quickly and almost hit the Yi Formation Tower.

Qiong Lin also flew back from Zhang Ruochen's power. His mace shook without stop.

Zhang Ruochen is so strong. He's actually comparable to me. Qiong Lin was slightly shocked.

But after this exchange, Qiong Lin felt that faint weakness again. It frightened him. He could only stop immediately to circulate his demonic Qi. He didn't dare to attack again.

While Qiong Lin and Zhang Ruochen were fighting each other, Queen Lian grabbed in the air. Four beams of cold Qi poured out of her hands. She controlled the four weapons left behind by the four Song siblings, making them hover around the Yi Formation Tower and locked the space gain.

"Ha, so the mysterious man I met in the Euphoria Underground Palace was you. Zhang Ruochen, I'll definitely play with you after I catch you." Queen Lian smirked.

She could see that Zhang Ruochen's masculine Yang Qi was 10,000 times more than others. That's why she said that to test him.

After all, it was very rare to have 10,000 times more Yang Qi.

Zhang Ruochen ignored her. After steadying himself, he immediately activated the runes on the Abyss Ancient Sword. He activated the complete First Yao power and hacked at the Formation Tower.

Queen Lian and King Yan didn't stop him. Instead, they approached him slowly and calmly.

Dense electric light emerged on the formation tower and hit the Abyss Ancient Sword. The terrifying electricity passed through the blade, going toward Zhang Ruochen.

King Yan huffed. “Overestimated yourself. The ten formation towers were established by a top formation master. A half-step Saint King can’t destroy it. You’re pretty good at manipulating space, but unfortunately, with the four weapons repressing it, you can’t use spatial power at all.”

Zhang Ruochen sensed the electricity surging on the tower. Each beam was like a lightning dragon. If he was struck, he’d probably be badly injured.

Thus, he immediately chose to abandon his sword and ricocheted back.

“Pretty fast reactions.”

Queen Lian was slightly disappointed. Then she looked at the two Blood Fox cultivators who were pushing the Yin Yang Mirror. “Use Chaotic Yin Yang and attack Zhang Ruochen’s Spiritual Power and saint soul directly.”

These two Blood Fox Spiritual Power cultivators were at the peak of level 54 for Spiritual Power.

As they added the Spiritual Power into the Yin Yang Mirror, the black and white light on the surface spun quickly. They transformed into a black and white beam of light and shone at Zhang Ruochen.

The Yin Yang Mirror was a strong Spiritual Power saint weapon. The Chaotic Yin Yang attack could disturb one’s mind and even tear apart their saint soul.

The light from the mirror barely touched Zhang Ruochen’s body, but he felt a stabbing pain in his head. His vision dimmed as if he was about to faint.

Just then, his Unfounded Pearl came into use. It actually blocked most of the Yin Yang Mirror’s Spiritual Power attack. He was able to take the remaining attack with his strong Spiritual Power.

“He actually has an Unfounded Pearl. This guy came quite prepared.” Queen Lian furrowed her brows.

“I will break your arms and legs personally!”

Qiong Lin had adjusted himself, suppressing the weakness he felt. Bloodthirsty Qi poured out of his eyes. He picked up the mace and strode toward Zhang Ruochen, attacking him.

In addition, a dozen other strong Evil Way cultivators also used their strongest attacks toward Zhang Ruochen. They prepared to capture him at once.

Zhang Ruochen took out a God Demon Rune and crushed it.

Boom!

The rune scroll's power enveloped his body.

His power increased instantly. As if possessed by a demon god, every exhale produced loud booms. He struck three times in a row and sent Qiong Lin flying sideways. He slammed into the ground.

Two half-step Saint Kings from the Evil Way struck with their Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons. They wanted to stop Zhang Ruochen from approaching the formation tower again.

“Go away!”

Zhang Ruochen stepped forward and struck the two weapons with his body. The two Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons fell to the ground like scrap metal, clattering.

“How is that possible? I activated the First Yao power.”

“Hurry and retreat. Zhang Ruochen is coming...”

The two strong half-step Saint Kings had just thought of retreating when Zhang Ruochen's two palms slammed down. They were turned into two piles of bloody flesh.

Right now, Zhang Ruochen flattened everything in his way.

King Yan's eyes darkened. “You actually have a God Demon Rune. That's coincidental. I also received one 100 years ago.”

A God Demon Rune costed two hundred million saint stones. It helped a cultivator have a third step Saint King's power for the span of ten breaths. No attack under the third step Saint King Realm could break past it either.

“You’ve already used seven breaths earlier. You only have three breaths left.”

King Yan actually took out a God Demon Rune and crushed it. His aura strengthened instantly, emanating an extremely aggressive power.

With one step, he was before Zhang Ruochen.

It was a battle between God Demon Runes.

The difference was that King Yan had ten breaths’ time while Zhang Ruochen only had three. Every cultivator thought that Zhang Ruochen would be crushed by King Yan after three breaths.

But Zhang Ruochen didn’t fight directly against King Yan. Instead, he did something that shocked and confused countless cultivators.

He actually turned his back to King Yan.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen’s posture, King Yan looked forward at the Yi Formation Tower and suddenly realized something. “Stop him!” he roared.

“Who dares to stop me?”

With his fastest speed, Zhang Ruochen crashed toward the door of the formation tower. The door was broken in with a loud boom. Zhang Ruochen ran into the tower.

Three half-step Saint Kings tried to stop him, but they were all sent flying. They were bloody when they fell onto the ground.

Zhang Ruochen couldn’t destroy the formation, but he could kill the formation master controlling the Massive Heavenly Net Formation inside the tower. How could King Yan let him succeed?

Chapter 1614 - Break Through

Chapter 1614: Break Through

Led by Queen Lian, King Flame, and Qiong Ling, all the one hundred monks from the Evil Way were all horrified.

Above them were thousands of fireballs floating on top of 'Light Myriad Scroll,' burning the formation. The power coming out of it was enormous.

Everyone in the ten formation towers needed to use their full strength to operate the six ten thousand patterns saint weapons to ward off the scroll.

If any formation tower wasn't careful enough, Massive Heavenly Net Formation would crumble.

Queen Lian gave the four ancestral weapons left by the Song siblings to the other four monks from the Evil Way, and as for her, she rushed into the formation tower like a whirlpool.

King Flame had rushed into the formation before her.

...

The monks outside the Yin and Yang Palace could see the battle in the formation, which made them nervous.

"Zhang Ruochen has entered the formation tower. This is a one-way street. He can either win or die trying."

"If Zhang Ruochen fails to break the formation towers, he'll definitely be killed by Queen Lian and King Flame."

"If Zhang Ruochen manages to break the formation towers, Massive Heavenly Net Formation will be rugged, and then it won't be able to ward off that godly scroll."

"Look! Another group of powerful beings from the Evil Way rushed into the formation tower. Zhang Ruochen has no way out now."

...

King Flame and Queen Lian were too powerful. They were like two mountains, scaring off all the monks who hated the Yin and Yang Palace.

Now that Zhang Ruochen was about to face them both, many monks sighed.

Fairy Extreme King looked to Ji Fanxin and asked, “Do you think Zhang Ruochen can defend himself against King Flame and Queen Lian with his runes?”

Ji Fanxin said indifferently, “King Flame and Queen Lian are the leaders of the Yin and Yang Palace. They must have lots of runes themselves. I hope Zhang Ruochen destroys that formation tower, but it’s just impossible...”

Fairy Extreme King also hoped that Zhang Ruochen could take down the Yin and Yang Palace, but he had to admit that Zhang Ruochen was too weak to defeat King Flame and Queen Lian. Besides, Qiong Ling and Xie Cheng, who hadn’t shown up, were also powerful beings.

Any of them could deter a half-step saint king.

Only Zhang Ruochen had the guts to confront them.

Ji Fanxin said, “But they’re going to fight inside the formation tower. King Flame and Queen Lian won’t perform techniques that’re too forceful. If they damage the formation tower, there’ll be no point in suppressing Zhang Ruochen.”

“Are you saying Zhang Ruochen has a chance?”

Ji Fanxin said, “It all depends on his power.”

...

Inside the formation, Zhang Ruochen was fighting King Flame.

Both of them were using God Demon Runes. One of them was wielding his fist while the other was using his palm, filling the first level of the formation with chaotic forces.

The formation tower shook because of the forces coming out of their fight, and metal fragments fell from the tower.

If the battle forces were a bit stronger, the formation would crumble.

After a while, Zhang Ruochen's power quickly declined.

King Flame guffawed, and his body was giant like a flame demon. "Without God Demon Rune, you can't even ward off one strike."

Zhang Ruochen immediately took out a second God Demon Rune.

And then, the god demon forces from Zhang Ruochen rivaled that of a third-step saint king again, forcing King Flame to step back.

"You have another God Demon Rune? Can't believe you brought so many powerful runes. Who's helping you?"

King Flame refused to believe that Zhang Ruochen was rich enough to buy a seventh-grade Padoga Rune and God Demon Runes. There must be a powerful field helping him in secret.

After seven breaths of time, the God Demon Rune that King Flame was using dissipated, but Zhang Ruochen only got stronger and stronger, also knocking King Flame out of the tower.

King Flame could easily kill his enemy at the same level, yet he was at a disadvantage fighting a half-step saint king.

Just before he planned to use a stronger rune, Zhang Ruochen immediately stepped back, rushing toward the second level of the formation tower.

King Flame turned around, and he saw Queen Lian.

"How disappointing. You can't even get rid of Zhang Ruochen," Queen Lian said. Then she rushed to the second level as fast as possible to kill Zhang Ruochen.

Bang Bang!

Suddenly, an iron ball as large as a fist fell from the entry.

"What is that?"

Queen Lian was shrewd enough to immediately notice the danger. She dodged the iron ball and used his bamboo fan to protect herself.

As for King Flame and the monks behind her, they couldn't dodge it in time.

Boom!

The iron ball exploded, releasing blood mist that spread everywhere.

The blood mist contained horrifying erosion power, which made the walls and floors in the formation tower sizzle, blackening them instantly. Even the inscriptions on the floors and walls could barely ward them off.

The monk who touched the blood mist started to bleed from mouth, nose, ears, and eyes. Even his saint soul screamed in agony.

After an instant, that monk from the Evil Way turned into a pond of blood.

“Careful! It's a blood poison. Stay away from it.”

Queen Lian's face paled.

She saw that her bamboo fan, which was a ten thousand patterns saint weapon, was eroded by the blood mist, and the spirit made a blood-curdling scream. In the end, it lost its life forces.

What kind of blood poison was that?

Queen Lian suspected that even she would find it hard to get rid of the poison.

She immediately covered her body with the bamboo fan and rushed out of the tower.

Right after she escaped the blood mist, her bamboo fan exploded, turning into blood-red fragments.

King Flame also got out of the formation tower, but he wasn't as lucky.

A trace of blood mist touched his chest, and his skin and flesh decomposed, spreading through his body.

He didn't have the luxury of chasing Zhang Ruochen anymore. He immediately mobilized the nine kinds of flames in his body to burn the blood poison.

None of the great beings from the Evil Way who got into the formation tower with Queen Lian managed to get out. Chances were, they were dead.

The monks watching the fight looked at each other, wondering what had happened.

What did Zhang Ruochen do to force King Flame and Queen Lian out of the formation tower and injure King Flame?

After a while, King Flame stopped the blood poison from spreading across his body. He opened his eyes and said, "The poison is terrifying. Fortunately, I only touched a bit of it, otherwise, I would've been killed."

Queen Lian said, "The blood mist has blocked the entrance to the formation tower. We can't stop Zhang Ruochen anymore. We should think about how to deal with the situation after Massive Heavenly Net Formation is broken."

King Flame looked awkward. He realized the greatest crisis facing the Yin and Yang Palace in tens of thousands of years had come.

Xie Cheng and Qiong Ling gathered with King Flame and Queen Lian to discuss the next-step strategies.

...

Zhang Ruochen rushed to the top of the formation tower. Although monks in the tower tried to stop him, they were all killed by him instantly.

It was very hard for the monks from the Yin and Yang Palace to survive his one attack, unless they were saint kings or the talents on 'Saints Merits Rank.'

The iron ball was given to him by Gu Songzi.

Gu Songzi was one of the greatest poison masters from Kunlun's Field, and the iron ball was holding the refined Pluto King Blood Poison, which was the most lethal poison Gu Songzi had ever made.

Gu Songzi was very reluctant when he gave the iron ball to Zhang Ruochen. After all, it took him over a hundred years to make one.

Zhang Ruochen had inspected the first level of the formation tower using his mind power, and he found that all the great beings from the Evil Way had turned into pools of blood, including three saint kings.

After fifteen minutes, Zhang Ruochen killed all the monks and formation masters in the tower, and then, the light pillar coming out of the formation tower dimmed, until it was retracted back to the formation tower completely.

When all the ten formation towers were combined, it was a tight unit.

As long as one of the formation towers went down, Massive Heavenly Net Formation would be flawed, and its power would sink.

After the light pillar from Yi Formation Tower disappeared, the power of the six ten thousand patterns saint weapons sharply declined, and they started to shake under the suppression of 'Light Myriad Scroll.'

Boom!

The monks in Heavenly Capital Saint Market started to bustle as they realized the time to take down the Yin and Yang Palace had come.

Ji Fanxin's eyes gleamed. She said, "That reckless guy did it?"

Fairy Extreme King smiled, "He was indeed bold and reckless, but you should also see that Zhang Ruochen's fully prepared instead of going there without thinking. He must've had lots of trump cards, himself, aside from the runes we gave him."

Obviously, Ji Fanxin thought better of Zhang Ruochen now. "Runes are just external forces. Only monks who can seize the

chance are able to wield the real power of the runes. Besides, it's impressive that Zhang Ruochen managed to hold off Qiong Ling, Queen Lian, and King Flame for that long.”

“Zhang Ruochen killed dozens of great beings from the Yin and Yang Palace, which means he killed a bunch of future supreme saints. Even I wouldn't be able to accomplish that,” said Fairy Extreme King.

Seeing Massive Heavenly Net Formation broken, the monks who were watching the battle stopped hesitating. They all attacked the Yin and Yang Palace at the same time.

Massive Heavenly Net Formation exploded after a breath of time.

The ten splendid palaces and ten towering formation towers all cracked, and then, they collapsed.

Only the statue of the Moon Goddess was still standing in the Yin and Yang Palace. All the other buildings were leveled.

Chapter 1615 - Yin Yang Life and Death Formation

Chapter 1615: Yin Yang Life and Death Formation

A strand of red sunlight rose up from the end of the sea of clouds. It tore apart the darkness of the world, dyeing the horizon colorfully.

The Yin and Yang Palace was completely rubble. It was shrouded by dust, chaotic Holy Qi, and the light from the saint weapon.

At the moment, figures climbed out of the ruins of the ten pavilions and formation towers. This included the Evil Way cultivators from Yin and Yang Field, Black Demon Field, and Thousand Devil Field, and the beautiful girls who'd been captured.

The girls who'd been imprisoned looked at the broken walls underfoot and the morning light on the horizon. It felt like they'd returned to the world. Some were dazed, some were excited, and others cried tears of joy.

These girls hated the Evil Way cultivators so much. Seeing how destroyed the Yin and Yang Palace was, they felt very satisfied.

“Karma...karma... These Evil Way creatures deserve this karma!” a young girl cried in the rubble.

“While imprisoned, I heard those Evil Way cultivators cursing someone named Zhang Ruochen. Could it be he who destroyed the Yin and Yang Palace?”

“Zhang Ruochen is the number one human pride on the Saints Merits Rank and the priest of the Moon Goddess. Yes, it must be him.”

...

The Yin and Yang Palace had too many enemies, but those cultivators never dared to speak up. They could only bear it.

Even when talented girls of sects, clans, and royal dynasties were captured, they only chose to spend a great fortune to buy them back.

Go attack the Yin and Yang Palace?

They didn't dare to think about that!

Today was different though. The Massive Heavenly Net Formation that guarded the palace had finally been broken through.

Zhang Ruochen and the Kunlun cultivators also led the way and killed a large group of people in the Yin and Yang Palace. They had the absolute advantage and it was the best chance to destroy the Yin and Yang Palace.

“Charge and kill all the Evil Way cultivators! Don't leave any alive!”

“My junior sister died with hatred in the Yin and Yang Palace. Today, I'll make you pay with blood!”

...

Figures flew out of the Heavenly Capital Saint Market.

They hated the Yin and Yang Palace, going crazy with fury. Today, it all erupted.

Of course, to prevent Yin and Yang Field, Black Demon Field, and Thousand Devil Field from taking revenge in the future, they all wore masks so they wouldn't be recognized.

Underground of the Yin and Yang Palace

At the bottom of the Euphoria Underground Palace, there was a Yin and Yang pool. Each one was 130 feet wide and shone with blue and red light.

The water of the Yin pool was cold to the bone.

The water of the Yang pool was hotter than lava.

Right now, Queen Lian and King Yan hovered above the Yin and Yang pools respectively. A cold blue moon emerged

behind Queen Lian. King Yan had a blazing sun behind him.

The Yin and Yang forces combined with the pools under them, producing an increasingly strong aura.

“They really think that destroying the Massive Heavenly Net Formation can destroy the Yin and Yang Palace, ha. When the cultivators who hate the palace all rush in, we’ll activate the Yin Yang Life and Death Formation to kill them all.” King Yan laughed menacingly.

“Just absorb their Yin and Yang Qi,” Queen Lian reminded. “Don’t kill them. This isn’t the Yin and Yang Field’s dojo.”

“Yin and Yang cannot grow alone,” King Yan said. “As long as we suck their Yin and Yang Qi, they won’t be able to live long even if they can escape from the palace.”

The Yin and Yang pools weren’t only a cultivation paradise created by the Yin and Yang Palace. It was also the center of the Yin Yang Life and Death Formation.

Just as Queen Lian and King Yan prepared to activate the formation, a voice rang beside their ears. “The era of the Yin and Yang Palace has passed. Why are you still struggling unnecessarily?”

Queen Lian’s expression changed. Her cold eyes scanned the underground space. “Who is it?”

“Show yourself immediately!” King Yan roared.

Nine types of fire poured out of King Yan’s body, filling every corner of the underground. He wanted to force the hidden person to appear.

The hallucination underground disappeared. A blue flame appeared on the ground between the Yin and Yang pools.

A figure stood in the fire.

The figure said, “As expected of King Yan. You actually completed all nine types of fire. If I met you without activating ‘equality,’ I could only flee for my life.”

King Yan recognized the man standing below. “Zhang Ruochen, if you hadn’t activated ‘equality,’ you would be an

ant before me. You wouldn't even be able to escape.”

Queen Lian was a bit surprised. “I didn't think you'd know that we came here. Are you here to stop us?”

“Indeed.”

Zhang Ruochen wrapped himself with Divine Fire Jingmie to block the nine fires from King Yan.

“The Yin and Yang Palace is getting attacked by everyone now,” Zhang Ruochen said. “You should be thinking about how to escape, not how to turn the tides.”

King Yan laughed maniacally. “You think that, with your bit of skills, you can suppress Queen Lian and I because of ‘equality’? Once the Yin Yang Life and Death Formation is activated, you'll be suppressed immediately.”

“You can try,” Zhang Ruochen said unflinchingly.

King Yan and Queen Lian exchanged glances. Then four divine bones flew out of each of them, settling in eight locations. The eight bones sucked the Yin and Yang Qi from the respective pools.

Each bone was meters long. They were like building-sized divine stones.

Dense patterns appeared on the surfaces. They looked like formations but also Rules of Saintly Way branded onto the bones.

More and more terrifying power burst from the divine bones.

Queen Lian chuckled. “Zhang Ruochen, there's still time for you to submit to me. Otherwise, you won't be able to survive long under the ravaging of the Yin Yang Life and Death Formation, even though your masculine Yang Qi is 10,000 times more than others.”

Zhang Ruochen didn't speak. He tapped the spatial ring on his hand and 18 red formation flags flew out, sticking into the ground around him.

These flags were made by Blackie. Each one was a Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon.

After returning from Zuling Field, Zhang Ruochen gave many resources that he'd stolen to Blackie. Those resources were more than enough to make 100 ordinary Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons.

But more than half was used up and it only produced these 18 formation flags.

Before attacking the Yin and Yang Palace, Blackie had made the flags sound amazing. It had claimed, "Zhang Ruochen, this is a portion of the formation flags from a ninth-grade formation I made. If you become strong enough in the future, you'll be able to unleash some of the formation's power."

How could Zhang Ruochen believe it?

After all, the Massive Heavenly Net Formation was already crazily powerful and it was only an eighth-grade formation. It was thousands of miles away from a ninth-grade formation.

If he could carry a Massive Heavenly Net Formation with him, then he wouldn't have to fear anyone under the Saint King Realm.

But if he wanted to turn the Massive Heavenly Net Formation into a set of flags that could be carried and set up at any time, it would cost a true fortune.

Even a rich Supreme Saint might not be able to afford that.

How expensive would a ninth-grade formation flag set be?

"You actually have a set of formation flags and each one is a Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon." Queen Lian was shocked.

A complete set of formation flags was a very valuable treasure. The average cultivator wouldn't be able to afford it.

Queen Lian didn't know just how strong Zhang Ruochen's set was, but since the flags were all Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons, then they couldn't be less than 500 million saint stones.

In the center of the flags, Holy Qi poured out of Zhang Ruochen's feet and into the flags.

King Yan sensed a dangerous aura. He quickly spun the eight divine bones. Swinging his arm, he sent one bone enveloped in fire toward Zhang Ruochen.

The 18 flags connected into a line and shone with brilliant sun-like light. It hit the divine bone.

Boom!

Strong power waves filled the underground space.

Broken rock kept falling from the walls; even the ground trembled.

“I couldn’t break through.”

King Yan’s expression became uncomfortable.

“Rise!” Zhang Ruochen yelled.

Then he controlled the 18 flags, taking the initiative to attack King Yan and Queen Lian who were hovering in the air.

King Yan and Queen Lian didn’t dare to underestimate Zhang Ruochen’s flags anymore. They operated the Yin Yang Life and Death Formation with all their might, wanting to use the Yin and Yang pools to suppress Zhang Ruochen.

The light from the 18 flags grew stronger. Finally, it turned into a blazing sun. It flew out of the formation and hit the Yin Yang Life and Death Formation.

Boom!

The eight divine stones and the Yin Yang Life and Death Formation were torn apart. King Yan and Queen Lian spat out blood. They flew back and smashed against the stone walls.

“Such a terrifying set of formation flags. Run!” Even though King Yan was skilled in the Way of Fire, he was still scorched black from the blazing sun and was badly hurt.

King Yan and Queen Lian’s cultivations weren’t repressed, so they didn’t fear Zhang Ruochen’s flags, but they had no choice now. If they remained here, they would be in danger of dying.

The two collected the eight bones and fled the underground space without hesitation.

The light on the 18 flags gradually dimmed.

Standing in the center, Zhang Ruochen's body turned limp. He almost fell to the ground.

"This set of flags really is a bit crazy. I only used it slightly and it almost sapped me dry of Holy Qi."

Zhang Ruochen felt very uncomfortable, but he forced himself to look composed.

When the two formations clashed earlier, he'd discovered with shock that there was a fleeting aura in the underground.

Clearly, there was a very strong figure hiding nearby and he hadn't shown himself yet.

"Come out? If you don't, I'll use the formation flags to kill you directly." Zhang Ruochen pretended to be domineering to scare the other away.

In reality, he was unsettled and secretly clenched two rune scrolls in his hands.

A lovely voice rang out from the Yin pool. "I didn't think that you'd destroyed the Yin Yang Life and Death Formation. Did you buy the Sun Saint Gold from me to produce this set of flags?"

Whoosh!

Ji Fanxin's curvy figure appeared gradually. A faint flowery fragrance also filled the space.

"It's you." Zhang Ruochen had a somber expression and said guardedly, "Are you the crow that comes to reap the harvest of the battle after everyone has been killed?"

Ji Fanxin knew that Zhang Ruochen was guarded, but she was still annoyed.

She'd actually come here with the same goal as Zhang Ruochen: to stop King Yan and Queen Lian from activating the Yin Yang Life and Death Formation.

However, Ji Fanxin saw that Zhang Ruochen was confident in fighting them, so she hid in the shadows. She wanted to see what other tactics he had.

Chapter 1616 - Godly Disciple, Yu Wenjing

Chapter 1616: Godly Disciple, Yu Wenjing

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

After the Yin and Yang Palace was taken down, the treasures left by the three fields tempted everyone.

Zhang Ruochen reckoned it was normal that Ji Fanxin came to take advantage of it.

Besides, Ji Fanxin still had Zhang Ruochen's Golden Dragon Carriage. Once Ji Fanxin killed Zhang Ruochen, she could have that Nine Yao ten thousand patterns saint weapon to herself.

Zhang Ruochen had every reason to be on guard.

Seeing how tense Zhang Ruochen was, Ji Fanxin suddenly had the urge to fight him, as she wondered whether she could defeat him if their cultivation was at the same level.

“Do you really think you can ward me off if I rip you off?” Ji Fanxin raised her head, looking proud.

“Impressive. She's already learned my current strength.”

Zhang Ruochen immediately transmitted his voice to Blackie using his mind power, asking it to rush to the underground space.

The runes Zhang Ruochen had left all came from Ji Fanxin, so it was impossible to fight Ji Fanxin using those runes.

He had to use Sword Technique of Time if he had no other option.

His saint Qi was barely enough to perform Sword Technique of Time once, but if he failed to kill Ji Fanxin, he would be crushed.

Ji Fanxin saw Zhang Ruochen get fiercer and fiercer, so she gave up on the idea of fighting him. She didn't want to make an unnecessary enemy.

Ji Fanxin then said, "I'm indeed tempted by the treasures in the Yin and Yang Palace, and your Golden Dragon Carriage is priceless. However, you saved my senior sister, so I will never bite your hand."

Zhang Ruochen pondered whether Ji Fanxin actually meant it or not.

He then heard someone rushing toward him. "What enemy did you run into, Zhang Ruochen? Let me help you!"

Blackie dived underground like a chubby penguin. Its eyes popped, looking belligerent.

When it saw Ji Fanxin who was standing across from Zhang Ruochen, it was dazed. "It's her. You're so unlucky. Every time you befriend a woman, she'll betray you. Seems like we can never trust pretty women. Let's use Eighteen Pole Earth-Burning Formation Flags to suppress her. She's a Divine Reflection Lotus. A divine medicinal pill made of her flesh and blood will definitely be extraordinary."

Ji Fanxin waved her sleeves, then saint light gushed out of her palm, knocking it away.

"Zhang Ruochen, this owl you raised wanted to use me to make a pill? It's just as reckless as you, isn't it? I originally only needed one hundred and thirty-five million saint stones to give you the Golden Dragon Carriage back. Now, I need two hundred."

Ji Fanxin was pissed off. She shot Blackie a glare and left the underground space.

"What do you mean? Do you really think I can't defeat you? I'll suppress you..."

Blackie climbed up, pointed at Ji Fanxin's back with its claw and trash-talked, but Zhang Ruochen stopped it.

Zhang Ruochen was feeble at the moment, so all he wanted was for Ji Fanxin to leave.

If they really angered her, she might actually come back and try to kill them.

“Don't stop me! Let's use Eighteen Pole Earth-Burning Formation Flag...”

Suddenly, Blackie saw Zhang Ruochen's face pale, so it immediately stopped talking.

“Again? My saint Qi was almost drained after using that formation flag once.”

Zhang Ruochen took out a divine medicinal pill that could quickly recover his saint Qi, swallowed it and asked, “What's going on outside?”

Blackie realized that Zhang Ruochen was very weak. It looked around while saying, “Rest assured. the Yin and Yang Palace has many more enemies than you expected. They're doomed this time!”

“I need to make up my saint Qi first, otherwise the treasures left by the three large fields in the Yin and Yang Palace might be taken by other monks.”

Zhang Ruochen took out Time and Space Crystal and walked into the inner space.

After fifteen minutes, he walked out of Time and Space Crystal, looking vigorous again.

Although he hadn't fully recovered from the loss of saint Qi, it was enough for another fight.

Zhang Ruochen and Blackie walked out of the underground space.

As they walked past Bliss Dungeon, Zhang Ruochen saw that the prisons holding the talented women from Thousand Pistil Field had all been opened. Obviously, Ji Fanxin had rescued them all.

Women of the other races who were held in the prison seemed to know that the Yin and Yang Palace had been broken through. Seeing Zhang Ruochen, they all cheered, hoping that he'd release them all.

Zhang Ruochen had something more important to do, so he didn't have time to release them. He walked out of Bliss Dungeon with Blackie, back onto the ground.

The fight in the Yin and Yang Palace was nearing an end.

The Yin and Yang Palace indeed had many enemies. Zhang Ruochen used his mind power to inspect the place, and he found more than four hundred strong saint forces.

All the monks from the Evil Way, except a few, were suppressed. Some were tied up by Saint-binding chains, and some were severely injured, under the saint weapons.

A mind power saint weapon that looked like a bead was floating above the monks from the Evil Way, preventing them from blowing up their saint sources.

The monks from the outside didn't dare kill the creatures in Moon Goddess's dojo, as they were afraid that Truth Godly Palace would punish them. They were all waiting for Zhang Ruochen to come.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen show up, a woman wearing a flower mask walked toward him and said, "Lord Ruochen, we've been waiting for you for a long time. You're the priest of Moon Goddess, so only you have the authority to judge these monks from the Evil Way."

Zhang Ruochen took a look at the woman wearing a flower mask. She had profound cultivation...definitely a saint king, and not just a first-step or a second-step saint king.

Besides, Zhang Ruochen felt that he'd seen her somewhere else before.

It should be an incredible great being, but she changed her looks and body, so he couldn't recognize her.

Another male saint king walked to Zhang Ruochen and said, "Those monks from the Evil Way will definitely try to avenge

themselves if you let them go.”

Zhang Ruochen knew that those monks didn't have the guts to offend the Yin and Yang Palace and the power behind it, so they all wanted him to be the bad guy.

There were more than one hundred and fifty monks from the Evil Way who were suppressed. If he killed them all, Yin and Yang Field, Black Demon Field, and Thousand Devil Field would go mad, irritating many supreme saints, even Gods.

This was not the biggest issue. After all, the supreme saints and Gods couldn't just come to Truth Heavenly Domain to kill Zhang Ruochen.

The issue at the moment was a headache.

Once Zhang Ruochen killed all the monks from the Evil Way, there would be nothing left to hold off the avengers from their large fields. They would definitely shift their focus to the treasures in the Yin and Yang Palace.

Zhang Ruochen wouldn't be able to stop them.

Zhang Ruochen risked everything to attack the Yin and Yang Palace. He'd even mortgaged his Golden Dragon Carriage. If the other monks seized all the treasures, all his efforts would be in vain.

Just as Zhang Ruochen was thinking of a coping strategy, he heard a bustling noise from the outside.

“Yu Wenjing.”

“Yu Wenjing came to the Yin and Yang Palace.”

...

The avengers wearing masks seemed to be terrified by the person coming. They all lowered their heads, stepped back, and made way for him.

Even the female saint king wearing a flower mask was scared. She immediately retreated into the distance, worried that Yu Wenjing might recognize her.

“Who came to the Yin and Yang Palace? Why are the monks so scared?”

Zhang Ruochen saw a slender man wearing a Crane Blue Sky Cape walk in.

He had eight golden pythons around his waist, and each of them was a saint-king barren mutant. Their forces were stronger than eight real dragons.

Yu Wenjing exerted pressure even on Zhang Ruochen.

Only godly disciples from Truth Godly Palace were allowed to wear Crane Blue Sky Capes, so Zhang Ruochen immediately recognized his identity.

Yu Wenjing looked to Zhang Ruochen and said, “Zhang Ruochen, Truth Godly Palace shouldn’t be involved in the fight in dojos, but you’ve killed many monks today. Don’t you think it’s time to stop?”

Zhang Ruochen said, “What do you mean? Are you asking me to let all these monks go?”

Yu Wenjing said, “They’ve indeed done a lot of bad things, but in merits battlefields, they never hesitate to kill the creatures from Hell World. If you kill them all, you’ll only weaken Heaven World, which benefits Hell World.

“How about this. Give them a chance to make amends for what they did. Send them to the Merits Godly Palace, and send them to merits battlefields to fight the creatures from Hell World.”

The female saint king wearing a flower mask transmitted her voice to Zhang Ruochen. “Yu Wenjing is a monk from the Yin and Yang Palace, and he’s very close to Queen Lian. If you send them to the Merits Godly Palace, you’re basically sending them to Shang Ziyan. Do you really think Shang Ziyan will punish them?”

Chapter 1617 - Incentives and Penalties

Chapter 1617: Incentives and Penalties

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Yu Wenjing was skilled in Spiritual Power secret spells. Even under All Lives Equal, he could still hear the female Saint King sending a message to Zhang Ruochen.

Thus, he shot an intimidating glare at the female Saint King.

Boom!

As if struck by lightning, the female Saint King shuddered violently and took three steps back. Her Spiritual Power seemed to have been injured badly. She grew dispirited and the fear in her eyes thickened.

Yu Wenjing was only warning her and didn't attack again.

So aggressive, but this person is indeed very strong. He has high attainments in the Martial Way and Spiritual Power.

Expression unchanging, Zhang Ruochen said, "I wish to ask if this is your own opinion or the Truth Godly Palace's idea?"

Yu Wenjing stared deeply at Zhang Ruochen. "I'm only giving you a serious suggestion. After all, enough people have died today. If you continue killing, you'll probably create even greater hatred."

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen found it laughable.

He'd already killed many cultivators from three major worlds. Was he afraid of having more enemies?

He would never return a tiger back to the mountain.

But...

It was indeed not the right time to kill those Evil Way cultivators.

Zhang Ruochen purposely put on a thoughtful expression and glanced at Blackie and Demonic Sound. "Imprison these Evil Way cultivators in the Euphoria Underground Palace. I'll think for a few days and then decide how to deal with them."

Yu Wenjing smiled with satisfaction. With a slightly threatening tone, he said, "Those who understand the current situation can be the hero. I just hope you won't make the wrong decision and hurt yourself and others."

With that, Yu Wenjing left the Moon Goddess Dojo with hands behind his back.

In his opinion, since Zhang Ruochen didn't kill those Evil Way cultivators today, then he would definitely obey the suggestions after considering the pros and cons.

Zhang Ruochen is a bit brash and can do anything on impulse. I have to challenge him some more.

Yu Wenjing was worried, thinking, I must notify those guys from the Black Demon Field and Thousand Devil Field so they can come and warn Zhang Ruochen.

Cultivators of the Black Demon Field and Thousand Devil Field had joined the Truth Heavenly Domain too. In fact, two powerful figures had already become disciples of a god.

To Yu Wenjing, Zhang Ruochen would be clearer about how to tread carefully if he was warned by three god disciples.

He would take care of Zhang Ruochen slowly after saving the cultivators from the three worlds.

Zhang Ruochen looked at Yu Wenjing's receding back and a laugh flashed past his eyes. That Yu Wenjing is scarily strong. Unfortunately, he's too proud and looks down on everyone. I'll placate him by delaying things first.

The avengers present were all unsettled. Some other cultivators went up to persuade Zhang Ruochen to kill those

Evil Way cultivators immediately, but Zhang Ruochen pushed them back.

In the distance, a half-step Saint King flashed. He rushed toward an Evil Way cultivator's corpse and touched around. He found a storage bag and was ecstatic.

There really are people who dare to take advantage of the chaos.

Eyes turning cold, Zhang Ruochen disappeared from the spot and reappeared beside the half-step Saint King. He slapped forward.

Roar!

A deafening dragon's roar came from his palm.

The half-step Saint King's expression changed drastically.

He was about to block with his hand, but Zhang Ruochen's palm force was so strong. Brilliant light shone from his hand, sending the man sprawling on the ground.

Overwhelming saintly might burst from Zhang Ruochen. "This is the Moon Goddess Dojo," he proclaimed. "Every speck of dust here belongs to Guanghan Field. Don't force me to kill you."

There were many cultivators here. They didn't come from the same world, so they weren't united. Even though they were tempted, no one dared to be the first to attack Zhang Ruochen.

Plus, Zhang Ruochen had killed a dozen Yin and Yang Palace cultivators earlier. Even Queen Lian and King Yan together couldn't defeat him. Who dared to steal from him?

Zhang Ruochen strode toward the half-step Saint King on the ground.

That Saint King's eyes were filled with fear. He really was afraid that Zhang Ruochen would kill him. Scrambling up, he extended two scaly claws and offered up the storage bag.

"Lord Ruochen...this...this is your storage bag."

"Of course it's mine."

Zhang Ruochen grabbed the bag.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen didn't kill him, the half-step Saint King was relieved. He suppressed his injuries and ran from the Moon Goddess Dojo.

Zhang Ruochen didn't chase after him. I've only come to the Truth Heavenly Domain for two months, he thought. I've killed close to 100 strong cultivators. It seems that many people are scared of me. They probably see no difference between a murderous demon and me.

Sometimes, it was a good thing for others to be scared of you. It could prevent many unnecessary troubles.

Anyway, the Yin and Yang Palace was already destroyed. Some of the cultivators didn't dare to offend Zhang Ruochen, so they retreated quietly and left the dojo.

With one leaving, there would be a second, a third...

There were many treasures in the Yin and Yang Palace, but there was no need to offend Zhang Ruochen now and get killed. More and more cultivators retreated.

Finally, only around 100 still remained in the Moon Goddess Dojo.

They exchanged glances, a bit afraid and unsettled. They discussed something with telepathic messages.

A moment later, they chose two strong figures and they walked toward Zhang Ruochen.

These two weren't as strong as Queen Lian and King Yan, but they were comparable to the Gold Roc Prince. They were definitely at the top of their worlds.

Ling Feiyu walked toward Zhang Ruochen with her Heaven-Burial Sword. She looked at the two beings guardedly. Strong sword intent enveloped the dojo.

Clearly, if they dared to attack Zhang Ruochen, her sword would gut them without hesitation.

Zhang Ruochen released a spatial domain. An inch-long spatial crack hovered above his palm.

Across from him, the being on the left was shrouded in white mist. His figure went in and out of sight. “Zhang Ruochen, we are grateful that you helped destroy the Yin and Yang Palace. We obviously won’t steal the treasures and wealth here.

“But some women from all of our worlds were captured by the Evil Way cultivators and imprisoned in the Yin and Yang Palace. We plan on paying saint stones to buy them back.”

The being on the right seemed to be intelligent too. He added, “I hope you can be more reasonable with the price, considering we helped destroy the Yin and Yang Palace.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t lower his guard. After a pause, he said, “Okay, retreat from the Moon Goddess Dojo first and return in three days to pay the ransom. There are too many strong figures here and I feel great pressure. If anything bad happens, it won’t be good for anyone.”

The cultivators present all grew hesitant.

Zhang Ruochen scoffed. “I, Zhang Ruochen, want to continue staying in the Truth Heavenly Domain, so I won’t go back on my word. Don’t you trust me?”

The masked cultivators started communicating with Spiritual Power again.

Half a beat later, the being on the right said gravely, “Lord Ruochen is the priest of the Moon Goddess. Naturally, we trust you. Then, we shall meet again in three days.”

“Wait.” Zhang Ruochen walked to Zhan Yu’s corpse.

After Zhan Yu had died, his corpse turned into a seven-foot-long golden snake on the ground. It shone with golden light as if it was made out of gold.

Zhang Ruochen knocked around 100 dragon scales off of the corpse with the Abyss Ancient Sword. He scattered them into the hands of the cultivators present.

Everyone received a golden scale.

They were confused. Why did Zhang Ruochen do this?

“You all worked hard to destroy the Yin and Yang Palace and take the Moon Goddess Dojo back,” Zhang Ruochen said. “I am very grateful. Three days from now, use this dragon scale to enter the Moon Goddess Dojo and take away the female cultivators of your world. No need to pay me any saint stones.”

The cultivators had been worried that Zhang Ruochen would name an unreasonable price and conditions.

Hearing this, they were ecstatic. They never expected something so great would happen. They clenched the dragon scales tightly and put them away securely.

“Since Lord Ruochen is so kind, then we will leave the Moon Goddess Dojo now.”

“I hope Lord Ruochen will keep your word.”

“Thank you, Lord Ruochen. I hope we can still complete the exchange so happily in three days. Goodbye.”

...

Zhang Ruochen naturally had a reason for doing this.

Right now, Guanghan Field had few allies in the Truth Heavenly Domain and had to face the revenge from Shang Ziyan and the Yin and Yang Palace. He couldn't keep making enemies. He should make some allies.

Since these cultivators dared to attack the Yin and Yang Palace, it proved two points.

First, it wasn't highly possible that they were part of the dark force.

Second, they hated the Yin and Yang Palace, or else they wouldn't have attacked.

Zhang Ruochen could take advantage of this chance to get them on his side, tied completely to his cause. Their worlds may be weaker, but if together, they were a strong force that could destroy the Yin and Yang Palace.

In the future, Zhang Ruochen would have more resources to use against Shang Ziyan.

Of course, allies had to be developed slowly. It wasn't highly possible to have them fight Shang Ziyan now. But if they had similar enemies and interests, the alliance would become more and more stable.

It didn't matter if he lost some saint stones. It was much more meaningful to rope in these cultivators.

They were only the top talents of their worlds now, but in the future, they would be the sovereigns.

For those who hadn't attacked the Yin and Yang Palace, Zhang Ruochen would definitely treat them differently. They'd have to pay saint stones to free their girls.

When all the cultivators retreated from the Moon Goddess Dojo, Zhang Ruochen immediately sent the Eighteen Pole Earth-Burning Formation Flags into 18 different locations.

Next, he set up a spatial maze and time formation to prevent the Yin and Yang Palace cultivators from attacking again.

After setting up these two formations, Zhang Ruochen went to formally meet the Kunlun cultivators.

He knew that the cultivators from Kunlun's Field definitely wouldn't help him attack the Yin and Yang Palace for no reason.

For example, it would be weird if the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon came to help him. Other than Princess White Li and Luo Xu, the others didn't seem to have good relationships with him either.

Chapter 1618 - Zhang Ruochen's Terms

Chapter 1618: Zhang Ruochen's Terms

Zhang Ruochen stood across from Luo Xu, as they were equals. They were both the representatives of their respective fields.

Zhang Ruochen was grateful and respectful of Luo Xu.

After all, Luo Xu had helped him more than once, and he'd even taught him his secret technique, 'Luo Water Fist Technique,' because of which Zhang Ruochen was able to balance the masculine Qi in his body coming from Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm.

Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm and Luo Water Fist Technique represented masculinity and femininity, both of which were profound.

Luo Xu was smiling. "I know you have a lot to do after taking down the Yin and Yang Palace, so I won't beat around the bush. I reckon you know why the monks from Kunlun's Field helped you annihilate the Yin and Yang Palace."

Zhang Ruochen said, "Kunlun's Field wants to team up with me?"

Luo Xu nodded and said, "Both Kunlun's Field and Guanghan Field are small fields in Truth Heavenly Domain. We can only take our dojos back after teaming up."

Zhang Ruochen was close with Luo Xu, but this wasn't an issue between the two of them, but between Guanghan Field and Kunlun's Field.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't agree, as there were too many parties involved, and he needed to name his requirements.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Guanghan Field has twenty-one dojos in Truth Heavenly Domain, and Moon Goddess's dojo is the

most difficult one to take back, but I just did that. Do you really think I need Kunlun's Field's power to take back the rest of the nineteen dojos?"

Luo Xu said, "You know that you took back Moon Goddess's dojo because the Yin and Yang Palace has too many enemies, not because of your invincibility or Kunlun's Field's help.

"I bet Moon Goddess has told you that Guanghan Field and Kunlun's Field have a mutual enemy. That enemy has been trying to stop Guanghan Field and Kunlun's Field, and that enemy made Kunlun's Field fall and Guanghan Field enslaved and suppressed. There're representatives from that power in Truth Heavenly Domain, coming at both you and me. Do you really think you can defeat that enemy by yourself?"

After the fight in Moon Goddess's dojo, Zhang Ruochen realized more than ever that Shang Ziyan had tremendous power, and he wasn't able to fight back against him.

Zhang Ruochen thought for a bit and said, "It's not impossible to team up."

Luo Xu's eyes gleamed. "You agree?"

Zhang Ruochen said, "If you want me to help take back Kunlun's Field's dojos, you need to agree to my terms first."

Luo Xu was already prepared. He said, "What terms?"

"Firstly, I'll get half the treasures and saint stones in the dojo. If you agree to the first term, we'll talk about the second one," said Zhang Ruochen.

Luo Xu looked solemn.

Obviously, Zhang Ruochen's first term put him in a very awkward position.

Luo Xu used his mind power to communicate with the monks from Kunlun's Field.

After a short while, the monks from Kunlun's Field were all irritated.

Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon sneered. "Zhang Ruochen, how dare you have such outrageous terms. Do you really think

we have to team up with you? We might be strong enough to take back Kunlun's Field's dojos.”

“Let's go.” The Royal Prince of the Kun looked hostile.

Li Xian, the leader of the savage beasts, frowned, as she thought Zhang Ruochen's terms were preposterous. “Please open the formation and let us go.”

Zhang Ruochen didn't try to stop them. He escorted them out while saying, “Kunlun's Field indeed helped a lot with taking back Moon Goddess's dojo. If Kunlun's Field wants to take one of your dojos back, just tell me. I'll help you, but I will only help you once.”

Before exiting the formation, Zhang Ruochen recalled something. He took out a pot of Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine and gave it to Luo Xu. “This is incredible wine. It's priceless.”

Luo Xu was dazed at first, then he smiled and said, “I have something good to give you.”

Luo Xu took out a fist record and gave it to Zhang Ruochen.

“What is this?” asked Zhang Ruochen.

Luo Xu said, “This is my perception of the tenth level of Luo Water Fist Technique. I'm studying the eleventh level of the technique, but I'm not able to finish it yet.”

The ninth level of Luo Water Fist Technique was a saint spell.

And the tenth level of Luo Water Fist Technique was a mid-class saint spell.

Practicing Luo Water Fist Technique could help Zhang Ruochen control the masculine Qi inside his body, so he accepted it without any further questions.

Luo Xu was much better at fist techniques than Zhang Ruochen, so Zhang Ruochen needed to learn from Luo Xu.

Besides, a mid-class saint spell was very valuable, especially expert mid-class saint spells and master saint spells. They were so rare that nobody would be willing to pass them to others.

Luo Xu gave Zhang Ruochen a mid-class saint spell without hesitation, and Zhang Ruochen gave him some priceless Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine without hesitation.

It was because of their friendship. It had nothing to do with benefits.

Luo Xu knew that Zhang Ruochen needed Luo Water Fist Technique, and Zhang Ruochen knew Luo Xu needed Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine.

After escorting everyone from Kunlun's Field, Zhang Ruochen headed back to the Moon Goddess's dojo, looking at the female monks standing in the ruins.

Those monks were all terrified of Zhang Ruochen.

“My lord.”

All the female monks kneeled before Zhang Ruochen.

They were different from the women trapped in Bliss Dungeon. They'd been trained to be the tools for the Yin and Yang Palace to earn saint stones, and they'd lost their willpower.

They were both excited and nervous seeing Zhang Ruochen take down the Yin and Yang Palace. They weren't sure how this new master would treat them.

Zhang Ruochen didn't even bother to think about it. He looked to Ling Feiyu and said, “Deal with them, won't you?”

“Okay.”

Ling Feiyu nodded.

The Moon Goddess's dojo was in ruins.

Zhang Ruochen spent a long time collecting the valuable treasures from the ruins.

What angered Zhang Ruochen was that he didn't find anything in the treasury built by the Yin and Yang Palace.

The monks from the Evil Way were all filthy rich. The combined value of their treasures and saint stones was a great deal.

Moon Goddess's dojo didn't have enough people, so Ling Feiyu had to ask all the female monks to clean up the mess.

Zhang Ruochen took out a delicately-made tower and threw it out.

It then turned into a pavilion that was more than a hundred feet tall, showing up at the northeastern corner of Moon Goddess's dojo.

It was 'Weapon-Refining Pavilion,' which was a thousand patterns saint weapon. It could be of all sizes, with great defense and attack power.

And then, Zhang Ruochen threw out more than ten Weapon-Refining Pavilions. There were pavilions, towers, and palaces, changing all of Moon Goddess's dojo.

Unlike before, Moon Goddess's dojo was no longer covered with evil Qi. Under Moon Goddess's statue, it looked tranquil and divine.

Zhang Ruochen found the Weapon-Refining Pavilions from the storage bag of a monk proficient in making weapons, and they were only ordinary Weapon-Refining Pavilions.

An extraordinary Weapon-Refining Pavilion could birth a strong weapon spirit. It could fly and even become an earth itself, making a refining space.

Zhang Ruochen didn't count how many valuables he got. Instead, he made a space transportation formation in Moon Goddess's dojo. Then, he left Heavenly Capital Mountain.

...

Jingxiang Cliff Dojo.

Nine Heavenly Maiden, Qing Xiao, and the monks from Guanghan Field were all trapped in the dojo, nervous. Nobody could keep calm and comprehend the pictures of the Way of Truth.

Even Su Jing was nervous.

To him, Zhang Ruochen was still too young, and if he wasn't careful enough, it'd be a huge hit to the entire Guanghan Field.

“Damn it. I should’ve stopped them.” Su Jing clenched his teeth.

The longer they waited, the more nervous they got. They were scared that they might be facing bad news.

It was torture!

Mu Lingxi was standing on the stairs of the dojo gate. She would raise her head every once in a while, looking outside the dojo.

Nine Heavenly Maiden stood beside Mu Lingxi with her hands behind her back. She said calmly, “Don’t you have confidence in Zhang Ruochen?”

“Aren’t you worried about him?” Mu Lingxi asked.

Nine Heavenly Maiden wasn’t only one person. She was a combination of nine people, so she had nine different minds. She was silent for a while after hearing Mu Lingxi’s question.

The leading mind of Nine Heavenly Maiden was Saint Lady, and the other eight maidens were all comprehending the saintly way.

Mu Lingxi was thinking about something, hesitating to ask.

Nine Heavenly Maiden looked through her and said, “Just ask me. What are you hesitating for?”

Mu Lingxi raised her head and asked, “Why did Sister Chen choose the empress’s side? Why did she help the empress? Why did she hurt Zhang Ruochen? Did the empress threaten her with Zhang Ruochen’s life?”

Nine Heavenly Maiden thought and said, “Her majesty’s always lenient and forgiving. She would never threaten her own disciple.”

Mu Lingxi said, “Impossible. I know Sister Chen. She’s always stubborn and uncompromising. Once she’s sure that Zhang Ruochen is the man, nothing can change her mind. If the empress didn’t force her, she would’ve never done that. When everyone thought Zhang Ruochen had been killed by Sword Saint Jiuyou, she was the only one waiting with Zhang Ruochen’s mother, and she treated her like her own mother.

“Xue Wuye is a great talent. He pursued her, yet she wasn’t moved at all.

“Besides... I could see how heartbroken she was in the headquarters of the demonic sect last time.”

Nine Heavenly Maiden said, “Everyone has a different fate, and nobody can change that. Even Gods are sometimes powerless when it comes to fate.”

Mu Lingxi asked, “Where is she? Was she killed by the empress?”

“Just think of her as dead! Because of Zhang Ruochen, almost all her family was killed.” There was something that Nine Heavenly Maiden couldn’t tell Mu Lingxi.

Silence...

Long silence...

Mu Lingxi’s eyes turned red. She felt that her sister Chen might’ve died already, and she might’ve been killed by the empress.

Whoosh!

Time and space ripples came from the formation suddenly.

All the monks in the dojo were shocked. They rushed to the gate of the dojo, looking into the distance.

They saw Zhang Ruochen show up in the formation, walking toward Jingxiang Cliff Dojo.

Chapter 1619 - Four Major Worlds

Chapter 1619: Four Major Worlds

Seeing Zhang Ruochen appear, everyone was relieved. Mu Lingxi and Qing Xiao were the first to welcome him.

Qing Xiao's expression was serious. "What did you find out?" he asked.

"Those Evil Way cultivators must have set up traps all over, right?" Mu Lingxi asked. They'd been stuck in the Mirror Fragrance Dojo and didn't know about the outside world. They only thought that Zhang Ruochen had returned so quickly, so he must not have conquered the Yin and Yang Palace.

Zhang Ruochen looked at each person. "Hurry and pack up. Follow me to the Heavenly Capital Mountain."

Qing Xiao and the Nine Heavenly Maiden didn't have anything to pack up, so they stayed in place.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen's expression was dark but also composed, the Nine Heavenly Maiden asked, "Did you already think of the perfect plan against the Yin and Yang Palace?"

"The Yin and Yang Palace has already been destroyed," Zhang Ruochen said emotionlessly.

Hearing this, Qing Xiao and the Nine Heavenly Maiden were stunned.

The Guanghan Field cultivators who'd left to pack up were even more shocked and stopped in their tracks.

"What? The Yin and Yang Palace has been destroyed?"

"It's created by an alliance between the Yin and Yang Field, Black Demon Field, and Thousand Devil Field. They're so strong. Who can defeat them?"

This news was too shocking and unbelievable.

Su Jing saw Zhang Ruochen's expression was serious. He didn't look like he was joking. Su Jing joyously asked, "Which force destroyed the Yin and Yang Palace? Did they offend a top ten world from the Thousand Field Merits Rank and that's why they were destroyed?"

No one believed that Zhang Ruochen was the man behind it.

After all, in their opinion, the Yin and Yang Palace was too strong. It was already dangerous for Zhang Ruochen to take back the dozen heads hanging on the gates. Mu Lingxi grew thoughtful. "We're going to the Moon Goddess Dojo?" she asked uncertainly.

Suddenly, it dawned on everyone there.

Yes, Zhang Ruochen told them to pack up. Where could they go, other than the Moon Goddess Dojo that had a better environment?

This meant...

All the Guanghan Field cultivators looked to Zhang Ruochen. Their eyes grew hotter and hotter as if they were going crazy.

Zhang Ruochen smiled. "Yes, the Moon Goddess Dojo has returned to the hands of Guanghan Field. Follow me. There's a serious lack of people."

Boom!

Even though they all had high cultivations, Zhang Ruochen's confirmation was still like an explosion in their minds. Their blood started boiling.

Su Qingling wanted to ask something, but Zhang Ruochen added, "Everyone, go pack up. We must hurry over immediately. When you get there, you'll naturally learn the entire process of how the Yin and Yang Palace was destroyed."

"Indeed, we must hurry. We can't let another large world cut in and take over again."

Su Jing was extremely excited. He couldn't calm down and hurriedly said, "I'll send a message to the Shatuo Heavenly Domain immediately and tell this good news to all Guanghan cultivators. I'll also have my father send over a set of top formation tools. We must protect the Moon Goddess Dojo well."

While everyone was packing up, Zhang Ruochen went to the space transfer formation in the Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo and started fixing what he'd destroyed.

He could only build basic space transfer formations now. It could only transport them a few hundred thousand miles each time, but the Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo was further away from the Heavenly Capital Mountain.

Thus, Zhang Ruochen had built another space transfer formation between the two dojos.

The three formations connected in a path. From now on, Guanghan Field cultivators could go between the two dojos at will without worrying about getting killed on the way.

After the Guanghan Field cultivators arrived at the Moon Goddess Dojo, they first went to bow to the Moon Goddess statue. Then they gathered around, listening to Blackie describe the battle.

Spittle flying and with dramatic expressions, Blackie said, "It happened too quickly to describe. Zhang Ruochen just screamed at the Moon Goddess, 'Open All Lives Equal. Today, I will destroy the scum who took over the Moon Goddess Dojo!'"

"Before he could finish, I already ran out to fight against Blue Fang, the top fighter under the Saint King Realm in the Yin and Yang Palace. I instantly stirred up a storm, but how strong am I? After 182 exchanges, I slammed Blue Fang to the ground with a claw. I was about to use the Heavenly Extreme Chaotic Spell and destroy him at once.

"But when Blue Fang realized he wasn't my match, he immediately summoned more than 100 Evil Way cultivators. They formed the God-killing Formation, wanting to team up

against me. It became extremely dangerous. At that moment, I knew that I couldn't hide my abilities anymore. I decided to go full out and kill all these evil people..."

...

Below the Moon Goddess statue where the gates of the Yin and Yang Palace had been, Zhang Ruochen stood beside Qing Xiao.

Zhang Ruochen's expression was bitter. "Actually, it's all because of me. Otherwise, Second Senior Brother, Third Senior Brother, and Fifth Senior Sister wouldn't die. I wouldn't know how to explain to Master."

Qing Xiao lived on the battlefield, so he was used to death. Expression cold, he shook his head. "This is a cruel era. Our enemies don't only target you. They'll also target all beings from Kunlun's Field and Guanghan Field. You're too big of a threat. That's why they targeted you first."

Zhang Ruochen had gone through too many ups and down, joys and sadness. He obviously wasn't an average man, so he quickly put away his sadness. "Senior Brother, how much do you know about our enemy?"

Qing Xiao held no secrets from Zhang Ruochen. "Actually, I don't know that much about the extension of the war 10,000 years ago. I only heard that it's related to the competition between the four major worlds of Heaven World."

"The four major worlds of Heaven World?"

Qing Xiao nodded. "Pangu Field rules the eastern universe.

"Demon God Field rules the southern universe.

"Heaven Field rules the western universe.

"Thousand Void Field rules the northern universe.

"The four rulers are very strong, have long histories, rich backgrounds, possess the most ancient heritages, and have groups of gods. As the four leaders of Heaven World, they control the thousands of fields. The controllers of the Heavenly Palaces and Godly Palaces are almost all chosen from the four fields.

“The four fields were chosen 10,000 years ago.

“At that time, the western universe had three major fields. Each one qualified to become the ruling field. They were Heaven Field, Kunlun’s Field, and Western Buddhist Field.

“But for some reason, Kunlun’s Field ran into disaster and the gods all died. Even the field was sealed up and became still. Western Buddhist Field was strong but didn’t intend to compete for the spot. In the end, Heaven Field naturally became the ruler of the western universe and managed it.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes shone with terrifying light. “Senior Brother, do you suspect that the now-powerful Heaven Field is behind Kunlun’s Field’s fall?”

“I don’t know.”

Shaking his head, Qing Xiao continued, “But without a doubt, the biggest benefactor after the disaster of Kunlun’s Field is Heaven Field. After ruling the major worlds, void worlds, and planets of the western universe, Heaven Field has gained countless resources. They’re countless times stronger than 10,000 years ago.”

After hearing Qing Xiao’s words, Zhang Ruochen fell silent.

If the dark force that the Moon Goddess mentioned really was the Heaven Field, the ruler of the western universe, then this would be hopeless for any Guanghan cultivator. Their path was in the dark and devoid of any light.

A hand that could cover the entire sky was hovering over the millions of beings in Guanghan Field. It only had to press down softly to kill them all as if they were ants.

Of course, even if the dark force was Heaven Field, they couldn’t do anything they wanted. After all, there were three other ruling fields that could counter Heaven Field.

Plus, the four ruling worlds had established the heavenly rules. Even the four fields themselves couldn’t break those rules.

Zhang Ruochen sent Blackie to find out something in the Heavenly Capital Saint Market: which world was Shang Ziyan from?

With Shang Ziyan's status and identity, it wasn't hard to find out about his background.

Two hours later, Blackie returned to the dojo and told Zhang Ruochen about Shang Ziyan. His expression instantly turned dark.

Shang Ziyan was indeed the youngest son of a god from Heaven Field. That god also had an extraordinary status in the entire Heaven World.

This way, Qing Xiao's guess was mostly correct.

The dark force must be related to Heaven Field.

Thinking carefully, Zhang Ruochen grew more and more shocked. He realized that the Truth Heavenly Domain was even more dangerous than he'd thought. More accurately, the entire Heaven World was extremely dangerous.

But what could he do?

Heaven Field's power was spread throughout the universe. Even if he didn't fight against them, where could he run to and hide?

If he stayed in Heaven World, there would at least be the heavenly rules.

Zhang Ruochen decided not to leave the Moon Goddess Dojo until he entered the Saint King Realm.

Shang Ziyan had suffered such a great defeat, so he would definitely take revenge crazily. With his status and the forces under him, the next attack would be even worse.

Abilities.

Only a strong ability could withstand all this.

Qing Xiao and the Nine Heavenly Maiden had left the Moon Goddess Dojo to regroup with Kunlun's Field. They seemed to be plotting to attack another dojo.

Three days passed quickly.

Ling Feiyu went over to ask Zhang Ruochen, "The worlds of the various worlds will come later to get their girls back. Have

you thought about how to deal with them?”

“Let Su Jing and the others take care of this,” Zhang Ruochen said. “I prepare to isolate myself for a while.”

“But what about those imprisoned Evil Way cultivators?” Ling Feiyu asked. “What do we do with them? Are we really going to let them go?”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes flickered. Murderous intent grew thicker. “Kill them. Now. After killing them, hang their heads outside of the Moon Goddess Dojo.”

He decided to do it himself because the saint souls of those cultivators were very useful to him.

Chapter 1620 - Shocked Truth Heavenly Domain

Chapter 1620: Shocked Truth Heavenly Domain

The dawn came, and two shadows showed up near Moon Goddess's dojo.

Whoosh Whoosh!

Their bodies were mist. The creature standing at the front had three black tails, and the creature behind had two tails.

Qing Mingzi, with three tails, formed his body and opened his palm, looking at the golden dragon scales on his hand. He mumbled, "This is the date we're supposed to meet Zhang Ruochen. Is he going to fulfill his promise?"

Xiao Nansheng, standing behind, was a half-step saint king, and he was the most outstanding disciple of Qing Mingzi.

Qing Mingzi asked, "Have you prepared the materials for the six saintesses and seventh female half saints from Virtual Spirit Field?"

"I have," answered Xiao Nansheng.

"Zhang Ruochen won't just let us take the people away. He'll definitely check their materials to confirm their identities."

Qing Mingzi was meticulous enough to make some preparations.

Qing Mingzi and Yan Nansheng took out a saint weapon that could cover their forces, walking toward Moon Goddess's dojo.

The closer they got to Moon Goddess's dojo, the quieter it got.

There was a smell of blood in the air.

Xiao Nansheng held his breath and said, "Master, something's wrong. Are the great beings from Yin and Yang Field, Black

Demon Field and Thousand Devil Field hiding in the dark, trying to have revenge?”

Qing Mingzi looked a bit solemn, but he wasn't scared given his cultivation.

As long as he didn't run into great beings like King Flame and Queen Lian, he would be able to get out safely.

“That shouldn't be the case. Everyone there before hates the Yin and Yang Palace's guts. Nobody will expose the news.”

Qing Mingzi was calm, but as he walked around the corner, across from Moon Goddess's dojo, he was shocked as he saw something horrifying.

Xiao Nansheng took a deep breath as his eyes popped. He said, “Zhang Ruochen is such a devil. Can't believe he did that.”

There was a tower-shaped Weapon-Refining Pavilion across from Moon Goddess's dojo, and there were heads hanging on the pavilion.

They were the heads of more than one hundred saints and saint kings.

The saint blood dripping from the heads was warm. Obviously, they'd been chopped off recently.

The ground around the tower was tainted red, giving out the aura of tremendous grudges and hatred, surrounding that area.

Xiao Nansheng said, “Didn't Zhang Ruochen compromise when Yu Wenjing showed up and talked him out of killing them all?”

“Haha. Zhang Ruochen is filled with pride. How would he compromise? I reckon he only acquiesced to gain time.” Qing Mingzi couldn't feel happier, as those from the ways of evil finally got the ending they deserved.

Qing Mingzi's daughter had been killed in the Yin and Yang Palace, and he dashed into the Yin and Yang Palace, trying to avenge her.

Unfortunately, Massive Heavenly Net Formation was too formidable, which severely injured Qing Mingzi with one strike. Lucky for him, he had an incredible rune that tore the formation and got him out before the formation was fully activated.

However, with time going by, Qing Mingzi only hated the Yin and Yang Palace more.

Now that Zhang Ruochen had killed all the monks from the Evil Way in the Yin and Yang Palace, Qing Mingzi was thrilled.

After calming down, Qing Mingzi forced a smile. "Hanging those heads on the gate now. Zhang Ruochen's so wicked."

Xiao Nansheng nodded and said, "If we go to Moon Goddess's dojo now, everyone will think that we've teamed up with Zhang Ruochen."

"Zhang Ruochen wants to drag us down with him. When the Yin and Yang Palace and the power behind it plot a plan to fight back, they'll be targeting us as well."

"Master, should we pick another day to head to Moon Goddess's dojo?"

Qing Mingzi said, "We've promised Zhang Ruochen to meet today. Do you really think he'll still return the people to us after today?"

"Makes sense," said Xiao Nansheng.

"Let's go save our people first. If the monks from the three fields really want to have revenge, they'll definitely be onto us sooner or later."

Qing Mingzi was calm, rushed to the gate of Moon Goddess's dojo, and showed his golden dragon scales.

The formation in Moon Goddess's dojo opened a small crack.

Qing Mingzi and Xiao Nansheng walked in.

...

Ruiya Filed was ranked seventy-third in the western universe, and its saint shop in the Heavenly Saint Market was called

Huanzhen Palace.

The tallest building in Huanzhen Palace was an ancient castle.

Rumbling sounds came out of the castle.

King Flame broke a stone pillar in the castle, and his meridians popped. He yelled, “Zhang Ruochen must die.”

Yu Wenjing, who was wearing a Crane Blue Sky Cape, still found it hard to believe. He asked again, “Were all the monks from the three fields killed by Zhang Ruochen?”

A saint with wings from the Evil Way couldn’t handle the great forces coming out of King Flame and Yu Wenjing. He kneeled on the ground and said with a trembling voice, “He didn’t just kill all the monks, he chopped off their heads and hung them on a tower in Moon Goddess’s dojo.”

“He’s humiliating all of us.”

King Flame glared at Yu Wenjing and said, “Didn’t you claim that you could save all of them? Didn’t you say that you’ve warned Zhang Ruochen and he wouldn’t do something so reckless? Your arrogance killed all the monks from the three fields.”

Yu Wenjing couldn’t look more gloomy. He clenched his fist and said, “Who could’ve imagined Zhang Ruochen’s so rash? I’ll head to Moon Goddess’s dojo and crush him now. I don’t mind being punished by the godly palace.”

Many monks saw with their eyes that Yu Wenjing threatened Zhang Ruochen, trying to save the monks from the three large fields.

Now, Zhang Ruochen’s chopping off the heads of all those monks was a slap in Yu Wenjing’s face.

Yu Wenjing valued his reputation, and just thinking about how many monks were laughing at him made him furious.

The godly disciples of Truth Godly Palace could enter the dojos of the large fields and mediate conflicts.

If a mass murderer showed up in Truth Heavenly Domain, the godly disciples could enter the dojo and capture him, and if he

refused, they could even kill him before reporting.

Yu Wenjing could give Zhang Ruochen an allegation and kill him first.

Shang Ziyan walked out and said, "Come back, Yu Wenjing."

Yu Wenjing turned back and looked at Shang Ziyan. "You've heard it, Lord Ziyan. Zhang Ruochen was totally disrespecting us. I'm not going to let it slide easily."

There was no way Shang Ziyan wasn't angry. However, he was crafty enough not to show it. He said calmly, "Don't you want to know why Zhang Ruochen is so overbearing? Do you really think he and those from Guanghan Field dare challenge us?"

Yu Wenjing asked curiously, "Does he have someone more prominent helping him?"

All the monks looked to Shang Ziyan, as they wanted to know who dared stand against them.

Shang Ziyan said, "Don't you want to know where I was when you were fighting Zhang Ruochen? I was held off by someone from the Taoist Sect!"

"Taoist Sect intervened?" Yu Wenjing was dazed.

King Flame asked curiously, "He managed to check you? Who is he?"

"The leader of his generation from Taoist Sect, Zhen Yuan," said Shang Ziyan.

All the monks went gloomy hearing the name 'Zhen Yuan.'

Shang Ziyan asked, "Do you think you can rival Zhen Yuan, Yu Wenjing?"

Yu Wenjing was always full of pride, and he now shook his head and said, "Zhen Yuan is the new leader of the top saint land, Five Elements Temple. I surely can't rival him. Is this why you tried to stop me going to Moon Goddess's dojo?"

Shang Ziyan said, "Actually, Buddha Way also helped Zhang Ruochen, not just Taoist Sect."

“How so?”

“Isn’t Buddha Way always neutral, staying away from all the conflicts?”

Shang Ziyan said, “If it weren’t for Buddha Way, Zhang Ruochen could’ve never had the seventh-grade Padoga Rune and Unfounded Pearl. Without those two valuables, Zhang Ruochen would’ve died in the Yin and Yang Palace already. Besides, Queen Daxi was also held off by a monk from Buddha Way, which is why he’s not in Truth Heavenly Domain now.”

Some of the monks were thinking, some were sighing.

Both Taoist Sect and Buddha Way were powerful enough to intimidate them.

Blue Fang chuckled. “With Taoist Sect and Buddha Way behind Zhang Ruochen, how are we going to avenge their deaths?”

Shang Ziyan said, “Taoist Sect and Buddha Way are indeed prominent, but they don’t want trouble, so they can only help them secretly.

“The monks from Taoist Sect and Buddha Way didn’t join the fight in the Yin and Yang Palace, and it was brutal. Which means they’re only watching the conflict at the moment.

“If Zhang Ruochen isn’t strong enough, they’ll find Zhang Ruochen not to be worth the trouble.

“The more power Zhang Ruochen shows, the bigger the threat he poses to us, and the more Taoist Sect and Buddha Way value him, giving him more help. Why would they help a useless man?”

Queen Lian smiled, squinting her eyes, and said, “Are you saying that Taoist Sect and Buddha Way won’t be able to interfere if we can kill him instantly?”

Shang Ziyan nodded and said, “Now that I know Buddha Way and Taoist Sect have joined, I’ll mobilize more power to deal with Zhang Ruochen. Rest assured, I’ve got you all covered.”

Thinking about Shang Ziyan and the power behind him, all the monks felt relieved.

The news that Zhang Ruochen had killed more than one hundred great beings from the three fields spread in Truth Heavenly Domain, and even the disciples in Truth Godly Palace were talking about it.

The monks occupying the other nineteen dojos of Guanghan Field all got nervous.

Chapter 1621 - Isolation for One Year

Chapter 1621: Isolation for One Year

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The forces all thought that cultivators from Yin and Yang Field, Black Demon Field, and Thousand Devil Field would quickly return to attack the Moon Goddess Dojo. At the very least, they should take back the 100 Evil Way cultivators' heads.

Surprisingly, King Yan, Queen Lian, Qiong Lin, Xie Cheng and the others who'd terrorized the Truth Heavenly Domain never appeared again.

Were they really able to take this defeat?

Even stranger was that Zhang Ruochen didn't take this chance to continue fighting for the remaining 19 dojos of Guanghan Field.

This bloody storm seemed to pass like this. The entire Truth Heavenly Domain calmed down.

However, when people walked past the Moon Goddess Dojo and saw the 100 hanging heads, they would still feel frightened.

They couldn't help but wonder how both parties could leave this matter alone.

The current peace may be the calm before the storm.

The Truth Way image that the Moon Goddess had left behind was carved on a white 220-foot-tall jade tablet. It was called the Stars Orbiting Moon Image.

Zhang Ruochen didn't immediately join in on studying this, because he wanted to reach the Saint King Realm first.

However, this picture was extremely precious to the Guanghan Field cultivators.

Thus, Zhang Ruochen spent some time and effort in creating a 2:1-ratio time formation under the tablet.

Before entering isolation, Zhang Ruochen handed the Abyss Ancient Sword to Mu Lingxi. "The sword spirit can comprehend the Way of Truth too," he told her. "Please take care of it for the time being."

Now, the sword spirit had only cultivated nine rules of truth, but it could unleash double the power when using them.

In a life-or-death battle, it was great help for Zhang Ruochen.

If the sword spirit could cultivate 82 rules of truth and unleash triple the power, then it would be an even greater help.

Zhang Ruochen also handed Mu Lingxi a storage bag.

It contained all sorts of saint weapons.

Mu Lingxi knew that these were the "food" for the Abyss Ancient Sword. Every day, the sword had to refine multiple saint weapons—even dozens—to improve its grade.

"Don't worry. I'll definitely take care of the Abyss Ancient Sword. When you come out, it might even be a Third Yao Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon." Mu Lingxi smiled.

Zhang Ruochen stared deeply at her. Seeming to think of something, he said, "In the lowest level of the Euphoria Underground Palace, there's a Yin pool. It has a large amount of Yin Qi and should be able to improve your Extreme Yin Nether Ice power."

After that, Zhang Ruochen told Blackie some things before entering the time and space crystal.

The Holy Carnivorous Flower also joined Zhang Ruochen in cultivation isolation.

Its cultivation was now a first step Saint King. Small flower buds grew at the top of the vine again. It was going to flower

for a third time.

Every three times, the fruit of the Holy Carnivorous Flower was its dharmakaya.

The so-called dharmakaya was like a Supreme Saint's undying saint body.

Once combined with the dharmakaya, the Holy Carnivorous Flower's abilities would skyrocket and be able to fight with a Supreme Saint. If wrapped by the flower, it could swallow an entire planet. Everything under the Supreme Saint Realm would be its food.

If a ninth step Saint King received a dharmakaya fruit and ate it, it was highly possible for them to cultivate an undying saint body and instantly become a Supreme Saint.

It could be said that the dharmakaya fruit was a priceless treasure, even more precious than a Supreme Saint's saint source.

If a cultivator received a Supreme Saint's saint source, it was only a bit easier to create an undying saint body.

Of course, if the Holy Carnivorous Flower were to flower a third time, it needed a great amount of nutrients. If it wanted to ripen, it needed even more.

Now, Zhang Ruochen could only work to provide enough nutrients. After it combined with its dharmakaya fruit, it would be a truly great help for Zhang Ruochen.

He took an Evil Way cultivator's corpse out of the spatial ring and gave it to the flower as fertilizer.

Now, he had more than 200 Evil Way cultivator corpses. They were at least Absolute Saints and some were even Saint Kings.

When they were still alive, they'd been the top prides of their worlds and had strong bloodlines and bodies. They were able to at least fight one level above them.

By absorbing them as nutrients, the Holy Carnivorous Flower could gain some special abilities and become even stronger.

Zhang Ruochen was excited to see how the flower would develop after digesting all of those cultivators.

Next, Zhang Ruochen took out the Emperor Yi Bone Staff to study it.

There was a big Supreme Saint's soul in the skull at the top. It had already become an evil spirit.

It was very powerful. It had once suppressed Shang Feng's saint soul and swallowed it. Shang Feng was a fifth step Saint King.

Now, the evil spirit had strengthened more. With the Emperor Yi Bone Staff, it could unleash power comparable to a fifth step Saint King.

After killing those Evil Way cultivators, Zhang Ruochen had collected all their saint souls. He'd actually planned to feed them to the evil spirit.

But he wasn't sure if he could still use his Spiritual Power and sharira to control the evil spirit after it grew stronger.

He didn't dare give all the saint souls to the evil spirit at once. Thus, he took them out one by one and fed the evil spirit while observing.

He would stop as soon as he sensed something amiss.

The days passed like this. Soon, one month was over.

During this month, Zhang Ruochen spent very little time feeding the evil spirit. He spent the rest of his time holding the rules emperor weapon and studying the Rules of Saintly Way.

He also cultivated palm and sword techniques. Sometimes, he studied the fist techniques that Luo Xu gave him.

After feeding more than 40 strong saint souls, a shriek came from the skull one day. It instantly pierced Zhang Ruochen's eardrums and his ears started bleeding.

Zhang Ruochen's expression changed drastically. He quickly used Holy Qi and Spiritual Power to activate the spiritual strength and Buddhist Qi of the sharira. While purifying the evil Qi from the skull, he worked to repress the spirit.

The evil spirit was countless times meaner than before. Even with the sharira's help, Zhang Ruochen still took a long time to suppress it again.

It's now a sixth step Saint King. Without the sharira's suppression, it could kill me instantly.

No, I can't feed it anymore before I reach the Saint King Realm.

Zhang Ruochen put the Emperor Yi Bone Staff away. Then he took out the rules emperor weapon, lit a Honghua Vine, and focused entirely on studying the Rules of Saintly Way.

Whoosh!

Five beams of white light burst from his body. They landed on the ground and transformed into identical shadows.

His saint soul had split into six clones with six Saint Looks.

Right now, five saint souls broke free from the five Saint Looks. Only one still remained in his body.

The rules emperor weapon flew out of his true form's hands. It hovered in the center of his true form and five saint souls. It spun slowly, shining with brilliant light. Rules of Saintly Way flowed out like threads of light.

If the six saint souls studied at the same time, Zhang Ruochen could learn six times faster.

Of course, he could only cultivate in this state when in utter isolation and when he didn't have any disturbances.

Otherwise, no matter how strong his saint soul was, his mind would become chaotic if he received any disturbances. The consequences would be unimaginable.

After entering that state, the Mysteries of Truth in him became active. They transformed into specks of light and spread from his true form, filling the time and space crystal.

Instantly, the consciousness of his true form and five saint souls all became bright and open. His speed of comprehension multiplied.

In this state, time passed unknowingly. Zhang Ruochen had already been in isolation for a year.

There had been 30,000 saint stones piled in the time and space crystal. Without realizing, Zhang Ruochen had absorbed them all. Only powder remained.

Without the saint stones providing Holy Qi, Zhang Ruochen woke up with a start. The specks of light that filled the air rushed into his body like birds returning to their nest.

Zhang Ruochen noticed that his body was covered in dust. “I actually used up 30,000 saint stones,” he murmured to himself. “How long have I cultivated for?”

He put his hands together and the five saint souls flew back into his body.

Next, he closed his eyes again. He spent three days to completely organize the Rules of Saintly Way that the six saint souls had comprehended.

When he opened his eyes again, they gleamed with joy. “There are 2,300 Rules of Saintly Way in the Heaven Pass River. I should be in the first step Saint King Realm now.”

In the Heaven World, a Saint King could only accurately measure their realm by going to the Nine Steps to the Sky Path.

But according to the experience from seniors, one would typically become a first step Saint King after having more than 1,000 Rules of Saintly Way.

The second step Saint King Realm was around 5,000 rules.

The third step Saint King Realm was around 30,000 rules.

...

Of course, this wasn't definite.

For example, imagine a cultivator who focused on one of the 72 Supreme Saintly Ways. Then, he might be able to take a compete step on the path after cultivating 800 Rules of Saintly Way and become a first step Saint King.

But then imagine a cultivator who focused on one of the 3,000 Major Ways. Even if he had 1,500 rules inside, he might still not be able to take a complete step. He'd still be a half-step Saint King.

The nine steps were actually quite fuzzy. There wasn't a specific boundary and there weren't even different so-called "realms."

But when a cultivator was studying the Rules of Saintly Way, they would meet large and small bottlenecks. They may even be unable to comprehend any rules and stay in place, or their Rules of Saintly Way would suddenly skyrocket. In the end, after summarizing countless generations of cultivators, they created the "nine step realms."

On the Nine Steps to the Sky Path, each step was a different level of heaven.

Each step would stump a large group of untalented figures.

Only the true talents could forge on bravely and finally reach heaven with nine steps. They would cultivate their undying body and become a Supreme Saint.

It could be said that every bottleneck would frighten a Saint King. They'd fear that they would stay in place from now on and be part of the untalented figures stuck on the path.

But after this year of isolation, Zhang Ruochen didn't run into any bottlenecks. His cultivation was quite smooth.

Chapter 1622 - Exit

Chapter 1622: Exit

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The higher one's cultivation was, the faster he could comprehend saintly way rules.

It was unfathomable for a half-step saint king to refine more than two thousand saintly way rules.

It was difficult for even third-step saint kings.

Zhang Ruochen knew it was because of his six saint souls and Mystery of Truth.

Zhang Ruochen certainly wanted to try crossing Ocean of Truth again since Mystery of Truth was simply amazing. Perhaps he could comprehend the rules faster if he got more Mystery of Truth.

The side effects of the Joy and Anger Pill are gone completely. I can go to Hundred Flower Palace to buy a Six Desires Ancient Pill to improve my mind power to level fifty-six. I can also get my Golden Dragon Carriage back, Zhang Ruochen thought.

The stronger his mind power was, the easier it was for him to cross Ocean of Truth.

Besides, Zhang Ruochen wasn't going to give the evil spirit saint souls until his mind power reached level fifty-six.

Emperor Yi Bone Staff was Zhang Ruochen's trump card. He could defend himself against even a sixth-step saint king with that weapon, so he certainly wished it could get stronger and stronger.

Zhang Ruochen started to organize the objects in his space ring. He got all the objects from the storage bags of the monks from the Evil Way.

“Can’t believe there’re only one hundred and twenty million saint stones.” Zhang Ruochen was a bit disappointed.

All the two-hundred-something monks from the Evil Way had great status and cultivation, yet he had only obtained this many saint stones.

The monks from the Evil Way had much more wealth than this.

However, most of their wealth wasn’t in Truth Heavenly Domain. Instead, it was in their own fields or the refining lands in Heaven World. They had lots of cities, medicine farms, mines, and grazing grounds.

They would sell those properties when they needed saint stones, so they didn’t carry many saint stones around.

Of course, one hundred and twenty million saint stones was already a large number to most of the saint stones.

Aside from saint stones, there were many saint weapons and divine medicinal pills, together with godly blood, godly bones, saint pills, and runes. There were treasures of all sorts.

There were hundreds of bottles of divine medicinal pills, but most of them were healing divine medicinal pills, detoxifying pills, and restorative pills.

There were only eight bottles of divine medicinal pills that improved mind power, and only fifteen bottles of divine medicinal pills that improved cultivation.

Besides, each bottle only had one or a few pills.

Zhang Ruochen was relieved after pondering the reasons behind it. If he had gotten divine medicinal pills that could improve his mind power and cultivation, he would’ve taken them instantly instead of carrying them around.

Zhang Ruochen took a look at the eight bottles of divine medicinal pills that could improve mind power, and he looked upset again.

Three of them had lower-class pills, four of them had mid-class pills, and only one of them contained upper-class pills.

That upper-class pill was the Joy and Anger Pill that Zhang Ruochen had taken before, and there were four of them.

Lower-class divine medicinal pills and mid-class divine medicinal pills were all valuable, but they couldn't help Zhang Ruochen much, as he was already a mind power saint king.

As for the Joy and Anger Pill, which was an upper-class divine medicinal pill, it could help him a lot. However, Zhang Ruochen had taken three pills, so he had antibodies to it already. Even if he took another four, his mind power wouldn't be boosted.

Zhang Ruochen put away the eight bottles of mind power divine medicinal pills and took out the fifteen bottles of pills that could improve his cultivation. He opened the bottles one by one to check them. Most of them only contained lower-class divine medicinal pills and mid-class pills, which were tremendously helpful for saints, but they were nothing to saint kings.

“Cobweb Pills and Knowledge Pills.”

Zhang Ruochen looked pleased after seeing two bottles of upper-class divine medicinal pills.

A Cobweb Pill was made of saintly way rules and saint medicine that was tens of thousands of years old. After taking one pill, the pill would spread in the monk's body, and saintly way rules would stay in his body like a cobweb forever.

Under the help of that divine medicinal pill, monks could quickly comprehend saintly way rules and transformed them into their own rules.

It was an immensely precious upper-class divine medicinal pill, and usually, it was very difficult to buy.

As for a Knowledge Pill, it could provide monks with the best state of mind for comprehending, boosting their speed of comprehension by several times, even ten times.

Most of the saint kings would only use divine medicinal pills when they were stuck. Most of the time, they would comprehend the saintly way rules by themselves.

Zhang Ruochen thought for a bit, and he decided not to take the pills.

If he used the divine medicinal pills, he might be able to refine faster, but what if he got stuck in the future?

If he took the same pill when he was stuck, it wouldn't work as well as the first time.

Zhang Ruochen did find two types of divine medicinal pills among all the other hundreds of pills: Dingyuan Pill and Blood Pill.

The Dingyuan Pill was an upper-class divine medicinal pill that solidified his cultivation, which was useful for monks whose cultivation was surging.

As for Blood Pills, they could quickly improve his body.

Zhang Ruochen comprehended the saintly way rules using his six saint souls. Even though he had a perfect grasp on them, it still took effort for him to actually use them.

Zhang Ruochen then took a Dingyuan Pill. He spent two days refining and absorbing it completely.

The saintly way rules that were kind of chaotic in his body became stable, and he was able to mobilize any of the rules with his mind.

And besides, his saint Qi became very pure, as if all four of his saint sources were purified.

“No wonder it's an upper-class divine medicinal pill. It saved me so much time from stabilizing my cultivation.” Zhang Ruochen smiled and put away the other six Dingyuan Pills.

Zhang Ruochen prepared to get out without taking Blood Pills.

It should be more than three months outside, and he wasn't sure what was going on. Were the three large fields and Shang Ziyan plotting revenge?

Zhang Ruochen checked the Carnivorous Holy Flower before going out.

Zhang Ruochen gave all the bodies of the two-hundred-something monks from the Evil Way and one thousand saint sources to the Carnivorous Holy Flower.

All the corpses had been refined and absorbed, and the bag which contained one thousand saint sources was also empty.

No matter how many saint sources Zhang Ruochen had, he would run out eventually given how fast the Carnivorous Holy Flower absorbed them.

There were more than fifty thousand saintly way rules in Carnivorous Holy Flower's body now, which rivaled that of a third-step saint king, thrilling Zhang Ruochen.

“The Carnivorous Holy Flower said the pollen of Divine Reflection Lotus can improve its absorbing speed by ten times. That might be the reason the Carnivorous Holy Flower managed to absorb so many nutrients in only one year.”

The Carnivorous Holy Flower was in its slumber, probably digesting everything it absorbed. What level was its cultivation going to reach after digesting all of them?

Zhang Ruochen didn't wake it up. Instead, he put it back into his spine, walked out of the inner space of Time and Space Crystal, and showed up in a Weapon-Refining Pavilion.

Squeak!

The sun shone upon his face, hurting his eyes.

The two female monks who were staying outside the pavilion were dazed, and then, they kneeled with one knee and said, “Lord Ruochen.”

Zhang Ruochen took a look at them. Both of them were upper-class saints, and they looked exquisite.

“Who are you?” Zhang Ruochen seemed confused.

The saintess kneeling on the left pouted and said, “We're monks who were deserted by our own fields, and we're willing to join Guanghan Field.”

The saintess kneeling on the right was timid. She said with her head lowered, “We hope Lord Ruochen won’t feel disdain for us.”

Zhang Ruochen figured that they might be the female monks who were captured by the three large fields and held in Yin and Yang Palace, but that their fields had abandoned them for some reason.

“Stand up. You can stay in Moon Goddess’s dojo from now on. As long as you’re loyal to us, I won’t expel you,” said Zhang Ruochen.

The two saintesses were amazed and stood up, but they were still tiptoeing around Zhang Ruochen and didn’t even dare look straight at him.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Where is Miss. Mu?”

“Are you talking about Goddess, her highness?” said the saintess on the left.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Goddess. Yes, her.”

Mu Lingxi was Moon Goddess’s disciple, and she was above everyone in Guanghan Field, except supreme saints. To the two saintesses, Mu Lingxi was the one-above-all Goddess.

“Goddess is refining in Bliss Dungeon,” said the saintess on the left.

They raised their heads as they didn’t get any response from Zhang Ruochen for a long time, but he was gone already.

“Lord Ruochen is extraordinary, I couldn’t feel that he’d gone away at all.”

“Lord Ruochen is ranked the first on ‘Saints Merits Rank.’ Countless devils from the Yin and Yang Palace were killed by him. It’ll be wonderful if we can be his maids.”

“Don’t be delusional. Lord Ruochen will definitely be a supreme saint who roams the world in the future. We’re nothing to him.”

...

After getting to the bottom of Bliss Dungeon, Zhang Ruochen was stopped by two saintesses.

“Who are you? Don’t you know the Goddess is refining here?” One of the saintesses scolded at Zhang Ruochen.

The other saintess saw a stranger’s face, and immediately got on guard, summoned a saint sword, and pointed it at Zhang Ruochen.

Obviously, they hadn’t met Zhang Ruochen and didn’t know who he was.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t trespass. Instead, he said calmly, “Please tell her highness that Zhang Ruochen is here to see her.”

“Zhang... Are you the Lord priest?”

The two saintesses looked horrified and couldn’t help sweating.

However, they couldn’t let Zhang Ruochen in before confirming his identity, so they immediately sent a message to Su Jing, informing him.

Su Jing seemed to have known that Zhang Ruochen had walked out of the inner space, so he replied to them immediately.

After receiving the reply, the two saintesses were terrified and groveled on the ground.

“Lord Ruochen.”

“We didn’t mean to be rude to you... Please forgive us, Lord Ruochen.”

The two saintesses knew that the priest in front of them was a real killer, and they might be annihilated for offending him.

“No need to be so scared of me. Get up,” said Zhang Ruochen.

The two saintesses looked at each other, still groveling on the ground.

They’d seen many people who pretended to be nice in the Yin and Yang Palace. They looked easygoing, but they could turn

into bloodthirsty monsters in one second.

Zhang Ruochen frowned. He knew that they were tortured in the Yin and Yang Palace, and their willpower was so fragile that it would take a long time for them to recover.

Zhang Ruochen stopped talking to them, opened the stone door, and walked straight into the underground space.

As he walked to Yin Pond, he saw an extremely sexual view in the water. His heart immediately pounded fast as he held his breath.

Mu Lingxi was completely naked, and she was standing at the center of Yin Pond, and half her body was showing above the water. Her wet hair dangled on her shoulders, and her breasts were glowing, looking like two small hills.

Just as Zhang Ruochen tried to look away, Mu Lingxi, who was standing in the pond, noticed that someone had walked in. She immediately opened her eyes.

Chapter 1623 - Take and Give

Chapter 1623: Take and Give

Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi had experienced countless joys, pains, and life-or-death experiences. They had a very deep relationship that had long surpassed friendship.

But there was someone between them, so they restricted themselves. They seemed to be close and yet so far.

Seeing Mu Lingxi's beautiful figure, how could Zhang Ruochen not have any reaction as a regular man?

But he wasn't a horny man and had a strong will. He quickly pushed down the devilish fire in his gut.

In the pool, after Mu Lingxi met eyes with Zhang Ruochen, she hurriedly covered her bosom with her pale arms. She looked very embarrassed. Her snow-white face instantly reddened and the flush spread to her neck.

The underground atmosphere became strange.

Zhang Ruochen averted his eyes and coughed dryly. "Actually, I just arrived."

If any other man burst in, he would probably get his eyes gouged out even if he wasn't killed.

But Mu Lingxi couldn't gather any hatred. Instead, she didn't know what to do. Her face grew even more red and beautiful.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen turn around, Mu Lingxi finally let out a relieved breath. She patted the water surface and flew out of the pool like a fairy.

She extended a slender hand and quickly picked up the clothing on the side. She put it on, covering her delicate and enticing frame.

Mu Lingxi stared at Zhang Ruochen's back and bit her red lip. Resentment colored her pretty eyes on purpose. "Aren't there two Female Saints guarding outside? How did you come in without a sound?"

Even though she was annoyed, she wasn't actually angry.

Instead, Zhang Ruochen was a bit awkward. After all, their relationship was still at an ambiguous stage. They weren't a true couple.

The two Female Saints guarding the door followed Zhang Ruochen into the underground space.

Right now, they stood at the edge of the tunnel and stared at Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi. They were shocked and almost fossilized—unmoving.

"Lord Ruochen actually spied on the body of the pure Saintess?"

They realized that they'd discovered an incredible secret and felt guilty. If they'd known, they wouldn't have followed in.

Knowing something they shouldn't know meant death.

Fearing that Zhang Ruochen would kill them, they knelt onto the ground and lowered their heads. "We didn't see anything," they said with trembling voices. "Priest, please forgive us..."

Zhang Ruochen's headache intensified. Eyes turning cold, he said, "Do not let a third person know what just happened, or else I'll destroy you two."

"Yes," the two female Saints said, terrified.

Mu Lingxi had an extraordinary status now and this pertained to her reputation. Zhang Ruochen naturally had to be careful about this.

"Go out now!" he uttered. He also used Spiritual Power to intimidate them, leaving the mark of fear in their hearts.

Faces pale, the two female Saints hurriedly retreated from the underground space and closed the stone door.

This problem was both big and small. If it wasn't taken care of correctly, it could cause great trouble for Mu Lingxi.

But this was Zhang Ruochen's fault. If he'd been patient and had the two female Saints report to Mu Lingxi first, it might not have happened.

Zhang Ruochen turned around and trained his eyes on Mu Lingxi. He was about to apologize, but when he saw Mu Lingxi's anticipating eyes, he swallowed his words.

He knew that Mu Lingxi wasn't waiting for an apology.

She stood across from Zhang Ruochen. Her exquisite egg-shaped face was breathlessly beautiful. Her body was completely wet and only covered with one layer of long white silk. Water droplets rolled on her skin, glistening.

Mu Lingxi's bright eyes stared at Zhang Ruochen and the anticipation in them grew stronger.

She knew what Zhang Ruochen was hesitating and worrying about, so she was very anxious.

After a long silence, Zhang Ruochen finally got rid of his distracting thoughts. Eyes growing determined, he walked straight to Mu Lingxi. He took her cold hands and pressed them to his heart. "Lingxi, are you willing to be my companion?"

In terms of feelings, Zhang Ruochen had been holding back ever since he met Mu Lingxi. In the beginning, it was because he couldn't move on from Empress Chi Yao. Then, it was because of Huang Yanchen.

Zhang Ruochen's relationship history was full of hardship.

After those two relationships, he even started sealing up his emotions.

This was why Mu Lingxi didn't expect Zhang Ruochen to be so direct. Naturally, she was shocked.

But her hands were pressed to Zhang Ruochen's heart and her eyes touched Zhang Ruochen's unwavering gaze. She gradually calmed down. She could feel that Zhang Ruochen was very serious and her heart started beating rapidly.

Mu Lingxi had been waiting for this sentence for a long time. After it came, it felt unreal, as if she was dreaming.

Zhang Ruochen waited for a long time without getting a reply. Furrowing his brows slightly, he said, "I made this decision after thinking carefully. From now on, I will do my best to protect you. I won't let anyone hurt you. If..."

Mu Lingxi felt like she'd gone mute. She couldn't say a single word, but she felt anxious. She nodded forcefully like a chick pecking at corn, afraid that Zhang Ruochen would say something like, "If you're unwilling, then pretend I didn't say anything."

After all, it was very difficult to make Zhang Ruochen express his feelings voluntarily. Who knew when it would happen again?

Zhang Ruochen smiled and reached out his other hand. He grasped Mu Lingxi's willowy waist and hugged her tightly.

Hearing that Zhang Ruochen had come out of isolation, Ling Feiyu immediately came to the Euphoria Underground Palace to discuss matters with him.

But when she reached the stone door, she stopped. She stared at the tightly shut door and stood there quietly. She didn't take another step.

With her strong cultivation, a door wouldn't be able to block her eyes or ears unless there was a formation. Naturally, she heard and saw everything that was happening.

The next moment, the door opened. Zhang Ruochen walked out, holding Mu Lingxi's arm.

"I sensed Palace Lord Ling's aura earlier," he said to the two female Saints kneeling on the ground. "Did she come?"

"Yes," one answered. "Palace Lord Ling indeed came, but she stood outside quietly for 15 minutes and then left."

Mu Lingxi didn't know that Zhang Ruochen and Ling Feiyu had seven lives together. "She must have come for you. She's reached a bottleneck recently and wants to leave the Moon Goddess Dojo to challenge herself and have a breakthrough. But she seems to have something she wants to discuss with you, so she waited until you came out of isolation."

Zhang Ruochen had already fused the memories of the seventh world. In that world, he and Ling Feiyu had deep interactions. Not only did they have feelings for each other, they'd also married and had their own children and grandchildren.

It was only a life spent in the scroll world, but the memories and feelings were very real. He couldn't ignore them.

Ling Feiyu didn't express it because she didn't know that Zhang Ruochen had already fused the memories of that life.

Zhang Ruochen didn't express it because he hadn't found the suitable time.

Zhang Ruochen immediately ran out of the Euphoria Underground Palace, but he ran into Blackie at the exit and almost crashed into it.

Blackie hurriedly stopped him. "I saw Ling Feiyu earlier. She wanted me to give you a letter."

Zhang Ruochen took it. "Where is she?" he asked impatiently.

"She left. She just entered the space transfer formation and said she's going out for a challenge. Honestly, why is this woman so impatient? She obviously knew that you already came out, so why couldn't she tell you personally? Why did she write a letter? I don't get it... Hey, where'd you go?"

While Blackie was rambling, Zhang Ruochen had already disappeared from its sight.

He went through the space transfer formation and arrived at a rainforest in the Truth Heavenly Domain.

The space transfer formation in this forest connected with the one in the Moon Goddess Dojo. If Ling Feiyu left with the space transfer formation, then she must come here first.

Zhang Ruochen flashed to the top of the nearest mountain and looked around for a trace of Ling Feiyu.

He also released his Spiritual Power to check surrounding areas.

Unfortunately, it was to no avail.

Zhang Ruochen knew why Ling Feiyu had left so quickly. He was worried that she would be sad, so he wanted to make things clear.

Taking a deep breath, Zhang Ruochen uttered sound waves. “I know you’re hiding nearby and can hear my voice. I want to tell you that I’ve fused the memories of the seventh world and I hope we can have a nice chat. I have two bottles of pills that can help a Saint King break through a bottleneck. It can help you. Please come out, alright?”

His sound waves traveled thousands of miles, layer after layer, and shocked a flock of crows in the forest.

But Ling Feiyu didn’t appear.

Instead, cultivators hundreds of miles away heard Zhang Ruochen’s voice and hurried over.

“I hope you’ll only hide from me for a while instead of a lifetime.”

Zhang Ruochen heaved a sigh and destroyed the space transfer formation before the other cultivators arrived. He had no choice but to leave.

“That’s strange. I heard a cultivator’s voice earlier. How did it suddenly disappear?”

“That man’s voice is so strong. He must be a Saint King. Let’s not look for trouble and leave quickly.”

After those cultivators left, Ling Feiyu walked out of a ravine. She held the Glass Heaven Cover. It was this weapon that helped fool Zhang Ruochen’s Heavenly Eyes and Spiritual Power.

She gazed into the distance at the mountaintop where Zhang Ruochen had been. With a bitterly sad expression, she murmured, “Since someone is able to mend your pain, then I’ll choose to leave. We both search for unlimited strength and shouldn’t be affected by coincidental fate. Rather than struggling to help each other in despair, let us forget it all. Zhang Ruochen, you’re on your own in the Truth Heavenly Domain battlefield from now on.”

Absoluteness filled Ling Feiyu's eyes. She walked out of the ravine and into the distance.

The Truth Heavenly Domain's environment was amazing and the Way of Truth was one of the nine ancient ways, but so what?

The universe was boundless.

This wasn't the only path that led to the pinnacle.

The Truth Heavenly Palace didn't exist before the Heaven World was created, but weren't there still top figures?

Thinking of this, Ling Feiyu didn't have anything holding her back anymore. She walked out of the Truth Heavenly Domain with more and more determined steps.

The moment she left, her mindset changed and she suddenly broke through the bottleneck that had been frustrating her. The Rules of Saintly Way multiplied within her and her cultivation shot up.

Chapter 1624 - Current Situation

Chapter 1624: Current Situation

Zhang Ruochen opened the letter from Ling Feiyu, and after reading it, he looked pretty upset.

Ling Feiyu said in the letter that she was leaving Truth Heavenly Domain, even Heaven World, and she was about to tour around all the large fields in the universe. Besides, she also planned to head to the Merits Battlefields to sharpen herself.

“Ugh!”

Zhang Ruochen also wanted to go by himself without all the responsibilities.

However, after thinking about it twice, he only shook his head, as he was carrying too much on his shoulders.

Even if he was leaving, he needed to get more Mysteries of Truth in Ocean of Truth first. It was an opportunity only in Truth Heavenly Domain, so he could not miss it.

“Please take care, and I’ll see you sometime in the future.”

Zhang Ruochen put away the letter, cheering himself up.

Zhang Ruochen found another secret spot in Truth Heavenly Domain, set up a space transformation formation and headed back to the Moon Goddess’s dojo.

Whoosh!

The formation glowed.

Mu Lingxi stood beside the formation, looked at Zhang Ruochen and said, “The relationship between you and palace leader isn’t just teacher and friend, is it?”

Zhang Ruochen walked out of the formation and said, “No, it’s not.”

Mu Lingxi was smart enough to figure something out. “Is she trying to avoid us? Has she left Truth Heavenly Domain already?”

“Don’t overthink it. Palace Leader Ling has been an extraordinary woman in the past hundred years in Kunlun’s Field. She wants the perfect sword way, nothing more. Emotion is just an obstacle to her. She won’t get rid of it if she keeps staying in Truth Heavenly Domain. Perhaps her sword techniques will surge if she gets out. Next time I see her, she might’ve finished Sword Ten already.” Zhang Ruochen tried to look calm, as he didn’t want to put pressure on Mu Lingxi.

Mu Lingxi knew how upset Zhang Ruochen was about Ling Feiyu’s departing, so she dropped that issue.

She took out the Abyss Ancient Sword and handed it to Zhang Ruochen. “The Abyss Ancient Sword has become a Third Yao ten thousand patterns saint weapon, and it’s going to be a Four Yao ten thousand patterns saint weapon very soon.”

“Really? Sounds like you took really good care of it.”

Zhang Ruochen grabbed the sword by its handle, and suddenly, he felt that the sword had merged with him. The sword was twice as heavy as before, and it got sharper.

Whoosh!

He infused his saint Qi into the sword.

Suddenly, a black saint power ripple emerged on the sword, and it wielded First Yao Complete Power.

Ding!

The shrill noise echoed in the Moon Goddess’s dojo.

Zhang Ruochen looked pleased and said, “I needed to spend half a breath of time to trigger the First Yao Complete power, now I can do it in no time. Seems like I’ve become an actual saint king already.”

Zhang Ruochen kept infusing the sword with saint Qi.

After three breaths of time, the second level of saint power ripple was formed on the Abyss Ancient Sword, and it wielded

Second Yao Complete Power.

Traces of sword Qi gushed out of the sword, making whooshing sounds. It formed a black sword rain, floating above Zhang Ruochen.

All the monks in the Moon Goddess's dojo could feel the terrific forces coming out of the Abyss Ancient Sword, and they could feel the saint Qi boiling.

They released their mind power to inspect the terrific forces, which calmed them down as they knew they came from the Abyss Ancient Sword.

“It's the priest's sword.”

“Still Second Yao Complete Power, but its forces are way stronger than before. Has our priest become a saint king already?”

...

As the monks in the Moon Goddess's dojo discussed, Zhang Ruochen kept infusing the sword with saint Qi. After thirty breaths of time, the third level of saint power ripples emerged on the sword, wielding its Third Yao Complete Power.

Boom!

The enormous sword way force swept across the space around him, knocking Mu Lingxi hundreds of feet away.

Zhang Ruochen's face blushed, and his hands were shaking. It was difficult for him to handle Third Yao Complete Power, and the Abyss Ancient Sword felt heavier than a mountain.

“Fight me with a ten thousand patterns saint weapon,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Mu Lingxi took out a black horn from her storage bag and infused it with saint Qi.

That black horn bulged, becoming more than a hundred feet long, and she wielded it against Zhang Ruochen like a wind.

Bang!

Zhang Ruochen wielded his sword and cut the horn into halves like it was tofu.

Mu Lingxi opened her mouth wide and looked astonished. “This Field Horn is almost as powerful as a Second Yao ten thousand patterns saint weapon, yet it was destroyed by the Abyss Ancient Sword instantly.”

Sizzle!

The Abyss Ancient Sword flew out of Zhang Ruochen’s hands.

It pierced through the ground, releasing black sword light and covering the two parts of the Field Horn, starting to refine it.

The Abyss Ancient Sword’s power was at a totally different level now. Even without Zhang Ruochen, its sword spirit could easily kill a half-step saint king.

Zhang Ruochen smiled, satisfied. “I reckon the Abyss Ancient Sword has refined lots of saint weapons these days. How many saint weapons do you still have?”

Mu Lingxi looked eccentric, and she took out a storage bag and gave it to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen opened the storage bag, thrilled. “Only dozens of them left.”

There had been more than ten thousand saint weapons in the storage bag before he went into Time and Space Crystal. He obtained all of them in Zuling Field, the merits battlefield.

Yet the Abyss Ancient Sword had refined all of them in a month.

However, most of the saint weapons the Abyss Ancient Sword refined were hundred patterns saint weapons and thousand patterns saint weapons, and the remaining ones were all ten thousand patterns saint weapons.

These saint weapons were enough to improve the Abyss Ancient Sword to a Four Yao ten thousand patterns saint weapon.

Zhang Ruochen also seized lots of ten thousand patterns saint weapons after coming to Truth Heavenly Domain. They were of better quality and stored in his space ring at the moment. After the Abyss Ancient Sword refined all of them, it could become a Five Yao ten thousand patters saint weapon.

Bang Bang!

Su Jing was standing a hundred feet away, and he clapped his hands and smiled. “Congratulations, priest. You’ve finally become a saint king, and the Abyss Ancient Sword is stronger than ever. Two pieces of good news at the same time.”

Now that Zhang Ruochen had become a saint king, he had a different status now, and Su Jing regarded Zhang Ruochen as his peer instead of a junior.

Zhang Ruochen walked to Su Jing and said, “I just became a saint king, nothing compared to you, Uncle Jing.”

Su Jing nodded, seeing how humble Zhang Ruochen was. He then stopped smiling and said seriously, “Now that you’ve come out of the crystal, there’s something we three need to discuss.”

“That’s perfect. I have something to ask you as well, Uncle Jing.”

Zhang Ruochen took back the Abyss Ancient Sword.

The three of them came to a palace-shaped Weapon-Refining Pavilion, sitting on two sides.

Su Jing took out a storage bag and put it on the desk. “The monks from different large fields came to the Moon Goddess’s dojo to pick up their female monks when you were refining.

“Aside from the one hundred and thirty-seven large fields who participated in conquering the Yin and Yang Palace, other large fields all spent a lot of saint stones to redeem their monks. There’re two hundred and fifty-five million saint stones in the bag. Have a look, priest!”

It was Zhang Ruochen who took back Moon Goddess’s dojo, so Su Jing wouldn’t take the saint stones.

Besides, he was the leader of Nine Spirits Divine Bird Clan. He had all the saint stones he wanted.

“This much?” Zhang Ruochen looked surprised.

“Not too much.”

Su Jing shook his hand and smiled. “There’re more than a thousand talented girls. They’re either incredibly beautiful or have noble statuses. Countless monks from their fields are willing to spend saint stones to redeem them. If it weren’t for making friends with them, we might have much more saint stones in the bag.”

It was Zhang Ruochen who proposed making friends with those monks.

Besides, two hundred and fifty-five million saint stones was a huge amount already, which was beyond Zhang Ruochen’s expectation. It was more than enough for him to buy the refining resources he needed.

He’d risked his life fighting for these saint stones.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t reject them, but took the storage bag.

Su Jing then said, “Some of the female monks deserted by their fields have joined Guanghan Field, but some of them are very special, so I don’t know how to deal with them.

“Are you talking about the female monks from Hell World?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Zhang Ruochen did see some female monks from Hell World held captive in Bliss Dungeon: Luosha females, saintess from Immortal Vampire Race, and Asuras from Asura Race, and some ghostly female monks that looked like ghost kings.

The monks from the Evil Way were indeed omnipotent enough to collect so many different female monks.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Keep those who’re willing to join Guanghan Field. Sell those who don’t want to join and get some saint stones.”

“Okay.” Su Jing nodded.

There were human beings and savage beasts who defected to Hell World, becoming the slaves and saddle horses of the great beings from Hell World, so the great beings from Heaven World could also do the same.

In the prosperous large fields, many monks were proud of having slaves from Hell World. The more slaves from Hell World they had, they prouder they were.

Su Jing then said, "I have dozens of invitations here for you."

"Oh really?" Zhang Ruochen looked surprised.

Su Jing brought a pile of invitations and said, "The monks who sent the invitations all participated in attacking the Yin and Yang Palace. Some of them are extremely powerful, with high statuses in their fields, but they're in big trouble now."

"What kind of trouble?" asked Zhang Ruochen.

Su Jing answered, "After they redeemed their female monks from Moon Goddess's dojo, the monks either went missing or got killed. It must be the revenge of Yin and Yang Field, Black Demon Field, and Thousand Devil Field. Even some of the rescuers got assassinated."

Zhang Ruochen was dazed and said, "How dare the monks from the three large fields kill people like that in Truth Heavenly Domain? Aren't they afraid of being arrested by godly disciples?"

Su Jing shook his head and said, "It wasn't the monks from the Evil Way, but the assassins from Heavenly Kill Organization."

"Heavenly Kill Organization has penetrated Truth Heavenly Domain already?"

Zhang Ruochen hated this assassination organization a lot.

Su Jing sighed and said, "Heavenly Kill Organization is an ancient assassination, originating from Heaven Field, one of the four ruling fields, and it was in existence before Heaven World was established. After a hundred thousand years of development, it's already everywhere in Heaven World. They'll even try assassin Gods if they're paid a good price."

Zhang Ruochen thought and smiled. “Why would they send me invitations? I might be weaker than them, and I reckon Heavenly Kill Organization wants to kill me more than them.”

“But you can set up a time formation and space formation,” said Su Jing. “If you combine the two of them, even Heavenly Kill Organization can’t break it, which can safeguard a dojo. Perhaps that’s why they need your help.”

Chapter 1625 - Encountering Gold Roc Race Again

Chapter 1625: Encountering Gold Roc Race Again

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen accepted the invitation from Su Jing. He skimmed it and put it in his storage ring. “Have Shang Ziyan and cultivators of the three evil worlds done anything in the past three months?”

Su Jing thought for a bit and shook his head softly. “No. It may be because they can’t get past the time and space formations, so they can’t take us down. They can only take their anger out on other worlds.”

“What about Kunlun’s Field?” Zhang Ruochen asked. “Did they have any action?”

Su Jing knew that Zhang Ruochen had a deep relationship with some cultivators from Kunlun’s Field, so he said, “There really are some strong figures among Kunlun’s Field. A while after you went into isolation, they attacked the Tianluo Dojo and actually conquered it. It caused quite a commotion in the Truth Heavenly Domain.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded slightly. The humans of Kunlun’s Field—Luo Xu, Wan Zhaoyi, the Nine Heavenly Maiden, Xue Wuye, and Monk Lidi—weren’t weak at all. They also had top-class weapons. Very few people in the same realm could defeat them.

The Light Myriad Scroll, Confucius Saint Book, silver cleaver, and Buddhist Butcher Sword were all sought after by Supreme Saints and could dominate the battleground.

Conquering a dojo wasn't very strange.

After all, not every dojo was as difficult as the Moon Goddess Dojo.

“But around one month ago, they went to attack Red Leaf Dojo and ran into a great enemy. They left in defeat and many cultivators were injured gravely. Blood spilled all over Red Leaf Mountain. It was very tragic.”

Zhang Ruochen frowned. “Really?”

“The cultivators of the Red Leaf Dojo weren't much stronger than Tianluo Dojo,” Su Jing said. “I think they were tricked and ran into a pre-arranged trap. Of course, only they know what exactly had happened.”

Zhang Ruochen fell into deep thought.

A smile appeared in Su Jing's eyes. “Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo and Moon Goddess Dojo had all been conquered. When the news spread back to Guanghan Field, all the races celebrated. Countless older cultivators were impressed. If you return to the Shatuo Heavenly Domain, many people will probably visit you.

“Now, you are an unbeatable hero to the beings of Guanghan Field. Your name is like a Supreme Saint. Apparently, the Moon Goddess also bestowed a gift upon you. It's on the way to the Truth Heavenly Domain now.”

This entire time, Zhang Ruochen seemed very composed. He didn't care about fame anymore.

He was excited for the Moon Goddess's treasure though.

A god's gift wouldn't be too bad.

Su Jing continued, “Since you've already entered the Saint King Realm, you must have improved greatly. When do you plan on conquering the remaining 19 dojos of Guanghan Field?”

By now, Su Jing was very confident in Zhang Ruochen, viewing him as the hope of Guanghan Field.

He could even conquer the Moon Goddess Dojo. The other dojos shouldn't be hard at all.

Zhang Ruochen felt that it was very strange that Kunlun's Field was defeated. "No hurry," he said seriously. "Right now, Guanghan Field only has a few cultivators here at the Truth Heavenly Domain. Two dojos are enough. I plan on crossing the Sea of Truth first. Perhaps I can gain more cultivation spots for Guanghan Field."

Su Jing's eyes brightened. "With your current abilities, you should be able to cross the second level, right?"

Zhang Ruochen didn't reply. He just smiled.

Before reaching the Saint King Realm, Zhang Ruochen had been confident in crossing the second or even third level.

As for now, he naturally had a higher goal.

Seeing how confident he was, Su Jing was even happier. "If you can cross the second level in the first year, you'll receive six cultivation spots. If you succeed, it'll be great news for Guanghan Field."

Next, the three discussed some other things before leaving one after another.

When crossing the Sea of Truth, strong Spiritual Power was a great help, so Zhang Ruochen planned on going to the Hundred Flower Palace and buying the Six Desires Ancient Pill.

Before leaving, he took out two bottles of Spiritual Power strengthening pills and a dozen other bottles. He gave them all to Mu Lingxi.

However, he didn't give her the Emotion Pill.

If Mu Lingxi's personality turned bipolar because of the side effects, wouldn't Zhang Ruochen be giving himself trouble?

Of course, Mu Lingxi's phoenix wings contained the strong inherited power of the Ice and Fire Phoenix. Her Spiritual Power, cultivation, and improvement speed far surpassed regular cultivators.

She wasn't far from the Saint King Realm now.

Zhang Ruochen used the True Hallucination Flower's seed to create an "intangible mirage." He slipped out of the Moon Goddess Dojo and appeared on the street.

Instead of going straight to the Hundred Flower Palace, he circled the Moon Goddess Dojo to investigate secretly.

There are three spies. They're all half-step Saint Kings.

Without having to guess, he knew that they were sent by Shang Ziyan or the three evil worlds. They were watching every move of the people in the dojo.

Perhaps, they knew that it wasn't much use since the dojo had a space transfer formation, so their spies weren't very strong.

Zhang Ruochen memorized the three's appearances and auras but didn't kill them. Instead, he went toward the Hundred Flower Palace.

When he reached a more remote alley, he transformed into a handsome man with dragon horns, dragon wings, and armor made of dragon scales. There was a cold and arrogant look on his face.

His cultivation was pushed to the half-step Saint King Realm.

The Hundred Flower Palace was glamorous and majestic like a palace. Light shot into the air and the Holy Qi was heavy. It was also popular. An endless stream of cultivators went in and out of the gates.

As soon as Zhang Ruochen entered, a lower Saint servant in white clothing came over. She bowed. "Qing Xing greets the lord. How can I help you today?"

Zhang Ruochen put on the arrogance of a dragon elite. "I want to see the Fairy Extreme King."

Qing Xing saw that he had an extraordinary temperament and was very strong. Afraid that she would anger him, she asked carefully, "Lord, are you an esteemed guest of the Hundred Flower Palace?"

Zhang Ruochen swiped his finger across the storage ring.

Whoosh!

The ring flashed with light.

A badge appeared in his hands. He shook it before Qing Xing's eyes and then put it back.

Seeing the esteemed badge, Qing Xing grew more respectful toward Zhang Ruochen. "Lord, you came at a bad time. The Fairy Extreme King happened to return to Thousand Pistil Field. Now, the Pill Spirit King is in charge."

"The Pill Spirit King," Zhang Ruochen uttered. The tragic image from the Euphoria Underground Palace flashed past his mind. "Okay," he said. "Take me to see the Pill Spirit King."

He'd come to the Hundred Flower Palace to buy the Six Desires Ancient Pill and redeem the Golden Dragon Carriage. Both the Fairy Extreme King and Pill Spirit King were the same to him, as long as he could see Ji Fanxin through them.

But it was impossible to be able to see the famous Hundred Flower Fairy through them.

Plus, the Holy Carnivorous Flower had already eaten all the Reflection Lotus powder in him. Ji Fanxin shouldn't know that he'd come.

Qing Xing's expression grew apologetic. "A few other esteemed guests and big clients have come to see the Pill Spirit King today too. Lord, how about you wait for a moment in the esteemed guest room?"

Zhang Ruochen was in no hurry, so he nodded and followed Qing Xing to the room.

It was decorated in a scholarly style. The halls had paintings and calligraphies from famous artists. It was very quiet. The walls and floor also had formation runes to ensure every guest's safety.

Qing Xing led Zhang Ruochen to the room and left.

There were many beast bone screens in the room. It was unknown what material they were made out of, but they radiated with cold Qi. That Qi could refresh and compose

someone, helping them instantly enter the state of comprehending the Way.

Other than Zhang Ruochen, there were three other beings sitting there.

To Zhang Ruochen's right was a thin man.

However, he wasn't human. There was a white spike at the tip of his nose. He was probably from the Eagle Race.

Eagles were a big bird race and were spread throughout the universe. Some that had ancient bloodlines were terrifying. They ate dragons and captured phoenixes.

However, they weren't very tribal and were mostly independent cultivators.

The thin man's eyes were closed and he held his hands before his abdomen. Strands of white mist rolled between his palms, shining with specks of light. It seemed to be a powerful technique.

It might have been because of his special technique or that he had a treasure that covered his aura, but even as a Saint King, Zhang Ruochen couldn't see through him.

What Zhang Ruochen couldn't understand was that he actually had a strange aura.

He couldn't pinpoint why it was strange. It just unsettled Zhang Ruochen, making him a bit anxious.

This was very rare, so Zhang Ruochen secretly released a spatial domain and grew cautious.

Across from Zhang Ruochen, two men sat behind a screen. He couldn't see their appearances, but he could hear them talk. Not only did they not use Spiritual Power, they also sounded very cocky.

A dramatic voice rang out behind the screen. "Seventh Brother is so strong. How could he vanish for no reason?"

"I think it's very strange. It must be related to that Hundred Flower Fairy."

“Ever since Seventh Brother met her, it was like he’s possessed. Instead of cultivating in our dojo, he moved into the Hundred Flower Palace. Who knows how many saint stones he spent to pursue her?”

Another man’s voice sounded. “Brother Yi Roc, are you overthinking it? The Hundred Flower Fairy is the disciple of the Datura Flower Goddess. How could she harm the Gold Roc Prince? In my opinion, he is just cultivating in isolation somewhere, so he didn’t answer your message.”

“Ha, I know. You, Prince Luonan, want to pursue her too, so you’re speaking up for her, right?” The man known as “Brother Yi Roc” scoffed.

Prince Luonan chuckled. “Who doesn’t want to pursue the legendary lady of the Nine Angels Beauty Scroll? Plus, if I can snatch the Hundred Flower Fairy’s heart, then you’ll call me Crown Prince Luonan from now on.”

“If that Hundred Flower Fairy has something to do with my seventh brother going missing,” Brother Yi Roc said, “the Gold Roc Race isn’t a good race to offend. She’ll have to pay with her life even if she’s the Datura Flower Goddess’ disciple.”

“You don’t treasure beauties at all.” Prince Luonan sighed.

Hearing their conversation, Zhang Ruochen couldn’t help but want to laugh. Enemies always found each other. He actually encountered Gold Rocs here.

Unfortunately, that Gold Roc Prince was probably already turned to ashes by Ji Fanxin.

Hopefully, Ji Fanxin did things cleanly and didn’t leave any traces. Otherwise, if the Gold Roc Race investigated, they might be able to find him too.

The Gold Roc Race was a very strong ancient race. They were aggressive and not even gods were willing to offend them, let alone Zhang Ruochen.

Steps sounded outside.

Zhang Ruochen sensed the Pill Spirit King's aura and immediately sat up.

Chapter 1626 - Divine Pofa Lightning, Lifeless Blood Prison

Chapter 1626: Divine Pofa Lightning, Lifeless Blood Prison

Queen Danling was a Crimson Flame Peony that'd been alive for more than seventy thousand years, and it'd been more than nine hundred years since she refined her flesh.

She walked into the VIP room, carrying powerful saint might.

Although Queen Danling wasn't as pretty as Ji Fanxin, she was still ethereal compared to most, and her body was curvier than Ji Fanxin's. Her skin was smooth and pale, and even the saint blouses she had on couldn't hide the contour of her breasts and butt.

Refreshing peony fragrance spread, and even a sniff of it made people revel in its scent.

There were many beauties in Thousand Pistil Field.

Yin Peng from Golden Wing Roc Race was originally furious, but seeing how dashing Queen Danling was, he couldn't help staring at that beauty. He acted like a monk who'd been refining deep in the mountains, exposed to the real world for the first time. He was amazed by the beautiful woman in front of him.

Prince Luonan acted more natural than Yin Peng.

As the prince of a super dynasty, Prince Luonan had met a lot of attractive women. However, Queen Danling wasn't just beautiful, she also had great cultivation and the original body of a Crimson Flame Peony. Other women's temperament couldn't compare with hers.

“No wonder Queen Danling is an emperor daughter of Peony Clan. Even in the entire Tianluo Empire, there're less than a

few with such great looks and temperament. If it wasn't for Hundred Flower Fairy Ji Fanxin, who overshadows every other girl, Queen Danling would've had much more fame.”

Prince Luonan regarded Queen Danling as a great target. After all, she was an emperor daughter and a saint king. She could help him in every aspect.

Most importantly, there were too many people pursuing Hundred Flower Fairy, so Prince Luonan wasn't confident that he could succeed.

Zhang Ruochen was sipping his tea, looking at Queen Danling. He thought, Queen Danling was tortured miserably in the Bliss Dungeon. I didn't see how exceedingly beautiful she is. No wonder she's worth sixty million saint stones in the Yin and Yang Palace.

However, Zhang Ruochen'd seen lots of beauties, so he wasn't staring at Queen Danling like Yin Peng.

Zhang Ruochen then looked away and shot a glance at the slender man near him. He saw the man stop refining and open his eyes.

For some reason, Zhang Ruochen's heart skipped a beat and started to sweat seeing his eyes.

Why did that happen?

He didn't feel that way even in front of a supreme saint.

Queen Danling had already observed all four people in the VIP room. She opened her shining red mouth and said, “Do you want to buy refining resources or sell valuables here?”

Prince Luonan walked forward and smiled. “Ms. Danling, I'm the third prince of the Tianluo Empire, Luo Nan. I came here because I heard the Peony Race is the best in Heaven World at making the Jade Transformation Pill, so I want to buy a bottle.”

Queen Danling laughed inside. The Peony Race was indeed very proficient in making Jade Transformation Pills, but it was definitely not the best. She could tell that this Prince Luonan was buttering her up.

If she hadn't gone through that calamity, Queen Danling's interest might've been piqued, but now, she felt nothing for what Prince Luonan had said.

Queen Danling smiled and said, "The Jade Transformation Pill is an upper-class divine medicinal pill, and each of them is worth six hundred thousand saint stones. There're ten in on bottle, so six million divine medicinal pills. Take Prince Luonan to the Pill Palace, Qing Xing."

Prince Luonan looked a bit disappointed, and he said, "No rush, no rush. My friend also has something important to talk to Ms. Danling about."

Queen Danling then looked to Yin Peng.

However, Yin Peng was still zoning out and immersed in Queen Danling's beauty, which humored Queen Danling a bit. She then looked away and looked at Zhang Ruochen. "I've never seen you before."

Never seen before?

Zhang Ruochen looked exactly like this when he went to the Bliss Dungeon to save her, however, he was wearing a mask in the dungeon while Queen Danling was unconscious.

Just as Zhang Ruochen was about to stand up, he saw the slender man behind Queen Danling become fierce, and his sense of killing form tumbling blood waves, filling the VIP room.

All the monks in the VIP room felt a great danger going against them. Even Yin Peng, who was still mesmerized by Queen Danling, suddenly woke up.

The two saintess maids behind Queen Danling bled and fell onto the ground by the blood waves.

Whoosh!

The slender man waved his arms, wielding a trace of silver lightning.

The lightning was formed a long time ago, so it contained horrific power, hitting Queen Danling breaking through all the blood waves.

It was too fast!

Even Queen Danling, as a fourth-step saint king, didn't have time to cope with it. She could only activate the defense power of all the five saint blouses she was wearing.

Bang Bang!

All the five saint blouses were broken one by one, turning into ashes.

A blood-red hole emerged on Queen Danling's back, and she was knocked away by the lightning, hitting Zhang Ruochen's body. To be accurate, she hit Zhang Ruochen's shadow.

Because Zhang Ruochen immediately went to the right when the lightning dashed toward Queen Danling.

Obviously, the slender man was here to assassinate Queen Danling, and he was immensely powerful. Zhang Ruochen didn't have the power to ward it off.

Besides, Zhang Ruochen would lose his capabilities to handle the slender man, and he wouldn't be able to defend himself against his second strike.

The best strategy was to dodge the attack.

Zhang Ruochen wielded his fist against the walls of the VIP room.

As long as he could let the people outside know that someone was trying to kill Queen Danling, the great beings in Hundred Flower Palace would rush here as fast as possible.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen only caused ripples on the wall after he wielded his fist.

The entire VIP room had turned into a sealed box, and there was a layer of blood-red light screen covering the floor, the roof, and the walls.

Zhang Ruochen didn't try to use a space crack to break the wall. After all, he wasn't sure how the slender man sealed the entire VIP room.

If the blood-red light screen could ward off space cracks, Zhang Ruochen would expose his trump card.

As for Queen Danling, she hit the wall, falling onto the ground.

Her face paled, and her hair was messy. She stared at the slender man and said, "Divine Pofa Lighting, Lifeless Blood Prison. Which heavenly king are you from Heavenly Kill Organization?"

The slender man stood up and said, "You were wearing five saint blouses with great defense power. Even the Divine Pofa Lightning I've formed for half a month couldn't kill you. Seems like you expected someone to try to assassinate you."

The blood hole on Queen Danling's back released great saint light, and it healed quickly.

Instantly, it was healed with a scar, and her sexy back was showing under the rugged saint blouses.

However, only Queen Danling knew the internal injuries.

She could only wield thirty-percent of her prime power now, and she might find it difficult to deal with the heavenly king assassin when she had her full strength.

She then looked to Yin Peng and Prince Luonan, as she wanted to team up with those two to fight against the slender man.

Prince Luonan was pleased as he ran into a chance to save the beauty. Perhaps it was his time to get the woman under his knees.

"How dare you come attack the emperor daughter of the Peony Race. I've been hating this Heavenly Kill Organization for a long time. Don't you dare run away today."

Prince Luosha spoke with his deep voice, and then, he activated his saint armor that was a ten thousand patterns saint weapon, and his saint might gushed out, followed by the noise of a hundred beasts.

Yin Peng also tried to protect Queen Danling. He opened his golden wings and stood in front of Queen Danling. He looked

like a divine ancient beast, and his saint might was tremendous.

Prince Luonan was a second-step saint king, and Yin Peng seemed to be a pinnacle second-step saint king.

Their statuses signaled that they had practiced divine techniques, and they had powerful bloodlines, so they were definitely stronger than ordinary second-step saint kings when they were in a fight.

However, Zhang Ruochen was more pessimistic. The slender man was able to injure Queen Danling with ease, which meant his cultivation was inscrutable. It wasn't that easy to deal with him.

Prince Luonan shot Zhang Ruochen a glance and said, "You're only a half-step saint king, so you'll be of no help. Just stay there and try to break the Lifeless Blood Prison."

Queen Danling didn't have any hope in Zhang Ruochen either. After all, he was only a half-step saint king, so he couldn't help in this situation at all. Besides, he tried to run away instead of saving her when she was ambushed.

The VIP room was tiny, but now, there were saint kings fighting each other. Queen Danling, Prince Luonan, and Yin Peng couldn't wield their full power even though they were forceful.

However, it was the perfect place for an assassin heavenly king.

Actually, Zhang Ruochen didn't want to be a part of it, as he might lose his life.

He then headed to the corner and took out the seventh-grade Padoga Rune, and then, he took out his Yi Emperor Bone Scepter and Abyss Ancient Sword, hiding them in his sleeves.

This was the first time he'd run into a saint-king assassin, and he came from Heavenly Kill Organization.

The assassins who came from Heavenly Kill Organization were all terrifically powerful, given their fame, so Zhang Ruochen needed to be as careful and cautious as possible.

Chapter 1627 - Frightening Assassin

Chapter 1627: Frightening Assassin

Even though Zhang Ruochen had already retreated into the corner of the room, acting as if he was harmless, the thin man didn't intend to let him go.

Crack!

The thin man hit his belt with his hand.

Three silver metal balls flew out of his belt. Two of them flew toward prince Luonan and Yi Roc.

The third flew toward Zhang Ruochen.

Won't even go easy on me, a half-step Saint King.

Zhang Ruochen sighed. He lifted his Abyss Ancient Sword, activating the First Yao power, and went to meet the ball.

Whoosh!

Two sharp three-foot-long blades grew out of the silver ball. It spun in the air, creating gales of wind. Sword Qi struck out in all directions.

The silver ball moved extremely quickly and unpredictably.

Boom, boom.

Without warning, Prince Luonan was cut seven times in a row. Sparks flew from his Ten-thousand-pattern saint armor.

The great power in the blades sent Prince Luonan's body spinning like a top. He flew out and crashed into the wall. His entire body was messed up.

Yi Roc wasn't any better. He was thrown into a tizzy from the silver ball. He was cut four or five times, but he used his strong defensive wings to survive.

Right now, Yi Roc and Prince Luonan were terrified. With their cultivations, they couldn't even handle two silver balls that the other released.

If the thin man personally attacked, he'd be able to kill them easily.

The two felt great regret. If they'd known better, they wouldn't have tried to be heroes. When the thin man had attacked, they should've tried their hardest to break through the Lifeless Blood Prison and escape.

The thin man grabbed a long spear. It was black and ancient with interweaving lightning bolts. He cleanly stabbed toward the Pill Spirit King.

The spear was like a demonic pillar while the tip was a divine thorn.

The Pill Spirit King had a high cultivation and reacted calmly. Red fire poured out of her palms and solidified into a peony, blooming like a red lotus from hell.

In that instant, the temperature of the room skyrocketed. Other than the fighting people, everything was burned to ashes.

The Pill Spirit King cultivated the top technique of the Peony Race—the Hell Force. It wasn't as strong as the 81 techniques on the Taiyi Techniques Divine Rank, but if she cultivated it to the extreme, she could still become a god.

How could a technique that led to the God Realm be weak?

The hellfire stored within her was unlimited. It spewed out continuously, turning the peony flower translucent and almost liquid.

Boom! The thin man stabbed with his spear, hitting the peony.

A deafening boom burst forth in the room. Wild holy power surged in all directions.

Prince Luonan, Yi Roc, and the two silver balls were sent flying by the strong wind. They hit the walls, seeming pathetic.

“This place is too small. I can’t take advantage of my speed.”
Yi Roc was annoyed.

Prince Luonan’s eyes were cold and sharp. “Seems like I’ll have to use the Saint Look Rune to end this battle quickly.”

Before coming to the Truth Heavenly Domain, a Supreme Saint from his mother’s clan had given him a Saint Look Rune. Apparently, if it was activated, he could temporarily have a seventh step Saint King’s power.

However, the rune paper couldn’t withstand a seventh step Saint King’s power, so this precious rune would shatter with one use.

“Brother Yi Roc, help cover me for a moment. When I activate this rune’s power, I’ll be able to destroy him with one punch.”
Prince Luonan put his hands together and his Holy Qi circulated rapidly.

In the distance, there was a soft crack.

The translucent peony was shattered by the spear. It broke into fragments of flames that filled the room.

The Pill Spirit King was deathly pale. She stared at the thin man in the sea of fire as if looking at a death god. Her eyes became clouded with fear.

The man didn’t continue attacking her. Instead, he charged out with his spear and stabbed at Prince Luonan, who was activating the Saint Look Rune.

“Get past me first!”

Yi Roc’s hands transformed into golden claws. He activated the Rules of Saintly Way and performed a mid-level saint spell.

“Flying Roc Breaks the Sea.”

Not only did he have Rules of Saintly Way, he also had Rules of Truth in his claws. Yi Roc’s power magnified. That claw could probably injure a third step Saint King.

“Ignorant,” the thin man uttered coldly.

Boom!

The spear broke through everything. It penetrated Yi Roc's claws and chest as if tearing through two pieces of paper, and stabbed Prince Luonan's forehead.

He severely injured two strong Saint King with one spear.

The Saint Look Rune on Prince Luonan's forehead was also shattered, becoming ineffective.

Yi Roc and Prince Luonan fell to the ground. One bled from his chest and hands; the other clutched his forehead in extreme pain.

“Assassin Puppets, kill them.”

The man put away his bloody spear and ordered the two silver balls. Then he walked toward the Pill Spirit King.

The silver balls produced clacking sounds and became two one-meter-tall man-shaped metal killers in the span of half a breath. They wielded double swords and their auras were as strong as a Saint King.

Yi Roc and Prince Luonan weren't average cultivators. They quickly repressed their injuries and stood up as fast as possible, activating all types of defensive techniques.

“You can actually produce Saint King Assassin Puppets and take out three at once. Who are you?” Prince Luonan's expression was very uncomfortable.

Assassin Puppets were made out of meteorites, so they were extremely strong.

Plus, the stronger they were, the more time it took to produce them.

Each of the man's three Assassin Puppets was comparable to a third step Saint King. They probably had to breed in the puppet blood pool for more than 1,000 years and continuously be fed saint soul power to be completed.

Only a murderous heavenly king could control three Assassin Puppets.

One only had one life.

Faced with someone as terrifying as this thin man, the Pill Spirit King, Prince Luonan, and Yi Roc all felt chilled. Death loomed over them.

Earlier, the Pill Spirit King had used all her might to hit the room's walls, but she couldn't penetrate them. This made her fall into despair.

Suddenly, the thin man sensed something. He spun around and stared at the dragon male standing in the corner. His eyes narrowed into slits.

He remembered that he'd released three Assassin Puppets. One had gone to attack this dragon.

But only two remained in the room now.

Where did the third Assassin Puppet go?

Since the beginning, the man's attention was focused on the Pill Spirit King, Prince Luonan, and Yi Roc. He didn't care about the half-step Saint King at all.

But now, with his instincts as a killer, he realized that the most troublesome one in the room may be this half-step Saint King.

The Pill Spirit King, Prince Luonan, and Yi Roc discovered this strange thing too. They were all surprised.

Earlier, when the silver ball had flown toward Zhang Ruochen, he'd raised the Abyss Ancient Sword.

But the silver ball had vast force and was very hard. Even the Abyss Ancient Sword's sharpness couldn't destroy it.

Of course, it also had a weakness.

It was a dead object, controlled by the saint soul power. It wasn't able to think. It could only follow the man's orders and kill.

The ball's terrifying speed wasn't threatening for Zhang Ruochen either.

Thus, he used spatial freeze to stop the ball of a second. He took advantage of that instant to put it into his Mercury Gourd.

One must mention that after reaching the Saint King Realm, he was able to use the spatial freeze in the Heaven World too.

The thin man stared at Zhang Ruochen. "I didn't think I would misjudge you," he said coldly. "You aren't a half-step Saint King at all. Instead, you're a dragon king. There are only a few dragon kings in the Truth Heavenly Domain and I've recorded them all down. You're not one of them."

In the Dragon Race, anyone who reached the Saint King Realm would be given the title of "dragon king."

Zhang Ruochen didn't answer. He just stood guardedly against the man.

The Pill Spirit King's almond eyes studied Zhang Ruochen's Abyss Ancient Sword with a thoughtful gaze.

"It doesn't matter if you don't tell me your identity," the thin man said. "If you hand over the Assassin Puppet and stand to the side, getting out of my way, then I can spare you. After all, killing you won't benefit me."

Naturally, Zhang Ruochen didn't believe him.

In the beginning, Zhang Ruochen hadn't planned on getting involved, but the man had released his Assassin Puppet to kill him. It was obvious that this man was murderous and didn't follow the rules.

Finally, Zhang Ruochen said, "A Assassin Puppet is like a third step Saint King. How can I return something so precious?"

"Since you chose death, I'll make it easy for you."

The man's eyes turned cold. He took out a gold-threaded bag and opened it. Hundreds of poisonous black insects flew out.

These insects split into three waves.

The largest wave flew toward Zhang Ruochen. The other two went toward Prince Luonan and Yi Roc.

"Ah...it's...it's the Trifoot Carnivorous Insect!" Yi Roc cried out in pain.

The Holy Qi that he released was actually eaten up by the black insects. Even his hard golden scales were gnawed through. His other defensive tactics seemed to be useless too.

Crunch, crunch.

The poisonous insects dug into Yi Roc's body and started gobbling up his flesh.

Only a moment passed and Yi Roc's body was withered. Only a layer of skin and bones remained. After some more breaths, even the skin and bones on the ground were devoured cleanly.

Seeing this, Zhang Ruochen, the Pill Spirit King, and Prince Luonan felt chills, as if they'd fallen into a chamber of ice.

Chapter 1628 - Trifoot Carnivorous Insect

Chapter 1628: Trifoot Carnivorous Insect

Zhang Ruochen used to think that Trifoot Carnivorous Insects were a myth, yet today he realized they actually existed.

What was more terrifying was that monks could feed and drive them.

The bodies of supreme saints were called ‘immortal saint bodies.’ No weapons, fires or water could erode them. Even if they were buried underground for tens of thousands of years, they wouldn’t decompose.

However, Trifoot Carnivorous Insects were the natural enemies of corpses of supreme saints.

If Trifoot Carnivorous Insects found the tombs of supreme saints, their bodies would be swallowed.

Because of their abilities to swallow the ‘immortal saint bodies’ of supreme saints and to evolve, Trifoot Carnivorous Insects were ranked among the most terrifying bugs.

There were only dozens of Trifoot Carnivorous Insects trying to swallow Yin Peng, but there were more than two hundred flying toward Zhang Ruochen.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen immediately activated his Hundred Saint Blood Armor, and he released Divine Fire Jingmie, forming a fireball with a diameter of ten feet, covering his body.

After he became a saint king, his Divine Fire Jingmie got stronger, and the flame was blue now.

Bang Bang!

The Trifoot Carnivorous Insects hit the fireball.

However, those Trifoot Carnivorous Insects weren't burnt to death. Instead, their bodies turned crimson and were knocked aside, and then, they turned black again, trying to attack the fireball formed by Divine Fire Jingmie.

"They're swallowing Divine Fire Jingmie."

Zhang Ruochen got more and more upset seeing the fireball dimming, thinking of a way to survive this.

Trifoot Carnivorous Insects could swallow even the immortal saint bodies of supreme saints, so Zhang Ruochen couldn't just put them into the Mercury Gourd. What if they broke the Mercury Gourd?

"You have Divine Fire Jingmie? You're someone extraordinary, aren't you?"

The slender man stared at the fireball, thinking, and said, "Unfortunately, it's only top-tier ordinary flames, not official flames yet, so it can't kill my Trifoot Carnivorous Insects. However, my bugs might be stronger after absorbing your Divine Fire Jingmie."

The slender man didn't go attack Zhang Ruochen. Instead, he treated him as a nutrient for his bugs.

As for Prince Luonan, he seemed to have lots of valuables, and he wielded one saint weapon after another, and wore one saint blouse after another, warding off the Three Corpse Carnivorous Bugs attacking him.

Just as Prince Luonan tried to defend himself, the two killer puppets attacked him.

Boom!

After three breaths of time, one of the killer puppets stabbed Prince Luonan's belly, which made him bleed.

Smelling the blood, all the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects got excited.

Bang Bang!

The saint weapons protecting Prince Luonan cracked, dismantled by the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects.

“Please spare my life... I have lots of saint stones... I’ll give them all to you... Please...”

Dozens of Trifoot Carnivorous Insects rushed to Prince Luona, eating him up completely.

“Do you really think I’m that stupid? I don’t want to be hunted down by Tianluo Empire.”

The slender man waved his sleeve and took a storage ring of Prince Luonan from the ground.

The slender man smiled wickedly, “I can get all your saint stones by killing you anyway.”

And then, then slender man used his mind power to deploy two groups of Carnivorous Bugs and stared at Queen Danling who was at the corner of the wall.

Queen Danling looked desperate and horrified.

“Your life is too valuable to be fed on by the bugs.”

The slender man was going to attack his target today, but then, he heard a booming sound behind him.

What happened?

The slender man was irritated and looked back.

Divine Fire Jingmie and the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects were all gone, and the only thing left was the blue cauldron, and the man was standing beside the cauldron, operating the blue cauldron with his saint power.

“Which cauldron is that? How can it trap my Trifoot Carnivorous Insects?”

The slender man sensed the exceptionality of the blue cauldron. He released his mind power to inspect it, but it immediately disappeared after it entered the blue cauldron.

He’d never come across something like this, so he immediately took back his mind power and summoned two puppet killers to guard him.

“Can’t believe these bugs are so powerful.”

Zhang Ruochen put his hands on the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron, however, the cauldron was still shaking, and the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects were trying to get out.

Queen Danling saw a chance to survive. She immediately flew to Zhang Ruochen's side.

“Let me help you.”

Queen Danling summoned her great saint Qi, infusing it into the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron, after which the cauldron stopped shaking.

The slender man finally regarded Zhang Ruochen as his biggest target, and said, “Your blue cauldron is impressive. Is that a supreme saint weapon?”

Zhang Ruochen didn't answer.

“Doesn't matter. I have almost a hundred Trifoot Carnivorous Insects. Let's see how you're going to handle them.”

The slender man moved his lips, and the rest of the hundred Trifoot Carnivorous Insects dashed toward Zhang Ruochen and Queen Danling.

The two puppet killers wielded their blades behind the bugs, forming two powerful blade networks, going against them.

Queen Danling was dazed, took out a long white damask silk, going to wield it. But then, she heard someone yell, “Break!”

The dragon-race man beside her grabbed the space and tore at it, trying to tear the space apart.

The space cracked, making a crumbling sound.

The fragmented space formed a powerful swallowing force, absorbing all of the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects.

It wasn't easy for that dragon-race man to maintain such a large space crack, so the space was sealed again.

Queen Danling was amazed, as the rest of the puppet killers were nothing after the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects were annihilated.

Sizzle!

Queen Danling's damask silk released crimson flames like two fiery dragons, winding the two puppet killers, trapping them.

"Space monk."

The slender man was aggrieved seeing that the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects were destroyed. He looked pissed, and his black spear released lightning.

The lightning filled the entire VIP room, containing terrific destructive power.

The lightning could easily destroy a first-step saint king. However, Zhang Ruochen just stood there and withstood all the lightning, which couldn't hurt him at all.

Meanwhile, he took out his Emperor Yi Bone Staff.

"Die!"

The slender man grabbed his spear and tried to stab Zhang Ruochen.

The saint might hit Zhang Ruochen before the spear did.

Suddenly, a giant black shadow showed up in front of the slender man in the lightning. It looked like a giant skull with ghost fire burning in its eyes.

Boom!

The puppet's fist clashed with the black spear.

The slender man shook, and his clothes exploded as he bounced away like a scarecrow.

Zhang Ruochen who was standing on the shoulder of the black skull seized the chance to wield a space crack that was one foot long.

What was worth mentioning was that Zhang Ruochen could instantly wield a space crack after becoming a saint king, however, it still cost him lots of saint Qi to do that.

Wielding a space crack that was one foot long required the same amount of saint Qi as a saint spell.

The slender man moved his body to make sure he wasn't fatally attacked.

Boom!

The space crack that was originally aimed at his neck cut his left shoulder.

The flesh and bone that were hit disappeared, leaving only a hollow with saint blood gushing out.

However, the slender man didn't seem to feel pain at all. He immediately dashed toward Zhang Ruochen again and said, "I'll kill you before Queen Danling again."

The black skull kept wielding its fist, and the force shook the entire Lifeless Blood Prison. Even an iron man would be crushed by that fist.

The slender man was unfathomably fast, and he dodged the black skull's fist, rushing to above the black skull and wielding his spear against Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen wielded three space cracks in a row, yet the slender man dodged all of them with his incredible body techniques, forcing Zhang Ruochen to wield his Abyss Ancient Sword.

Bang!

Zhang Ruochen felt that he was being repressed by ten mountains, and he fell off the shoulder of the black skull to the ground. He had to squat, spreading the power in his body to dissolve the attack of that slender man.

"So powerful. If I'd refined Sword Way Xuangang, I would've had a better time dealing with him."

Zhang Ruochen felt that his arms were numb, and he immediately used the techniques to regain his senses.

The slender man struck again, and his spear turned into a black dragon, gathering all the power at the tip, followed by lightning.

Zhang Ruochen wielded the space power again.

"Space twist."

The slender man who was standing above felt the space spin, and he suddenly was moved in front of the black skull.

The black skull wielded its fist again, hitting his chest.

Bang!

The slender man's body caved and cracked, and his bones made fissuring sounds. His body bounced away, hitting the blood-red wall.

Clack!

His spear fell on the ground

Chapter 1629 - Death Emissary

Chapter 1629: Death Emissary

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Whoosh!

Before the thin man could stand up, Zhang Ruochen's cold and black sword was already at his forehead.

The Pill Spirit King's beautiful face had a joyful expression. She immediately walked toward Zhang Ruochen. "Seal his cultivation. I have a secret spell to search his memories. I might be able to see who wants to kill me."

A strange expression appeared in the man's eyes. Holy Qi spun violently within him.

"No, he wants to deactivate his Sea of Qi and saint source."

Poof!

Zhang Ruochen stabbed forward, piercing the man's forehead.

But after doing so, Zhang Ruochen's blood ran cold.

The man's Sea of Qi wasn't under his forehead.

Without hesitation, Zhang Ruochen grabbed the Pill Spirit King and rushed back. He also added Holy Qi into the seventh level Pagoda Rune.

The next moment, blinding light shot out of the man's heart. His body was torn apart instantly, turning into powder. A destructive force also surged out, sweeping into all directions.

Boom!

The Lifeless Blood Prison sealing the room also disappeared when the man died.

The formation runes carved in the walls, floor, and ceiling only held up for an instant. Then the horrible destructive force pulverized the room.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

The Hundred Flower Palace shook instantly. All the formation runes were activated, and beams of light shot up. A dozen formations appeared on the ground and in the sky, spinning quickly.

Even so, with the esteemed guest room as the center, a ring of a dozen meters was turned into rubble.

The strong cultivators of the Thousand Pistil Field were all alarmed. They hurried over and gasped after seeing the huge ditch.

...

Two hours later

The Pill Spirit King explained what had happened to the people of the Thousand Pistil Field before meeting with Zhang Ruochen in the Swallow Palace Cave.

Zhang Ruochen sat on a stone stool, looking at the seventh level Pagoda Rune in his palm. There were seven cracks on it.

One could imagine that this highly expensive rune would shatter completely after another use.

A faint peony fragrance met his nose.

He put the Pagoda Rune away and stared at the beautiful female Saint King before him.

The Pill Spirit King smiled and bowed slightly. "Thank you, Lord Ruochen, for saving me twice. I am owing you more and more."

Since the other recognized him, Zhang Ruochen shook and turned back into his original appearance. "To be honest, you really have to repay me," he said, sighing. "Last time, I was

almost turned into Queen Lian's Yang drug. This time, I'm even more innocent. I almost died for no reason."

The Pill Spirit King sat down across from Zhang Ruochen, her breasts quivering slightly. She stared at him with almond eyes and her bright red lips moved. "How do you want me to repay you?"

Hearing a beautiful woman ask that, any man would have many thoughts.

Zhang Ruochen touched his chin with a finger and stared at the Pill Spirit King's features with a thoughtful expression.

When the Pill Spirit King grew uncomfortable, he finally said, "I'm interested in the Assassin Puppets of the Heavenly Assassination Organization. How about you give me the two Assassin Puppets that you took?"

The Pill Spirit King was relieved. "I thought you wanted my body," she said, chuckling. "So, you want the two Assassin Puppets."

Zhang Ruochen smiled. "Seems like you're disappointed."
"Nonsense."

The Pill Spirit King grew serious again. She placed the two silver balls on the stone table.

Just as Zhang Ruochen reached out to take them, she pressed down on the balls and pulled them back.

Zhang Ruochen frowned. "What do you mean?"

"Third step Saint King Puppet Killers can't even be bought on the market," the Pill Spirit King said. "But you can still estimate their price. An Assassin Puppet of that level would be at least 20 million saint stones."

Zhang Ruochen didn't deny this. An Assassin Puppet was indeed worth that price.

"So, I won't owe you anymore after giving them to you."

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. "I feel like two Assassin Puppets still aren't as valuable as your life. How about you add something else?"

The Pill Spirit King's eyes grew resentful. "How can you be so stingy as the leader of a world? Can't you be more generous before a beauty? Isn't it better for me to owe you?"

Zhang Ruochen shrugged. "I can't force someone to repay gratitude. If you're unwilling, I can't do anything about it."

Other cultivators tried their hardest to kiss up to the Pill Spirit King's and she wouldn't even look at them. But not only did Zhang Ruochen not take this chance to kiss up, he even acted as if she owed him a lot of money.

She rolled her eyes. It was the first time someone spoke casually about gratitude. "What do you want?"

"A Six Desires Ancient Pill," Zhang Ruochen said.

The Pill Spirit King shook her head immediately. "It belongs to the Hundred Flower Palace. Not only is it expensive, it's also very rare. I can't give it to you."

After a pause, she continued, "Actually, I want to buy one too, so I can improve my Spiritual Power. But after the attack from the Yin and Yang Palace, I lost all my money. I can't afford the pill now. How about you change your conditions?"

Zhang Ruochen thought carefully and smiled. "After thinking, I feel that having an advanced and beautiful female Saint King owe me isn't bad."

The Pill Spirit King rolled her eyes again. She thought that Zhang Ruochen said that because he saw that she was too poor and couldn't scam her of anything valuable.

"A Six Desires Ancient Pill is 18 million saint stones for one pill, right?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"Yes," the Pill Spirit King. "But due to your relationship with the Hundred Flower Palace, I can voluntarily lower the price by 50,000 saint stones."

Zhang Ruochen nodded. "How many Six Desires Ancient Pills does the Hundred Flower Palace have?"

"Three."

"Okay, I want them all."

The Pill Spirit King knew that Zhang Ruochen must've hit a fortune after conquering the Yin and Yang Palace, but she was still impressed by how much of a spender he was. She was the daughter of a Peony Race god, but compared to him, she was just a poor child.

"I must remind you," she said seriously. "The Six Desires Ancient Pill is very strong. Even if you're Spiritual Power is at level 55, it can still be dangerous."

Zhang Ruochen already knew this.

But he was still confident in controlling the pill.

"In addition, if you take a second pill, the effect will be halved," the Pill Spirit King said. "If you take a third, the effect will be halved again, so it's actually a waste to buy three at once."

"Then, is there a saint pill at the same level that can improve Spiritual Power?" Zhang Ruochen asked seriously.

"There are some, but they're very rare. The pill recipe isn't publicized and usually in the hands of the top clans and sects of the top 100 worlds. It's also very difficult to produce the pills. The top clans don't even have enough, so they won't sell them."

"In that case, I still want three Six Desires Ancient Pills."

After a pause, Zhang Ruochen continued, "Does the Hundred Flower Palace have the Seven Emotions Ancient Pill?"

The Pill Spirit King stared deeply at him. "The Seven Emotions Ancient Pill is a heaven grade pill. It's more than ten times more expensive than the Six Desires Ancient Pill. You should also know that Spiritual Power cultivators usually take it when trying for the Supreme Saint Realm. Even if you can afford it, your Spiritual Power isn't enough to refine it."

"Then, whatever!"

Zhang Ruochen knew clearly how useful saint stones were. In the Heaven World, you could improve quickly if you had enough saint stones. Thus, he didn't buy the Seven Emotions

Ancient Pill now. He prepared to use his saint stones where he needed them.

After an hour, the Pill Spirit King returned. Not only did she have three Six Desires Ancient Pills, she also brought a book.

Zhang Ruochen handed over a storage bag with 52.5 million saint stones and put away the three pills. Then he picked up the yellowing book and asked curiously, “And this is?”

“The Thousand Pistil Field has been fighting with the Heavenly Assassination Organization for quite some time,” the Pill Spirit King said. “We’ve collected some material about Assassin Puppets. It may be helpful for you.”

Zhang Ruochen was happy. He flipped through the book and put it away. “It’s a pleasant thing to have the Pill Spirit King owe me. Thank you!”

“It’s also a pleasant thing to hear you thank someone.”

The Pill Spirit King chuckled but quickly grew serious again. “There’s something else I must warn you about. The killer who tried to kill me might not be a Assassin Heavenly King. Instead, he could be a Death Emissary produced by a Heavenly King.”

“Death Emissary?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“An Assassin Heavenly King creates them by suppressing another Saint King and using a secret spell to erase their consciousness and add a shred of their own saint spell and intent to kill. They develop a creature who doesn’t fear death. They’re like half-alive and half-dead.”

“A Saint King’s mind is so strong. How can it be erased so easily?”

The Pill Spirit King seemed to think of something terrifying. She paled and said bitterly, “Before, I also thought that a Saint King’s mind could not be destroyed, but in the Yin and Yang Palace... Even I almost broke down...”

Zhang Ruochen knew that she must’ve thought of herself. Thinking of her hellish experience in the Yin and Yang Palace, she must have been filled with pain.

Zhang Ruochen immediately changed the subject. “I believe it’s not that easy to create a Death Emissary, unless they have 100,000 years of accumulation. Just how strong is the Heavenly Assassination Organization?”

The Pill Spirit King nodded. “Yes, the death rate for producing Death Emissaries is very high. Saint Kings aren’t so easily captured either. Only top Assassin Heavenly Kings can produce them. If our killer is a Death Emissary, then judging by his strength, his owner must be a famous figure on the rank.”

“What rank?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Assassin Heavenly King Rank.”

The Pill Spirit King had a reason for suspecting the thin man to be a Death Emissary.

He was very strong, but at the Pill Spirit King’s top state, she could still fight with him. An Assassin Heavenly King at that level wouldn’t be able to have three third step Saint King Assassin Puppets and Trifoot Carnivorous Insects.

It could only mean that the man had an even more terrifying figure behind him.

Chapter 1630 - Three Assassination Organizations

Chapter 1630: Three Assassination Organizations

And then, Zhang Ruochen and Queen Danling talked about Heavenly Kill Organization and ‘Heavenly King Assassin Rank,’ which informed him of the assassin world in Heaven World.

“Three of the most powerful assassin organizations in Heaven World, Heavenly Kill Organization, Earthly Kill Organization, and God of Death Palace.

“Heavenly Kill Organization is the oldest one with the greatest inheritance, and it’s the most powerful one too. It even assassinated a God in history, which solidified its status.

“Earthly Kill Organization is a new organization, and it was founded after Heaven World came into being. It dates back to tens of thousands of years ago.

“It was said that the founder of Earthly Kill Organization was the best assassin in Heavenly Kill Organization. He’s called ‘Thousand Row One Column.’ ‘Thousand Row’ means all the tens of thousands of corpses on the ground, and ‘One Column’ means him, stepping on all the bodies.

“All the dead bodies, Thousand Rows... Only One Column is invincible.

“After Thousand Row One Column betrayed Heavenly Kill Organization and founded Earthly Kill Organization, Heavenly Kill Organization tried to assassinate him, but it’s been tens of thousands of years, and Thousand Row One Column’s still alive. Besides, Earthly Kill Organization is booming, and it might surpass Heavenly Kill Organization.

“What’s the most amazing about Earthly Kill Organization is that they’ll even try to assassinate the monks from Hell World

if you pay them enough, which is something even Heavenly Kill Organization wouldn't easily try.

“As for God of Death Palace, it's a loose organization. Any monk whose cultivation reaches half-saint level can become an assassin in God of Death Palace. After finishing their tasks, they can get some saint stones from God of Death Palace, but it won't rescue the assassins if they're captured.

“But there're two upsides to joining God of Death Palace. One, the killers can receive tasks in God of Death Palace, and two, they can leave the organization any time they want.”

Almost everyone on 'Heavenly King Assassin Rank' came from the three major assassin organizations, and only a few from other assassin groups made it to the rank.

Compared to the three major assassin groups, those assassin groups only stayed in one large field.

Queen Danling was very worried. Being the target of someone on 'Heavenly King Assassin Rank' would make anyone who wasn't a supreme saint nervous.

“I plan to get back to Thousand Pistil Field and stay in my clan for a while. With my mother from Peony Race, Heavenly Kill Organization will definitely be tamed.”

Queen Danling looked to Zhang Ruochen and said, “Be careful yourself. Death Envoy is controlled by his master's saint soul, which means its master could see the fight in the VIP room. Although you turned into a dragon-race man before, you exposed your space power and Yi Emperor Bone Staff, so he'll definitely be onto you.”

Zhang Ruochen didn't mind it much. “I'm probably already on the list of Heavenly Kill Organization. I don't mind having one more.”

Queen Danling knew that Zhang Ruochen was always very cautious, so there was no need to say more.

“Oh, right. I want to see Ji Fanxin,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Queen Danling stopped looking solemn and smiled. “No wonder you're so ruthless to me. You want to pursue Ji

Fanxin.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “What do you mean by ruthless? Don’t talk nonsense, Queen Danling.”

Queen Danling said, “You forced me to return a favor. How is that not ruthless?”

“I didn’t force you,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Queen Danling stopped joking about him, seeing how boring Zhang Ruochen was. She sighed. “Unfortunately, this is not your time. Fanxin just went to Truth Godly Palace. She won’t be back for a while.”

Zhang Ruochen frowned.

Queen Danling said, “I need to tell you, there’re countless men pursuing Fanxin, including lots of descendants of Gods. If you manage to get her, you’ll make yourself lots of enemies. Why don’t you just pursue me? It easier, as I’ve made a good impression on you!”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head, and his mind was already out of the space. After a while, he asked, “Do you know where I can find the contact points for Earthly Kill Organization and God of Death Palace?”

“What do you want?” Queen Danling tensed.

Zhang Ruochen said, “I have some saint stones, and I don’t know how to spend them, so probably some lives.”

After fifteen minutes, Zhang Ruochen turned into a refined person, walking out of Hundred Flower Palace.

“Can’t believe it’s such a handful to give tasks to Earthly Kill Organization and God of Death Palace. Looks like I have to wait for the news from Hundred Flower Palace.”

Zhang Ruochen stopped in front of Hundred Flower Palace for a while, and then, he left Time Godly Palace and headed to the saint shop, trying to buy some time-type valuables.

Earthly Kill Organization and God of Death Palace didn’t have a fixed contact point in Truth Heavenly Domain, and it would

only set up one once in a while, and he needed someone to lead him there.

Truth Heavenly Domain, southeast of Void Sacred Domain, in a seven-color dojo. A handsome man with two pairs of white wings was suddenly muffled and fell onto the ground.

“What happened, brother Liancheng?”

Shang Ziyan, who was sitting across from the handsome man, was shocked. He walked toward Liancheng Baili and picked him up.

Whoosh!

Liancheng Baili glowed with white saint light, preventing Shang Ziyan from getting close.

Liancheng Baili stood up in the white, looking pale with blood on his lips, and he said, “Something happened during the assassination. My third Death Envoy blew up his saint source and lower abdomen, and the trace of saint soul on him was also annihilated.”

Shang Ziyan sat back to where he was before and said, “How did that happen? The third Death Envoy, together with three puppet killers and Trifoot Carnivorous Insects, should have been enough to kill Queen Danling.”

Liancheng Baili looked fierce and said, “Someone helped her and took my puppet killers and Trifoot Carnivorous Insects.”

“Who is that? Based on my information, Ji Fanxin went to Truth Godly Palace and Fairy Extreme King went back to Thousand Pistil Field. There shouldn't be anyone who could ward off Trifoot Carnivorous Insects.” Shang Ziyan looked confused.

Liancheng Baili said, “It's a man from the dragon race. He has a blue cauldron, which even Trifoot Carnivorous Insects can't damage. And he can perform space power. It seems he's very proficient in space way.”

Shang Ziyan suddenly recalled something and said, “Can you form that battle into a clip and show it to me.”

Liancheng Baili nodded at Shang Ziyan.

Soon, a light ball flew out of Liancheng Baili's forehead and floated in front of Shang Ziyan.

Shang Ziyan grabbed the light ball, and images flooded his mind.

Liancheng Baili snorted. "I've killed many great beings from the dragon race, but this was the first time I met someone so difficult to deal with. Besides, his cultivation isn't that high."

Shang Ziyan laughed. "Brother Liancheng, guess who you just met?"

"Who? Someone famous from the dragon race, but he looks nothing like any of the talented dragon kings I know."

Shang Ziyan smiled. "Because he isn't a dragon king from the dragon race, but Zhang Ruochen, the Time and Space Descendant I mentioned to you."

"Zhang Ruochen... It's likely."

Liancheng Baili smiled. "I heard that I can get thirty million saint stones if I kill Zhang Ruochen, which can cover my losses."

Shang Ziyan watched the clip, so he knew that Death Envoy blew up its saint source, trying to take Zhang Ruochen and Queen Danling down.

However, was Zhang Ruochen really dead?

Liancheng Baili looked a bit scornful. He said, "Do you really think Zhang Ruochen could survive the explosion of a fourth-step saint king with that distance?"

"Zhang Ruochen is a special person. It might not be easy to kill him." Shang Ziyan was very cautious, and he couldn't underestimate Zhang Ruochen, even though he was still weak.

Liancheng Baili snorted. "I hope he's still alive. Dying like that is too easy for him!"

...

Zhang Ruochen gained a lot in Time Godly Palace this time. He purchased lots of White Time Saint Jades, five bottles of

water from Time Long River, and three Time and Space Agates, which cost him thirty million saint stones in total.

Zhang Ruochen's mind power had reached level fifty-five, and his mind power might reach level fifty-six after taking Six Desires Ancient Pill, after which he could establish a stronger time formation.

He bought White Time Saint Jades to set up a stronger time formation, and he bought five bottles of Time Long River and Time and Space Agates to draw time marks.

He could use time marks to slash his enemies' life expectancy, making them weak, or even dead.

Zhang Ruochen used a time mark to fight Qiong Lin in the Yin and Yang Palace, which was a huge trouble to that leader of Black Demon Field. Perhaps Qiong Ling would go mad if he found out he'd lost hundreds of years to live.

Zhang Ruochen didn't go back to the Moon Goddess's dojo. Instead, he headed to the thousand people pit under Heavenly Capital Mountain.

The pit was covered by mud, turning into a hill. That evil saint weapon under the pit had been taken away.

"It must be Ji Fanxin, but what was Xie Cheng using those women's corpses to make?"

Zhang Ruochen stopped thinking and left that place.

Zhang Ruochen met with Mu Lingxi first and gave her a Time and Space Agate.

And then, he asked Blackie to go to the underground of the Bliss Dungeon, and took out the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron holding the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects.

Chapter 1631 - Level Fifty-Six

Chapter 1631: Level Fifty-Six

Blackie's huge eyes stared at the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron and it asked, "What, you want to give it to me?"

Zhang Ruochen glared at him and said, "There's something I want to study with you."

"What?"

Curious, Blackie flapped its wings and flew onto the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron. It stuck in its big head and looked inside the cauldron.

The next moment, Blackie yelped and quickly retracted its head. Its fat body shook violently and lost balance, falling heavily from the cauldron.

"Zhang Ruochen, where did you get so many Trifoot Carnivorous Insects?" Blackie asked, frightened. "You didn't even warn me. Did you want to kill me?"

"So you know what they are," Zhang Ruochen said.

"Of course."

Blackie climbed up from the ground. Feeling embarrassed, it stomped on the ground that it had fallen onto before saying, "Trifoot Carnivorous Insects are a legendary and ancient insect. According to legends, they were born from the badlands of the Hell World. These insects are known for gnawing through a Supreme Saint's Immortal Saint Body, but I know that they can evolve to the extreme and even eat a god's corpse."

Zhang Ruochen walked to the side of the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron and whacked the side. A Trifoot Carnivorous Insect was forced out and landed on the ground.

The grain-sized black insect had three sharp legs and two teeth.

“Zhang Ruochen, are you crazy? Why did you free it?”

Blackie shrunk to the size of a fist and flew into a distant corner.

Poof, poof!

The Trifoot Carnivorous Insect was clearly furious. Its eyes turned red and it flew toward Zhang Ruochen as a dark streak of light.

Sword light flashed and the Abyss Ancient Sword was out.

Plop!

The blade hit the Trifoot Carnivorous Insect and sent it flying into the stone wall.

Sticky black liquid leaked from the insect, eating away at the stone wall. The wall sizzled and a basin-sized crater appeared.

The Trifoot Carnivorous Insect fell to the ground, hissing softly.

Zhang Ruochen studied that Trifoot Carnivorous Insect and instantly gasped. The Abyss Ancient Sword could easily cut a Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon, but it only left a shallow cut on the Trifoot Carnivorous Insect’s abdomen.

In fact, the cut was quickly healing.

“Its defensive abilities are so scary.”

Zhang Ruochen lifted the Trifoot Carnivorous Insect back into the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron with the sword tip.

Blackie flew back and smirked. “The Abyss Ancient Sword is sharp, but it’s not easy to cut through a Supreme Saint’s Immortal Saint Body, right? But the Trifoot Carnivorous Insect can gnaw through it, so you can imagine how strong they are.”

“Do you know how to control them?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Blackie instantly had a proud expression. “How can I not? Trifoot Carnivorous Insects are powerful, but they have low

intelligence. I have a Thousand Insect Record. It includes how to control all sorts of insects, taming and using them.”

Two beams of light shot out of Blackie’s eyes and into Zhang Ruochen’s.

A moment later, the content of the Thousand Insect Record appeared in Zhang Ruochen’s mind.

He closed his eyes and read the book in his mind. He had to lament how many strange insects the universe had.

It wasn’t only one thousand. There were more than 100,000 kinds.

The Thousand Insect Record had an explanation about the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects, including how to raise and control them.

“So, I must carve my own spiritual brand inside their bodies to control them with my Spiritual Power.”

The first step was to refine the spiritual brand that the Assassin Heavenly King left in them.

Zhang Ruochen formed a three-foot-wide fireball with Divine Fire Jingmie. It flew under the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron and started burning.

It burned for two days and three nights.

After checking, the spiritual brands inside more than 270 of the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects in the cauldron were all refined.

Blackie’s eyes grew greedy. It got close to Zhang Ruochen and chuckled. “It’s very annoying and time-consuming to carve a spiritual brand on the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects. How about you have me do this annoying task?”

“You want to raise these Trifoot Carnivorous Insects?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Your time is precious, but I’m so bored...”

“Okay, I’ll give them to you.”

Zhang Ruochen had to cultivate Spiritual Power, as well as the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm, Luo Water Fist Technique, Sword Eight, Time Sword Technique, Way of Space, and Way of Truth, while also studying the Rules of Saintly Way. He indeed had no time to raise the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects too.

Actually, he'd already decided to hand them to Blackie so he could deal with them.

Blackie was overjoyed, but he instantly had a hesitant expression again. "It's easy to raise them, but what do I feed them? What do I use? Hehe, Zhang Ruochen, how about you give me a divine bone? I'll use it to create an insect hive."

Zhang Ruochen did have some divine bones, so he chose a bigger one and tossed it at Blackie.

He stopped caring about this. Zhang Ruochen entered the time and space crystal and took out a Six Desires Ancient Pill. He placed it before him.

The pill was placed inside a golden lotus. It looked like a lotus seed that had a fresh fragrance.

Poof!

Rings of ripples appeared on the pill. Six tiny golden people projected out. Like six golden Arhats, they sat in a circle.

That was the pill spirit of the Six Desires Ancient Pill.

The biggest difference between an earth and heaven divine pill was that it had a pill spirit. It had a mind and could attack strongly by itself.

As soon as the six Arhats appeared, they roared at the same time. Six Spiritual Power attacks became one, resonating with each other, and rushed at Zhang Ruochen.

If he wasn't at Level 55 yet, he might be a bit afraid. But now, he didn't care about their attack at all.

"Go back."

With a wave of his sleeve, he sent strong Spiritual Power flying out.

Boom!

The attack by the six Arhats was forced back by Zhang Ruochen's Spiritual Power.

They even let out pained cries and hid back in the pill.

Zhang Ruochen picked up the Six Desires Ancient Pill and swallowed it, using Divine Fire Jingmie to refine it.

The pill was made after collecting humans' seven emotions and six desires.

As he kept refining and absorbing it, the strong power of the six desires transformed into spiritual thoughts. They kept tempering Zhang Ruochen's own spirit while enriching it.

Half a month later

Zhang Ruochen had refined around 40 to 50% of the first Six Desires Ancient Pill. His Spiritual Power improved greatly. It reached the peak of Level 55 and was at the bottleneck.

It was evident how strong the Six Desires Ancient Pill was.

Now, Zhang Ruochen took out the second Six Desires Ancient Pill and swallowed it.

When the second pill's power exploded completely, Zhang Ruochen put his all into breaking through the bottleneck.

This time was extremely difficult. Strong pill power darted chaotically around him and all sorts of thoughts attacked his saint heart. It caused his heartbeat to keep getting faster.

Three times faster, four times, five...

Soon, his heartbeat was ten times faster than usual.

At the same time, extreme pain flared in his head. It was like his head was about to get crushed by an invisible force. His consciousness was blurring.

The power of the two Six Desires Ancient Pills were bursting out inside him without stop.

I must stay awake, or else the power of the six desires will lose control and crush my spirit. My mind will break apart.

Zhang Ruochen bit on his tongue and dug his nails into his palm. He used the pain to stimulate himself and try to stay clear-headed.

His Spiritual Power could only change by enduring the painful tempering process.

Work hard. He must persist.

The process was extremely painful. All of Zhang Ruochen's muscles and meridians were pulled taut and his heartbeat was even 30 times faster than usual. His saint heart was about to break out of his body and fly out at any time.

This lasted for one day and night. Then a boom sounded in Zhang Ruochen's heart.

Boom!

Breaking past the last bottleneck, his Spiritual Power reached Level 56.

A small whirlpool formed in his heart. It absorbed the power of the Six Desires Ancient Pill. In the span of a breath, more than half of the mighty medicinal power inside him was absorbed.

The whirlpool's speed slowed down gradually.

The pain disappeared as the Six Desires Ancient Pill was absorbed. It was replaced with an unprecedented comfort. He felt very pleasant.

He made a breakthrough in Spiritual Power, but Zhang Ruochen kept his eyes closed. He sat cross-legged on the ground and continued to refine the remaining Six Desires Ancient Pill power.

He spent a few more days before completely absorbing the power of the two Six Desires Ancient Pills.

Now, his saint heart was completely calm. His heartbeat returned to normal while his Spiritual Power was now in the middle of Level 56.

“Spiritual Power split into two.”

Whoosh!

Two shadows flew out of Zhang Ruochen, forming two Spiritual Power copies that were identical to him.

Each copy had Level 55 Spiritual Power.

“Two into four.”

A clone split from the two copies. Instantly, there were four copies and each one had Level 54 Spiritual Power.

“Four into eight.”

“Eight into 16.”

“Sixteen into 32.”

“Thirty-two into 64.”

Sixty-four Spiritual Power copies appeared, filling the time and space crystal. Each one had Level 50 Spiritual Power. It was equal to 64 Spiritual Power Saints.

This was Zhang Ruochen’s current limit. If he continued splitting, he would be unable to control them. The clones would split apart into dense Spiritual Power thoughts.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen still wanted to try.

“Sixty-four into 128,” he uttered.

Boom!

The 64 Spiritual Power clones all exploded into specks of light.

Each speck of light was a Spiritual Power thought.

“As expected, I must reach Level 57 to have 128 Spiritual Power clones.”

He smiled wryly and collected all the Spiritual Power thoughts back into his heart.

Next, he made 64 clones again and released them outside the time and space crystal. They appeared in the Moon Goddess Dojo.

It was as if he suddenly had 64 pairs of ears and eyes.

Sixty-four different information streams converged toward him.

Sixty-four identical Zhang Ruochens suddenly appearing in the dojo frightened many maids in lower realms.

Cultivators whose Spiritual Power hadn't reached Level 50 yet couldn't tell that the clones were fake, so they thought that it really was Zhang Ruochen.

Chapter 1632 - Priest Wooden Scepter

Chapter 1632: Priest Wooden Scepter

Su Jing was sitting in a palace, receiving a saint king coming from Guanghai Field.

He moved his mind and noticed something strange in the Moon Goddess's dojo. He smiled, "It seems our priest's mind power has reached level fifty-six. You came here at the right time, Brother Wu Han."

The sixty-four mind power dividing selves of Zhang Ruochen didn't leave the Moon Goddess's dojo. Heavenly Saint Market wasn't like other places, as there were too many great beings with great mind power who could see his mind power dividing selves.

If someone destroyed one of his mind power dividing selves, Zhang Ruochen's mind power would tumble.

Mind power dividing selves were largely helpful as they could do a lot of things for the original body, however, he couldn't use them at any time.

It took Zhang Ruochen some time to take back all the sixty-four mind power dividing selves, and he gathered back his mind power.

"It seems Uncle Jing is asking me for something important."

And one of his mind power dividing selves sent that message to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen put away the third Six Desires Ancient Pill and walked out of the inner space of the Time and Space Crystal, walking toward the Weapon-Refining Pavilion that looked like a palace.

Su Jing and Mu Lingxi were already sitting inside.

Aside from them, there was a slender old man in hemp clothes.

Although the slender old man looked feeble, Zhang Ruochen could feel the enormous power in that person's body with his mind power. It was as if there was an ancient ocean inside his body, and any wave could be catastrophic.

Mu Lingxin blinked at Zhang Ruochen and transmitted her voice to him. "Be careful. That old man is a great being from Wu's family. He might be here to do us harm."

Zhang Ruochen smiled at Mu Lingxi and sat beside her.

The old man in hemp clothes looked solemn after Zhang Ruochen walked into the palace and said, "You're indeed talented, priest, but you need to show some respect for the elders."

Zhang Ruochen was a bit dumbfounded. "Where did that come from?"

"Both King Jing and I are top-tier saint kings from Guanghan Field who've been alive for more than a thousand years. We are your elders. All you did after you came in was share eye contact with the Goddess. Do you even respect us? I've heard in Shatuo Heavenly Domain that you're young and proud. That reputation is indeed true," said the elder in hemp clothes.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't pissed at all. Instead, he found it amusing and said, "Is that disrespecting elders? Haha."

"What are you laughing at?"

The elder in hemp clothes looked pissed.

Zhang Ruochen argued back, "I'm laughing at the fact that you are making trouble out of nowhere. First of all, we're both saint kings. You can be crowned as a king, then I can as well. You're not that much nobler than me.

"If you were really worth respecting, I would definitely do that since you're older than me.

"However, all you did was play the age card, and you scolded me the second I arrived. Do you really think I'm a junior from your family?"

The eyes of the elder in hemp clothes popped, and cold forces gushed out.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Besides, I’m the Moon Goddess’s priest, so I probably have a higher status in Guanghan Field than you. Shouldn’t you bow to me and call me Lord Priest?”

“How dare you... How dare you disrespect me like this?”

The elder in hemp clothes was furious, and his saint might gushed out, making a rumbling sound in the palace.

Su Jing immediately showed up between the two of them and said, “Both of you are saint kings from Guanghan Field. If you have conflicts because of a minor issue like this, you will be a joke.”

“Minor issue?”

The elder in hemp clothes growled, “Do you think Zhang Ruochen’s killing Wu Hao, my family’s greatest talent, is a minor issue?”

“Wu Hao was the heir of Guanghan Field. Even supreme saints couldn’t kill him like that, yet Zhang Ruochen killed him with that demonic woman from Kunlun’s Field.

“Even if Wu Hao had committed a crime, it should be up to our family to deal with him. Besides, we still don’t know whether he actually did something wrong or not.

“Perhaps someone was jealous of his status as an heir and killed him.”

It was indeed because of Wu Hao.

Zhang Ruochen sighed.

Even Su Jing snorted this time. “Brother Wu Hao, what do you mean? I was the one who reported this to Supreme Saint Nine Spirits, Emperor Jimie and Wu Zu. How could that be false? Are you suspecting me also?”

The elder in hemp clothes took a look at Su Jing, snorted and sat back in his chair.

Su Jing didn’t want any internal conflict, so he immediately calmed himself down and transmitted his voice to Zhang Ruochen. “King Wu Han is Wu Hao’s grandpa’s brother, so he was very close with Wu Hao. Wu Hao is the best talent from

the Wu family in a thousand years, and the entire Wu family valued him a lot, so King Wu Hao is kind of resentful, as Wu Hao died because of you.

“Actually, King Wu Han is a hero who hates the evil guts. If he’d found out Wu Hao conspired with Shang Ziyan against us, he might’ve killed Wu Hao himself.

“Zhang Ruochen, as a young person, please be a bit more understanding of King Wu Han. He’ll know right from wrong when he calms down.”

Zhang Ruochen forced a smile and transmitted his voice back. “Now that you’ve said so, Uncle Jing, I’ll be nice to him for your sake. However, if King Wu Han keeps being so rude and difficult on purpose, I’ll definitely fight back.”

Su Jing nodded contently, laughed, and said, “You were both kind of emotional just now. Priest, Goddess, let me introduce you. This is King Wu Han, one of the top-tier great beings under supreme saints, and he’ll live in Truth Godly Domain with me to guard Jingxiang Cliff Dojo and the Moon Goddess’s dojo.”

Su Jing then said, “King Wu Han came here to bear a gift from the Moon Goddess to the priest.”

King Wu Han was still solemn, and he took out a bent wooden scepter from his storage bag.

He didn’t give it to Zhang Ruochen. Instead, he handed it to Su Jing.

Zhang Ruochen was looking forward to the valuable gift given by the Moon Goddess, and he stared at that wooden scepter.

Su Jing held the wooden scepter, looking envious, and said, “This is a branch of Tree God, and the Moon Goddess made the wooden scepter using that branch. Zhang Ruochen, you’re the real priest of the Moon Goddess from now on.

“In Heaven World, only supreme saints are qualified to be a God’s priest, and you’re the only exception. Come thank the Moon Goddess.”

Zhang Ruochen stood up and bowed at the statue of the Moon Goddess outside the palace and grabbed the Priest Wooden Scepter.

Unlike what Zhang Ruochen'd expected, the Priest Wooden Scepter didn't feel different from a branch of an ordinary tree.

Zhang Ruochen infused his saint Qi into the Priest Wooden Scepter, yet nothing happened.

“Is this... The supposedly immensely powerful Priest Wooden Scepter?”

Zhang Ruochen was a bit disappointed.

Su Jing smiled. “Gods can't interfere with the issues in Truth Heavenly Domain, so you can't wield the Priest Wooden Scepter's power here, however, if you're attacked by a supreme saint in Truth Heavenly Domain, the supreme saint's power will activate the Priest Wooden Scepter, giving you a part of the Moon Goddess's godly power.”

Zhang Ruochen looked pleased. “How strong is that godly power?”

“Enough for you to survive the attacks of a supreme saint,” said Su Jing.

Zhang Ruochen asked again, “What if I leave Truth Heavenly Domain? How powerful can the Priest Wooden Scepter be?”

Su Jing thought for a bit, shook his head and said, “Gods are the ones who decide how much power their priests can borrow. However, even the priests who Gods trust the most can only borrow ten percent of their godly power, nothing more.”

Even if he could only borrow one one-thousandth of the Moon Goddess's godly power, he could easily crush all the creatures under supreme saints.

This Priest Wooden Scepter was indeed invaluable.

“I've been helping her the whole time. She finally got generous once.” Zhang Ruochen held the Priest Wooden Scepter in his hand like a treasure.

King Wu Han snorted. “Even if you are the priest, you can’t borrow her godly power at any time. If you do, the Moon Goddess will definitely take back that Priest Wooden Scepter and rescind your status.”

“Of course, I know. Besides, I can’t even use this Priest Wooden Scepter in Truth Heavenly Domain,” Zhang Ruochen said. But then, he felt a great sense of danger.

“Why did the Moon Goddess give me the Priest Wooden Scepter now? Has what I did in Truth Heavenly Domain drawn attention from some supreme saints? Is a supreme saint coming to kill me?”

Zhang Ruochen immediately stopped being happy, and his hands and feet went cold.

Su Jing smiled and said, “Actually, there’re also many ways to use the Priest Wooden Scepter. For example, you can communicate with the Moon Goddess’s godly mind using the wooden scepter if you run into something major, which is something lots of supreme saints in Guanghan Field want to achieve.”

Zhang Ruochen was the hotshot person to the Moon Goddess, and when he held the Priest Wooden Scepter, it would be like the Moon Goddess arriving herself. All the creatures from Guanghan Field needed to greet him, except supreme saints.

However, as the priest of the Moon Goddess, he had the same status as the supreme saints from Guanghan Field.

Zhang Ruochen wasn’t a petty person, so he didn’t use the Priest Wooded Scepter to suppress King Wu Han, saving him some face.

King Wu Han tried not to look at Zhang Ruochen and also stopped being so dominant.

He took out a white jade ancient mirror and handed it to Mu Lingxi. “Goddess, this is the Comprehension Mirror the Moon Goddess asked me to bring you.

“The Moon Goddess can’t teach you herself, as you’re in Truth Heavenly Domain, but Comprehension Mirror has

amazing godly power. It can not only teach you, but also explain some of the questions you have.”

“Thank you, King Wu Han.” Mu Lingxi took the Comprehension Mirror.

Zhang Ruochen didn't go back to the Time and Space Crystal after leaving the palace. Instead, he divided his mind power into two parts, one of which guarded the original body.

The other part of his mind power formed a mind power dividing self with mind power at level fifty-five, following Su Jing to visit the monks who sent him invitations. Zhang Ruochen certainly wanted to make some friends if he could, and his mind power dividing self was enough to build time and space formations for their dojos.

As for Zhang Ruochen's original body, he followed Mu Lingxi to Blackie to see how it was controlling the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects.

Zhang Ruochen had a plan, which needed the power of the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects to fulfill.

Chapter 1633 - Cultivation Improves Again

Chapter 1633: Cultivation Improves Again

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

After receiving the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects, Blackie became obsessed. He locked himself into a hidden room in the Underground Euphoria Palace and set up a formation to stop others from entering.

Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi were stopped outside and unable to see it.

“Blackie won’t get eaten by the Trifoot Carnivorous Insects, right?” Mu Lingxi was a bit worried.

“Probably not.” Zhang Ruochen chuckled. “If it was eaten, then the insects would eat through the formation too.”

After that, Mu Lingxi began to study the conception that she’d just received.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Time and Space Secret Guide and started studying the time print on it.

If he could set up a more advanced time formation, then he could help Mu Lingxi and the other Guanghan Field cultivators improve even faster.

Both the Time and Space Agate that he’d given Mu Lingxi and the low level time formation could only halve the speed of time.

Now that his Spiritual Power had improved, Zhang Ruochen prepared to create a formation with a time ratio of 3:1.

He read the Time and Space Secret Guide while practicing and drawing.

When Su Jing and his Spiritual Power clone returned to the Moon Goddess Dojo, Zhang Ruochen had practiced well enough. He could draw a more advanced time print with ease.

He combined with his clone so his Spiritual Power reached the top state. Then, holding the Time and Space Secret Guide, he went to the tall and white jade tablet.

The tablet contained the Way of Truth image that the Moon Goddess had left behind—Stars Orbiting Moon Image.

Zhang Ruochen first carved some formation prints on the ground. Then he sat in the center of the prints. He took out a piece of white time jade and started drawing attentively.

An ivory moon hung in the sky.

Ivory moonlight bathed the jade tablet, making it even more lustrous.

In the distance, Su Jing and King Wu Han stood side by side, gazing in the direction of the jade tablet.

King Wu Han's eyes narrowed. "What's that guy doing?" he asked.

Chuckling, Su Jing said, "He's probably carving time prints for a time formation. Brother Wu Han, you should know that Zhang Ruochen's time formations are to help the Guanghan Field cultivators. It's not for himself."

"It's because of the time formation that the kids have double the time to cultivate in the Truth Heavenly Domain."

King Wu Han didn't feel positively toward Zhang Ruochen. He just huffed, thinking that he was trying to win people over.

"Earlier, Zhang Ruochen's clone and I went to see Qing Mingzi in Virtual Spirit Field," Su Jing said. "We helped establish a space and time formation in a dojo of Virtual Spirit Field. Brother Wu Han, you should understand the significance, right?"

Something flashed past King Wu Han's ancient and still eyes. "Qing Mingzi doesn't have a low status in Virtual Spirit Field," he said meaningfully.

"Now, there are many people like Qing Mingzi who voluntarily ask Zhang Ruochen for help," Su Jing said. "They want to befriend him."

King Wu Han fell silent as if thinking about something.

An entire night passed and Zhang Ruochen finally completed the time formation, so he left. As he left, one could see that he'd used up a lot of Spiritual Power. He seemed very exhausted.

'Come, let's go see.'

Su Jing and King Wu Han charged into the time formation. They stayed there for a moment before rushing out again.

After calculating, both had shocked expressions.

"The time ratio is 3:1," King Wu Han uttered.

Su Jing raised his head at the rising sun on the horizon. "With three times the amount of time," he said, smiling, "the juniors will definitely improve quickly. Now, even an old man like me feels energetic and lively. Guanghan Field's condition is improving bit by bit."

Beside him, King Wu Han stayed silent. He left it alone.

After a short rest, Zhang Ruochen went to the underground space of the Underground Euphoria Palace. He set up a time formation at the side of the Yin and Yang Pools.

The Yin Pool was where Mu Lingxi cultivated the Power of Extreme Yin Pluto Ice.

The Yang Pool was where Zhang Ruochen prepared to cultivate the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm.

With the time formation, they would have triple the time.

Zhang Ruochen walked timidly into the Yang Pool. Blazing heat instantly wrapped around his legs.

Bounding Yang Qi rushed into him through his pores. It went past his abdomen all the way to his head.

The Yang Pool has a great amount of Yang Qi. It's even hotter than lava. Not only is it a great place to cultivate the 11th palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm, I can also use it to temper my physical body. Zhang Ruochen grew excited.

He took out a Blood Life Pill from the spatial ring and swallowed it.

The Blood Life Pill was an upper-class pill. One cost hundreds of thousands of saint stones. It was a precious treasure for a Saint King.

More importantly, the pill could temper a cultivator's body and improve physical strength.

In the next two months, Zhang Ruochen's Spiritual Power clone went out with Su Jing every day to meet with cultivators of other worlds and set up time and space formations in their dojos.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen would also receive a certain payment.

Zhang Ruochen's true self stayed to cultivate in the Moon Goddess Dojo.

He split his time into four. One-fourth of the time, he stayed in the Yang Pool to temper his body and refine the Blood Life Pill.

One-fourth of the time, he practiced the tenth fist of the Water Luo Fist Technique and 11th palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm on the bank of the Yang Pool.

One-fourth of the time, he cultivated Sword Eight.

The remaining one-fourth was spent cultivating the Rules of Saintly Way with the rules emperor weapon. Or, he would go to the jade tablet and study the Moon Goddess's Way of Truth image.

As for the third Six Desires Ancient Pill, Zhang Ruochen had already refined it all. His Spiritual Power had improved, but it hadn't reached the later stage of Level 56 yet.

After reaching Level 56, it was extremely difficult to continue improving.

This was why Spiritual Power Supreme Saints were so rare.

Only two months had passed in the outside world, but with the help of the time formation and time and space crystal, it was as if Zhang Ruochen had cultivated for half a year.

During this time, he'd improved greatly.

He'd refined seven Blood Life Pills. Now, he could fight with a third step Saint King with just his physical power.

He'd completed the tenth fist of the Luo Water Fist Technique. This was his first mid-level saint spell.

After continually cultivating and practicing the 11th palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm, he'd already reached the level of perfection. He had a firm foundation and was only a step away from completion.

He reached the sixth level of Sword Eight. He was only a bit away from completion. If he cultivated for one or two more months, Zhang Ruochen was sure he could create the Sword Way Xuangang and become a top swordsman.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen now comprehended 247 Rules of Truth.

There were more than 3,600 Rules of Saintly Way inside him now. He wasn't far from the second step Saint King Realm.

It's also worth mentioning that Mu Lingxi's cultivation skyrocketed during this time too. She reached the first step Saint King Realm.

Since Zhang Ruochen had cultivated a mid-level saint spell and had accomplishments in the Way of Truth, Zhang Ruochen had no weaknesses or disadvantages. Naturally, he prepared to pass the Ocean of Truth and gain more Mysteries of Truth.

Mu Lingxi went with Zhang Ruochen. They left the Moon Goddess Dojo through the space transfer formation.

At the pier, they sat in a cloud ship and went straight to the Truth Godly Palace.

Zhang Ruochen was now very famous in the Truth Heavenly Domain. In order to avoid unnecessary trouble, he used the Traceless 36 Changes to transform into a quiet scholar.

Mu Lingxi wore a veil to cover her moving beauty.

However, because she had the heritage of the Ice and Fire Phoenix and her Ice Phoenix Ancient Saint Body had completely awoken, the spiritual aura that she emanated was like a phoenix fairy. She still attracted many eyes.

Her Saint King cultivation made her seem untouchable too. The more that was so, the more attractive she was toward male cultivators.

On the cloud ship, a dozen men from different races kept looking over at Mu Lingxi. They seemed to be guessing her identity while wanting to come flirt with her.

Mu Lingxi stood side by side with Zhang Ruochen. “There are very few Saint Kings in the Truth Heavenly Domain,” she said in confusion. “Is it harder to comprehend Rules of Truth after reaching the Saint King Realm?”

Smiling, Zhang Ruochen was about to answer her.

Just then, a young man’s voice sounded behind them.

“Usually, it’s even easier to comprehend Rules of Truth after reaching the Saint King Realm.

“There are so few Saint Kings in the Truth Heavenly Domain because the higher your cultivation, the less the Rules of Truth help you.

“For example, if a Saint studies the first image on the first level of the Truth Godly Domain and cultivates nine Rules of Truth, then their spells would double in power.

“After studying the second image and cultivating 81 Rules of Truth, their spells would triple.

“But if a Saint King studied the first image, it wouldn’t affect their saint spells at all. They can only double the power of their spells after studying a second image.

“Every spot can only cultivate in the Truth Godly Palace for one month. Even a Saint King has difficulty comprehending the first image, let alone a second one?”

“That’s why there are so few Saint Kings in the Truth Heavenly Domain.

“Of course, the Way of Truth isn’t only beneficial for magnifying a saint spell. It has endless benefits for a cultivator. But because the Truth Godly Domain has limited spots and cultivation time, the various worlds only give spots to talented Saints.”

Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi turned around at the same time. They saw a handsome young man standing before them.

This man was tall, thin, and abnormally handsome. He wasn’t human. He had two pairs of white wings on his back and his skin shimmered. He was a Saint King.

He was probably a second step Saint King.

This was the one who’d spoken earlier.

Seeing Mu Lingxi looking at him, the handsome man smiled gentlemanly-like and introduced himself. “I am Lan Sibai from the Heaven Field. Phoenix fairy, which world are you from?”

When he said, “Heaven Field,” Lan Sibai had a proud expression as if he was better than everyone else.

This was genuine pride.

Chapter 1634 - Lan Sibai's Invitation

Chapter 1634: Lan Sibai's Invitation

Someone beside screamed, "The ruling field of the western world, Heaven Field."

"He's from Heaven Field. I didn't even see it."

"Didn't you see the two pairs of white wings on his back? Only the Angel Race, the largest race in Heaven Field, has those angel wings."

...

Hearing people's exclamations and seeing the monk's admiration, Lan Sibai smiled smugly.

As Lan Sibai looked at that Phoenix Heavenly Girl, he saw something strange in her eyes, and she was talking to the human man beside her.

Lan Sibai was immediately upset.

He was a four-wing angel from Heaven Field, coming from nobility. Wasn't he much more attractive than a human man who was only a half-step saint king?

After a while, Mu Lingxi looked to Lan Sibai and smiled.

"You've understood me, sir. I'm not some Phoenix Heavenly Girl. Thank you for answering my question just now."

Lan Sibai was very attracted to Mu Lingxi's smiling eyes. He immediately looked refined again and smiled. "Can you tell me your name, girl?"

Mu Lingxi looked to Zhang Ruochen and said, "Up to my husband."

Everyone around them was dazed, and then they sighed as if she had married down.

Lan Sibai wouldn't believe that a beautiful phoenix who was a saint king would ever be attracted to a human half-step saint king. He thought Mu Lingxi was using that human man as a shield.

"I'm the son of an emperor from Heaven Field. Can't believe that even I'm not good enough for her. What a proud phoenix."

Lan Sibai had always gotten what he wanted when he was growing up.

Especially with regard to the monks from the weak fields, if he liked the treasures they had, they would definitely give them to him. Even if he wanted someone's wife, he could get her as well.

This was the suppression and exploitation of the monks enacted from strong fields onto those from the weaker ones.

Lan Sibai then looked to Zhang Ruochen and said, "Can I talk to you somewhere else?"

Zhang Ruochen said, "Of course."

They walked to the end of the Cloud Boat.

Lan Sibai suddenly looked solemn and released the saint might of a second-step saint king. He said, "Which field do you come from?"

An ordinary half-step saint king would've been terrified by his saint might and follow every word he said.

However, Zhang Ruochen said calmly, "A large field ranked low. Perhaps you've never heard of it before. No need to mention it."

Lan Sibai was kind of disappointed by how calm Zhang Ruochen was. He then asked, "Do you know Heaven Field?"

"Of course I do. The ruling field of the western universe."

Lan Sibai said arrogantly, "I'm the third son of Gu Po, Six-Wing Emperor. You should've heard of Shang Ziyang, the leader of this generation of Merits Godly Palace, right? I'm his cousin."

Zhang Ruochen finally looked surprised.

Seeing his facial expressions, Lan Sibai nodded contentedly and thought, Seems like I have to tell him my identity to make him realize who he's dealing with. It's time to alert him. He's a half-step saint king after all. He should know what to do.

Lan Sibai put his hand on Zhang Ruochen's shoulder and whispered, "Tell me, where does that beautiful Ice Phoenix come from? Are you her servant?"

Zhang Ruochen took a look at the hand on his shoulder and said, "She told you already. I'm her husband."

What a disrespectful fool. I have to teach him a lesson now, Lan Sibai thought, and his hand on Zhang Ruochen's shoulder became heavier and heavier, making dim cracking sounds.

Lan Sibai wanted to force Zhang Ruochen to kneel on the ground.

However, no matter how much strength he exerted, Zhang Ruochen just stood there, looking at him with a smile.

Meanwhile, Zhang Ruochen immediately moved his fingers, forming a time mark.

Whoosh!

He wielded the time mark against Lan Sibai without him noticing it.

Suddenly, Lan Sibai, who was trying to suppress Zhang Ruochen, felt feeble. His body shook as he retracted his arm, taking three steps back.

Lan Sibai felt weak on his legs as his head spun.

Was it because my cultivation surged too quickly, and there're some unknown problems due to that?

Lan Sibai was scared. He didn't have the capacity to trouble Zhang Ruochen anymore. He immediately sat down, mobilized his techniques, and adjusted himself.

Zhang Ruochen was able to take away one hundred years of life from his enemy using a time mark.

It would be strange if Lan Sibai didn't feel weak after aging one hundred years suddenly.

Mu Lingxi asked, seeing Zhang Ruochen walk back, "What happened?"

Zhang Ruochen smiled. "You happened. I thought I could be low-key after changing my looks and suppressing my cultivation, yet there'll always be trouble if I have a beautiful woman by my side."

"Are you saying you regret becoming my partner?"

Mu Lingxi pretended to look aggrieved.

Zhang Ruochen knew that she was pretending to be sad, but he still smiled. "As long as that woman is you, I don't mind any trouble."

The Cloud Boat was extremely fast. After a short while, they could see that splendid Truth Godly Palace on the horizon.

After an hour, the Cloud Boat stopped at a port.

Lan Sibai, who was sitting on the floor, stood up and looked vigorous again. That weakness in his body was gone.

However, he looked very confused as he still couldn't figure out where it came from.

There was a man wearing a Kylin Blue Cloud Cape standing at the port. Every monk who walked down from the Cloud Boat greeted that man, surprised.

Wearing a Kylin Blue Cloud Cape meant he was a first-class disciple from Truth Godly Palace.

Everyone was confused. Why would a noble first-class disciple show up at the port of the Cloud Boat?

Lu Qian, who was wearing the Kylin Blue Cloud Cape, looked very haughty, and he didn't even look at the monks who were greeting him.

Seeing Lan Sibai walk down from the Cloud Boat, Lu Qian finally smiled and walked up. "Brother Lan Sibai, I've been waiting for you for a long time."

He was waiting for Lan Sibai.

Everyone around realized what happened, which sounded right.

Lan Sibai was a four-wing angel from Heaven Field. He came from a noble family, so it was normal that he was friends with a first-class disciple from Truth Godly Palace.

Which showed his status. Lan Sibai greeted Lu Qian as well, then they started to talk.

Lu Qian said, “Brother Lan Sibai, you came at the wrong time. Truth Godly Palace is full now, so it doesn’t have vacant refining secret chambers and caves. It’ll only open after seven days.”

“Seven days?” Lan Sibai frowned.

Lu Qian smiled and said, “Actually you don’t need to head back. You can live in my refining place for seven days.”

All the monks who just got off the Cloud Boat started to talk.

“Seven days until it reopens? Why weren’t we notified?”

“It took me three days to come from my dojo, even by Cloud Boat, and I paid a lot of saint stones for that.”

“Do we really have to wait outside Truth Godly Palace like that?”

...

Lan Sibai thought for a bit. He then smiled, looked to the crowd and found that beautiful Ice Phoenix and the half-step saint king.

He immediately walked up to them, followed by Lu Qian, who was confused.

Lan Sibai still looked polite. He said, “You should’ve heard that Truth Godly Palace won’t be open until seven days from now. Besides, even if it’s opened, only a small portion of the monks can get in as the first batch. Chances are you might need to wait for a month to get into Truth Godly Palace.”

“Then I’ll head to Truth Godly Palace in a month.”

Mu Ling dragged Zhang Ruochen and prepared to leave.

“Wait.”

Lan Sibai smiled and said, “No need for the trouble, and there’s no need to wait for a month either. My friend is a first-class disciple of Truth Godly Palace, and he’s the first disciple of a godly disciple. If you’re willing to, we can go live in my friend’s refining place first, and with my friend’s connection, we can definitely be in the first group to refine in Truth Godly Palace.”

Lu Qian looked at Mu Lingxi who was wearing a veil, and immediately understood what Lan Sibai was trying to do.

Lu Qian then walked up and smiled. “I’m Lu Qian, a first-class disciple from Truth Godly Palace. You can stay in my refining place for seven days if you want. Hear me out, please.

“You can do more than just crash at my refining place.

“The disciples in Truth Godly Palace and the talents from all the strong top-tier fields often gather and hold some parties and talk about techniques and exchange some refining resources we need. What’s more important is that you can befriend many great talents. I guarantee you it’ll be a hugely beneficial seven days for you.

“If you don’t like parties, you can use my token to go to Zhenyuan Saint Pavilion, one of the ten saint pavilions in Truth Godly Palace to read all the books. Many books collected by Truth Godly Palace can only be found in the godly palace. This is definitely the opportunity of a lifetime!”

Lan Sibai nodded with satisfaction and beamed. Lu Qian was indeed a good friend.

Chapter 1635 - God-Naming Platform Conference

Chapter 1635: God-Naming Platform Conference

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Both Lan Sibai and Lu Qian only saw Mu Lingxi. They ignored Zhang Ruochen on the side.

Actually, he didn't want to return to the Moon Goddess Dojo either. It was only seven days. He could wait.

If he was unable to cultivate in the Truth Godly Palace, he could still go to the Ocean of Truth.

Mu Lingxi obviously knew what Lan Sibai and Lu Qian wanted. She pulled Zhang Ruochen toward the cloud ship, deciding to return to the Moon Goddess Dojo.

But Zhang Ruochen turned his hand and grabbed her. Smiling, he said, "Don't worry. Did you forget that we have a friend in the Truth Godly Palace?"

Then he inscribed a communication rune and sent it out.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen's hand tightly wrapped around Mu Lingxi's wrist, Lan Sibai's eyes flashed coldly.

He hated that they were in the Truth Heavenly Domain. If this was anywhere else, he'd have 100 ways to forcefully "invite" Mu Lingxi to his cultivation residence. And he had 10,000 ways to make this uppity human disappear soundlessly.

Lan Sibai was about to speak and invite Mu Lingxi again when he suddenly felt an intense weak feeling. He paled instantly and his vision darkened. He swayed as if he was a sick mortal.

“Brother Lan Sibai, what’s wrong?”

Lu Qian hurriedly went to support him.

Lan Sibai didn’t speak. He quickly sat down and moved Holy Qi through him. His entire body shone with brilliant white light.

Mu Lingxi grew curious. “What’s wrong?” she whispered.

Zhang Ruochen naturally wouldn’t tell her that he’d secretly sent a time print onto Lan Sibai. He just chuckled, “That four-winged angel seems to be a bit weak.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t use Spiritual Power to say it. He said it out loud.

Lan Sibai, circulating Holy Qi, grew furious.

Because he was too upset, he almost lost control of his Holy Qi. His face alternated between red and white as if he was about to explode.

A moment later, Lan Sibai finally recovered. His eyes flashing, he shot to his feet. He stopped maintaining his pretty image and glared at Zhang Ruochen.

A mere half-step Saint King human dared to mock him in public and say he was weak. He had to give him a lesson.

Whoosh!

The sound of wind broke out.

In the distance, white light flew over quickly. It landed and turned into a man with three heads and six arms.

Seeing him, Lu Qian’s expression changed. He hurried over and bowed with a smile. “Greetings, Senior Brother Feng.”

It was Feng Yan.

They were both first-level disciples, but Lu Qian couldn’t compare to Feng Yan’s background.

Plus, Feng Yan was already a Saint King. With his terrifying talent, he’d probably become a godly disciple soon.

In the Truth Heavenly Domain, their statuses were miles apart.

Lan Sibai frowned and didn't attack Zhang Ruochen immediately. After all, Feng Yan wasn't an ordinary figure. He was 17th on the Saints Merits Record.

Even though Feng Yan had just entered the Saint King Realm, second step Saint King Lan Sibai still might not be his match in a true fight.

Why is Feng Yan here?

Lan Sibai and Lu Qian both grew confused.

Feng Yan just smiled and nodded at Lan Sibai and Lu Qian. Then he studied Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi. Confirming Zhang Ruochen's identity, he finally walked over and put his hands up in greeting. Smiling, he said, "Brother Zhang, it's been half a year since our last meeting. You never came to find me at Kongling Island. I thought you forgot me!"

"I'm afraid I'll have to disturb Brother Feng for a few days in the Truth Heavenly Domain," Zhang Ruochen said.

Feng Yan chuckled. "Disturb? I'll have a chance to have a friendly fight with you. Come, let us go to Kongling Island now."

Soon, a cloud ship came and took Feng Yan, Zhang Ruochen, and Mu Lingxi to Kongling Island.

Lan Sibai and Lu Qian exchanged glances, feeling shocked.

It was understandable if Feng Yan talked to Mu Lingxi.

But how come that half-step Saint King human could be friends with Feng Yan?

Lu Qian felt down. "Brother Lan Siabi," he asked seriously. "Who exactly is that human?"

Lan Sibai's eyes were dark as he shook his head.

Lu Qian cried out inwardly. He'd accidentally offended someone who could befriend Feng Yan. This wasn't good. If he wasn't careful, he could bring trouble for himself.

"Ah!" he lamented. "Beauties cause trouble. Brother Lan Sibai, let me advise you. Don't go after that phoenix again. If

you offend someone like Feng Yan because of her, it's not worth it."

Lan Sibai nodded, but inside, he was still unwilling and resentful.

"Another thing," Lu Qian said. "Five days from now, the Truth Godly Palace will hold the God-Naming Platform Conference again. With our abilities, we should be able to attend. We should prepare beforehand. Maybe we can receive one or two ancient relics from the platform."

Lan Sibai's expression suddenly turned joyful. "The God-Naming Platform Conference that's once per decade? Really? Is it true?"

"How can it not be true?" Lu Qian said, chuckling. "The reason why the Truth Godly Palace will open again after seven days is mostly to make time for the conference."

...

Kongling Island

Zhang Ruochen grew confused. "God-Naming Platform Conference?"

"Yes. In five days, it'll be the God-Naming Platform Conference. This grand event is only held once per decade. Brother Zhang, you can't miss it." Feng Yan poured a cup of tea for Zhang Ruochen and then one for Mu Lingxi.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't interested in some grand event. He'd rather spend his time on cultivation.

Noticing this, Feng Yan smiled mysteriously. "Brother Zhang, you'll definitely regret it if you don't attend."

"Really?"

"From what I know, all godly disciples of the Truth Godly Palace and some first-level disciples will attend," Feng Yan explained. "The top ten godly disciples will host the conference."

"The top ten disciples host it together?" Zhang Ruochen was moved.

Feng Yan nodded.

Zhang Ruochen had been in the Truth Heavenly Domain for some time, so he had an understanding of the Truth Godly Palace. He knew what the top ten godly disciples stood for.

They represented the top combat abilities under the Supreme Saint Realm. They could even challenge Supreme Saints. They represented the top talents in the entire universe.

Even the top ten figures of the Saints Merits Rank might not be as excellent as them.

First, the Saints Merits Rank changed often, but the top ten godly disciples of the Truth Godly Palace hadn't changed in the past 100 years.

Second, it was obviously much harder to become the top figure under the Supreme Saint Realm than the Saint King Realm.

Because of these reasons, the top ten godly disciples of the Truth Godly Palace were famous throughout the entire Heaven World. They were even famous in Hell World.

If the top ten godly disciples hosted a conference at the same time, it was evident how important the Truth Godly Palace viewed it to be.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen was interested, Feng Yan continued, "The Truth Godly Palace will invite the leaders of each world, as well as emperors and empresses of ancient civilizations, gods, godly descendants, and some extraordinary talents and strong cultivators. I heard that even those from the Nine Angels Beauty Scroll will come too. Of course, that's not the most important."

"Then, what's the most important?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Feng Yan chuckled. "Brother Zhang, do you know what the God-Naming Platform is?"

"It's my first time hearing it," Zhang Ruochen said.

"Speaking of the God-Naming Platform, I must explain Heaven World's history. Everyone knows that the Heaven World was established around 100,000 years only. Then what

about before it? What was our world like 200,000 years or one million years ago?"

Zhang Ruochen listened quietly.

Feng Yan continued. "According to some ancient records, this world had ten times more Holy Qi in ancient times. Saintly meridians were everywhere and there were even divine meridians. It was even stronger than the four ruling worlds now.

"But for some reason, every being in the world went extinct. Even the gods died and it became a place of death. Only some mysterious and ancient relics were preserved. The God-Naming Platform is one of them."

The secrets that Feng Yan revealed shocked Zhang Ruochen. He also grew very curious about the God-Naming Platform.

"It's not just a simple conference, right?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"If you attend, you'll obviously see what it's like." Feng Yan seemed to be purposely tempting him to make him go.

"I don't think I was invited by the Truth Godly Palace."

Feng Yan grew excited. "If you go with the identity of Zhang Ruochen, I can help you get an invitation. But you have too many enemies. It might not be a good thing to go with your true identity.

"The second way to attend is with your abilities."

"What do you mean?"

"There are too many cultivators in the Truth Heavenly Domain but invitations are limited," Feng Yan explained. "There are always some strong independent cultivators who qualify but are barred. So, the Truth Godly Palace set a qualification exam. Anyone who's strong enough to pass can enter the venue.

"Brother Zhang, which method do you choose?"

Zhang Ruochen thought for a while. He took a sip of tea and smiled. "There are still five days, so there's no hurry. I want to

use this time to cross the Ocean of Truth again.”

“Really? What a coincidence! I just entered the Saint King Realm and I’d like to try the Ocean of Truth too.” Feng Yan laughed heartily.

He was so excited because he finally had a chance to compete with Zhang Ruochen.

Chapter 1636 - Thousand Star Maiden

Chapter 1636: Thousand Star Maiden

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen stood beside Feng Yan on the shore of the Ocean of Truth.

Zhang Ruochen didn't use Traceless 36 Changes to change his appearance.

Based on what Feng Yan said, all the changes would be rendered useless after entering the Ocean of Truth, so he might as well just cross the ocean with his true face.

The wind was blowing, making the weather cold.

Feng Yan said, smiling, "If I remember it correctly, Zhang Ruochen's only refined in Truth Godly Palace for thirteen days."

"That's right," said Zhang Ruochen.

Feng Yan said, "But I've refined in Truth Godly Palace for more than eight hundred days already, more than two years."

Zhang Ruochen could tell that Feng Yan wanted to have a friendly competition with him, but he thought he had a huge advantage, which was too unfair.

After all, this was the Ocean of Truth. The more profound understanding a monk had of Way of Truth, the farther they could sail.

Zhang Ruochen asked, "How many Rules of Truth have you comprehended, Brother Feng?"

“Twenty-eight hundred and fifty.”

Feng Yan told him the real number without sugarcoating it.

Zhang Ruochen didn't respond.

Zhang Ruochen was nothing compared to Feng Yan when it came to Way of Truth, as he'd only comprehended two hundred and forty-seven of them.

After all, Feng Yan had been refining in Truth Heavenly Domain since he was a kid, which gave him a huge advantage.

And besides, Feng Yan's body constitution, mind power, and saint spells were all in Zhang Ruochen's class.

However, Zhang Ruochen didn't set a high target, as he was still very primitive when it came to Way of Truth, so he didn't even think of competing with Feng Yan at all.

He would be very content if he could cross the third level of the ocean, and it'd be amazing if he could cross the fourth ocean domain.

He could try crossing the fifth and the sixth level of the ocean domain after refining in Truth Godly Palace for a longer time.

Suddenly, the crowd bustled.

Zhang Ruochen and Feng Yan both looked to the front, both dazed.

“Blue Fang. Blue Fang came to the Ocean of Truth.”

“Blue Fang is already a saint king, so he's probably here to cross the fourth level of the ocean domain to get to the fifth level.”

...

It was Blue Fang, the first talent from Yin and Yang Field, and he was ranked in the top one hundred on 'Saints Merits Rank' before he became a saint king.

Which led to bustling everywhere he went.

Zhang Ruochen forced a smile and said, “How unfortunate I am.”

Zhang Ruochen took out a metal mask and wore it.

It'd be better for him to hide his identity. After all, the hatred between him and Yin and Yang Field was too deep. He didn't want to fight Blue Fang before crossing the ocean.

Blue Fang was standing on a barren rock after coming to the Ocean of Truth with his arms in front of his body.

After a while, there came a larger noise.

And the entire crowd on the shore of the Ocean of Truth was bustling more.

Who else came?

Zhang Ruochen took a look, and he saw a white strange bird dragging an ancient carriage with saint light coming toward him. There was starry light above the ancient carriage, and under the ancient carriage was a long bridge formed by mist.

It was a terrific great being with a huge beard riding the carriage. He was engulfed in golden light, and two traces of tremendous power were glowing in his eyes.

A terrific great being as such was driving the carriage.

Who, then, was sitting in the ancient carriage?

"That's the carriage of Thousand Star Maiden. Can't believe she came to cross the Ocean of Truth as well." Feng Yan's eyes gleamed.

The ancient carriage stopped, and a glowing hand lifted the car curtain.

An ethereal heavenly girl walked out of the car elegantly, and there was starry light spinning around her. She was dressed in purple, wearing a one-foot-tall red hat like a godly ruler. Her black hair waved like willow catkins.

Thousand Star Maiden was proficient in an ancient technique which made her face look dim. Even Zhang Ruochen wasn't able to see her appearance clearly.

The woman looked ethereal and aloof, quiet and mysterious.

Some monks on the shore tried to talk to Thousand Star Maiden, but they were all intimidated by the giant guard with a huge beard who was in front of her.

The guard with a giant beard had tremendous cultivation, and his saint might itself was enough to scare off all the monks wanting to approach her.

Zhang Ruochen said, “That woman just became a saint king as well, and she seems very powerful.”

“Seems very powerful?”

Feng Yan was a bit speechless. He smiled and said, “You know who Thousand Star Maiden is, don’t you, brother Zhang Ruochen?”

“Yes, I heard of the same, but not sure when and where,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Feng Yan shook his head and said, “Thousand Star Maiden was the number one on ‘Saints Merits Rank’ before you entered the merits battle, and now because of you, she’s the second.”

“I see.”

Zhang Ruochen looked to Thousand Star Maiden again and said, “However, she doesn’t look like a girl who loves killing at all. How did she accumulate so many merits?”

Feng Yan said, “Anyone who managed to become a deity of an ancient civilization must’ve been through tough competition, stepping on mountains of bodies. It wasn’t as easy as you think.”

Zhang Ruochen thought and said, “Her real name isn’t on ‘Saints Merits Rank’, but only ‘Thousand Star Maiden.’ What’s her real name?”

“Thousand Star Civilization is a very mysterious and ancient civilization. Thousand Star Maiden has always been alone since she came here. She’s never let anyone approach, nor has she approached any other monk, so she has almost no friends here. Only a few monks know her real name,” said Feng Yan.

Zhang Ruochen knew a bit about the ancient civilizations.

Those ancient civilizations didn’t belong to any large field, and they couldn’t even be found in the universe. They were living in some secret regions.

The secret regions were of all sizes.

The largest secret region was larger than any secular field under Heaven World.

Yet the smallest secret region was only as large as a planet.

Besides, those ancient civilizations were all extremely powerful. They teamed up with Heaven World to fight Hell World.

The deities chosen by the ancient civilizations were their representatives in Heaven World.

Feng Yan got more excited and said, “The God-Naming Platform Conference is drawing near, which is why Thousand Star Maiden and Blue Fang are here. There will be more and more talents coming in the next couple of days. The Ocean of Truth will be bustling.”

The ten Boats of Truth pulled up to shore again.

Divine Fire Dingjie emerged on Blue Fang’s body, and he boarded a Boat of Truth on the far left.

And then, Thousand Star Maiden boarded the Boat of Truth on the right. She was slender, looking like a fairy with long dark hair. She walked on the ocean, causing small ripples.

“Let’s go.”

Feng Yan surged to the sky with windy fiery whirlpools under his feet, and then, he landed and showed up on a Boat of Truth beside Thousand Star Maiden.

Everyone on the shore exclaimed as he showed up.

Thousand Star Maiden, Feng Yan and Blue Fang were all renowned talents, yet they all showed up and were about to cross the Ocean of Truth together.

“Can’t believe the three are together now. Once in our lifetime, definitely once in our lifetime.”

“Let’s see who can survive longer.”

...

All the monks on the shore were excited, and they all sent signal flares out.

Ordinary monks wouldn't join them to cross the Ocean of Truth to humiliate themselves.

Zhang Ruochen walked to the boats slowly, boarding the fourth Boat of Truth. No monks recognized him, as he was wearing a mask.

Only Blue Fang took a deep look at Zhang Ruochen, as he found his body shape very familiar.

And then, five powerful beings showed up and boarded Boats of Truth. All of them were saint kings with solid background.

Someone on the shore yelled, "Deity" when two of them boarded Boats of Truth.

As for the other three, they were definitely confident in their power as they dared board a Boat of Truth under this situation.

There was one more Boat of Truth left, so it seemed like no one had the guts to compete with them now.

"I, Xiang Chunan, will try to cross the Ocean of Truth with you guys."

A man wearing a large red robe yelled and jumped onto the last Boat of Truth like a black bull.

Bang!

The Boat of Truth caused large waves.

Blue Fang and a deity got wet as they were standing on the two sides of Xiang Chunan. They both looked irritated by this dark fool who came out of nowhere.

Xiang Chunan didn't seem to sense their anger. He grinned, showing his white teeth. "Sorry, so sorry, my feet couldn't help shaking a bit. It's all my fault."

"What a dark fool."

The deity with five-colored divine light sneered.

Xiang Chunan was amazed. He said, "How did you know my nickname, brother? I just came to Truth Heavenly Domain.

How did I get so famous so soon?”

The deity with five-colored divine light didn't want to talk to Xiang Chunan at all. He said apathetically, “Stay away from me when we're crossing the Ocean of Truth.”

Xiang Chunan distanced himself from that deity as he saw him being kind of irritated, and he got closer to Blue Fang.

He looked at Blue Fang, smiled and asked, “Why are your teeth so long. Why is your head all green?”

Blue Fang was also a bit irritated and said, “Can't you distinguish between red and green?”

“Red? It looks very green to me...”

Xiang Chunan stopped laughing and thought for a bit.

After a while, he apologized to Blue Fang. “Sorry, my sight is different from others as I'm somewhat colorblind. I always mistake green for red and vice versa.”

“Piss off.”

Blue Fang was furious. If this wasn't his first time crossing the Ocean of Truth, and he would definitely beat this Dark Fool who played dumb as he dared provoke him in public.

Chapter 1637 - Receiving Mysteries of Truth Again

Chapter 1637: Receiving Mysteries of Truth Again

Ten Truth Boats were in a row. Soon, with Thousand Star Maiden, Feng Yan, and Blue Fang at the lead, they rushed out.

For strong cultivators at their level, the first level didn't pose any difficulty. They controlled the Truth Boat steadily and shot out like an arrow.

Only Xiang Chunan, who was crossing the Ocean of Truth for the first time, was still spinning in place, sweating in panic.

It was Zhang Ruochen's second time and he didn't go too quickly. Instead, he took in the process closely.

Compared to the first time, it's clearly harder. Maybe it's because I reached the Saint King Realm, so the Ocean of Truth automatically raised its difficulty level.

Even though it was harder, Zhang Ruochen had improved more.

He stood at the fore and controlled the boat with his Spiritual Power. The boat cruised forward with a steady speed.

When he reached the first level's pass, Thousand Star Maiden, Feng Yan, and Blue Fang had already defeated the guardian and broke through.

The curtain of light before him shone with brilliant light.

The guardian appeared. It was semi-transparent and wore silver armor. "Defeat me to reach the second level. Now, you may choose your weapon for battle."

"I won't use any weapon. I'll use fist technique."

Zhang Ruochen clenched his fists and uttered, "First move of the Luo Water Fist Technique, Heavenly River Split!"

Boom!

When he punched, a heavenly river appeared. It fell from the sky, hitting the guardian and splitting it into pieces.

A casual punch killed the first level's guardian.

Zhang Ruochen steered the Truth Boat through the curtain of light and entered the second level.

The wind on the sea surface turned into a storm.

Every strand of wind was like a blade, producing cracking sounds on the Truth Boat. They seemed to cut through the small boat.

Zhang Ruochen grew careful. He wrapped his vast Spiritual Power around the Truth Boat and cruised forward more slowly.

Raising his head, he saw six Truth Boats cruising in the ten-mile-wide second level sea.

Thousand Star Maiden, Feng Yan, and Blue Fang were still at the front. They'd already defeated the second guardian and reached the third level. Two Deities were fighting intensely with the second guardian.

Three other Saint Kings were still cruising. Among them, the strongest was already a third step Saint King.

As expected, the stronger your cultivation, the more difficult this is. Instead, top talents like Thousand Star Maiden, Feng Yan, and Blue Fang can move powerfully across the Ocean of Truth.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't worried. Seemingly calm, he studied the Ocean of Truth carefully in the process. He made sure that his mindset was calm.

Suddenly, he heard a laugh behind him. "I finally caught up with you all. Brother, why are you wearing a mask? Is it because you're too ugly and don't dare to meet people with your true appearance?"

Zhang Ruochen turned around and was shocked.

The Dark Fool named Xiang Chunan had actually crossed the first level and caught up.

After all, this Dark Fool had claimed that he'd just arrived at the Truth Heavenly Domain, so it should be his first time crossing the Ocean of Truth.

The number of beings who could cross the first level on their first try could be counted on one hand. Not even Ling Feiyu could do it.

There were only two possibilities.

One, Dark Fool was lying. He hadn't just arrived at the Truth Heavenly Domain and was just pretending to be stupid.

Second, he was amazingly strong.

The boat under him kept wobbling as if it was about to capsize. However, Chu Xiangnan's legs were very thick. They were the size of an average man's waist and didn't waver while standing on the boat.

He didn't use any Spiritual Power or even Holy Qi. He's just using his physical strength to push down the Truth Boat so it won't overturn. Is he a pure physical body cultivator? This thought appeared in Zhang Ruochen's mind.

Thinking of this, Zhang Ruochen secretly pulled back his Spiritual Power to control the Truth Boat with physical power.

But in the span of one breath, the Truth Boat started shaking violently.

No, it's going to overturn.

He quickly released Spiritual Power onto the Truth Boat and it finally steadied again.

I can't even control the Truth Boat with my physical power, but he can come so far. Could he be stronger than me physically?

After that, Zhang Ruochen cruised forward while studying Xiang Chunan secretly.

Miraculously, he didn't fall into the water even when they reached the second pass.

Now, only they were left in the second level. The other eight cultivators had all gone to the third level.

Xiang Chunan revealed his white teeth in a smile. “How come you’re so slow? Is it your first time too?”

“Second time.”

“How come you’re still so slow?” Xiang Chunan asked mindlessly.

“No hurry,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“Oh, that’s right. Why hurry? We’re competing to see who goes further, not who’s faster.”

Then Xiang Chunan yelled at the curtain of light, “Where’s the guardian? Come out and fight with your Lord Xiang!”

Poof!

The second guardian appeared out of the curtain of light. It wore silver armor and was still semi-transparent, but it had many silver bones.

Before the guardian could speak, Xiang Chunan had already punched.

“Oh?”

Zhang Ruochen realized that when Xiang Chunan punched, he only used physical strength, but many Rules of Truth appeared on his arm. This multiplied the power of his fist techniques.

At the same time, Rules of Truth appeared on his legs. They connected the Truth Boat with the Ocean of Truth tightly like tentacles.

He actually cultivated Rules of Truth and is quite advanced in it, but he’s still pretending to be stupid? Zhang Ruochen was confused.

Boom!

An intense fight erupted between Xiang Chunan and the second guardian. Many times, the Truth Boat under Xiang Chunan’s feet tilted to a shocking angle that couldn’t be saved and it seemed like he would definitely fall into the water.

But then, his body weight would change between heavy and light until the Truth Boat finally recovered.

After a hundred exchanges, Xiang Chunan produced an aggressive fist technique and shattered the guardian's body.

“Haha!”

Xiang Chunan laughed heartily and looked at Zhang Ruochen. “Brother, I'll head to the third level now. Good luck!”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and nodded.

After Xiang Chunan passed through the light, the second guardian condensed again. It hovered in the sky and stared at Zhang Ruochen. “Defeat me and pass into the third level,” it said emotionlessly.

“First move of the Luo Water Fist Technique, Heavenly River Split!” Zhang Ruochen didn't add Rules of Fist Way into the technique. Instead, he punched with all his might and the precision of the technique.

Instantly, a dozen-meter-long heavenly river appeared. It glittered colorfully. Descending like a dragon, it fell onto the second guardian.

This strike only sent the guardian falling onto the surface of the sea.

“Second move of the Luo Water Fist Technique, Nine Twists and Turns.”

Boom!

The punch sent the guardian flying back. It struck the curtain of light heavily and turned into specks of light.

“Pass.”

A deep voice spread from the curtain of light.

Zhang Ruochen put away his bounding spiritual power and recomposed himself. The corner of his lips curled up. He steered the Truth Boat toward the curtain of light.

When he passed, his body trembled.

“Passed the second level. You received 1-10,000th of the Mysteries of Truth.”

This voice rang out in Zhang Ruochen's head.

A gentle power rushed into the 144 apertures all over him, dissolving into specks of light that flowed through his meridians.

Finally, light covered his entire body.

He was both happy and confused. I've already reached the Saint King Realm and crossed the second level of the sea, and I can still receive Mysteries of Truth?

With his current cultivation, it wasn't difficult to cross the second level at all.

Even so, he could still receive Mysteries of Truth. Then, wouldn't many people be able to receive it? The Mysteries of Truth were only one whole number. It wasn't enough at all.

Or was it that you would receive more after crossing more levels if you received it in the first level?

Zhang Ruochen couldn't figure it out at all, but he didn't have time to think about it now, because he'd come to the third level.

The wind in the third level was abnormally harsh. Dark currents flowed under the Truth Boat too.

The instant that he'd gotten distracted, the Truth Boat almost capsized.

Let's stop caring about it. It's an amazing thing to receive 1-10,000th of the Mysteries of Truth. I'll probably be even faster at comprehending the Rules of Saintly Way now.

If he crossed the third level, he'd probably be able to continue receiving Mysteries of Truth.

His heart was filled with anticipation.

After entering the third level, the difficulty level shot up. The ten people who crossed together were still here.

What was different was that the Thousand Star Maiden, Feng Yan, and Blue Fang were already fighting with the third guardian. The other six were working hard at steering their boat to the third curtain of light.

Xiang Chunan's Truth Boat had been shaking since the start. Now, it was as if he was dancing on the boat. He was in a mess and looked very pathetic.

However, his boat just wouldn't flip over. It made the cultivators watching on land very nervous.

"Could that Dark Fool really be a strong figure who's just pretending to be crossing for the first time?"

"Ha, have you ever seen anyone who could cross the second level on their first try? This person is definitely pretending."

"The Dark Fool is very advanced in the Way of Truth. He can control more than 1,000 Rules of Truth and this might not even be his limit."

A gleeful laugh rang out. "Look, that Dark Fool's boat is about to overturn! Ha!"

"Flip over! Flip!"

...

Plop.

A Truth Boat in the third level overturned and someone fell into the sea.

However, it wasn't Xiang Chunan. Instead, it was the third step Saint King with the highest cultivation. This man had crossed three miles in the third level.

Xiang Chunan steadied his boat again after some violent shaking.

The third step Saint King returned to the land and gazed at the nine Truth Boats in the sea. He let out a deep sigh, feeling disappointed. Of the ten people, he never would've thought that he would be the first one to fall into the sea.

Chapter 1638 - Ghost God Came

Chapter 1638: Ghost God Came

The ten monks all came to the third level of the ocean domain, which was almost never seen. Many monks were drawn to the shore.

They were all talking about the monks who were crossing the ocean, and Thousand Star Maiden was their main focus, followed by Feng Yan, Blue Fang, and the two deities.

The third-step saint king who just fell into the ocean was completely ignored.

“It’s strange. Did you guys find the man with a metal mask to be very powerful? He’s behind all the others but he defeated the guard of the second level of the ocean domain with just one strike.”

“Indeed. He shouldn’t be behind everyone with his power.”

Finally, some monks noticed Zhang Ruochen.

Besides, Zhang Ruochen was wearing a mask, which made him look more mysterious. Everyone was pondering his identity as he was a first-step saint king who managed to cross the second level of the ocean domain. He had to be exceptional.

The situation on the ocean changed again.

Thousand Star Maiden became the first one to defeat the guard of the third level of the ocean domain, entering the fourth level.

Feng Yan then used all his body to crush the guard completely, entering the fourth level.

Bang!

Bang!

Two saint kings fell into the ocean after sailing on the third level for more than ten miles. They failed to get to the exit of the ocean domain.

The monks on the shore were all sighing.

It was way too difficult to cross the third level of the ocean domain. Even top-tier talents failed.

Only Zhang Ruochen, Xiang Chunan, Blue Fang and the two deities were still on the third level of the ocean domain.

Boom!

Blue Fang defeated the guard of the third level, vanishing from the light screen.

As for the two deities, they came to under the light screen, starting to fight the guard.

It was extremely difficult to cross the third level of the ocean domain. Zhang Ruochen had to mobilize all his mind power to control the Boat of Truth.

Even so, the boat shook fiercely sometimes.

Gradually, Zhang Ruochen caught up with Xiang Chunan.

Xiang Chunan was shocked. He looked at Zhang Ruochen and said, "You managed to defeat the guard of the second level?"

Zhang Ruochen was already used to how upfront Xiang Chunan was, so he wasn't disturbed. He smiled and said, "Just pure luck."

"Seems like we both got here by luck. How coincidental. How about we become sworn brothers?" Xiang Chunan got excited, shaking his Boat of Truth again.

Zhang Ruochen looked at how fiercely the boat was trembling, and he was certain that he would definitely fall into the ocean, so he sailed the boat farther.

Zhang Ruochen didn't go challenge the guard after he got to the light screen. Instead, he watched the two fights.

The two deities were both extraordinary, mastering saint spells of all sorts. Besides, they'd refined almost a thousand Rules of

Truth which made their saint spells three times stronger.

Obviously, they'd completely comprehended the three Visualization Pictures on the first level of Truth Godly Palace.

The deity with five-colored divine light was a second-step saint king, and his mind power was at pinnacle level fifty-five. After a long fight, he defeated the guard and entered the fourth level of the ocean domain.

The other deity was a first-step saint king with weaker mind power.

He had a hard time fighting the guard, and in the end, the guard knocked him into the water with his sword.

He failed.

The power gap among the deities was enormous as well. Wang Xu managed to cross the fourth level of the ocean domain when he was only a half-step saint king, yet that deity couldn't cross the third level as a real saint king, Zhang Ruochen thought.

Compared to the vast majority, reaching the exit of the third level of the ocean domain was already considered exceptional.

Xiang Chunan said to Zhang Ruochen again, "Brother, what do you think of my proposal?"

Bang!

Xiang Chunan's Boat of Truth hit Zhang Ruochen's, which shocked him. He immediately mobilized his saint Qi and mind power to stabilize the Boat of Truth.

"You didn't fall into the ocean?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Xiang Chunan guffawed, "Surprised? All luck haha!"

"What did you mean by thinking of your proposal?" Zhang Ruochen frowned, distancing himself from Xiang Chunan as he didn't want to be knocked into the ocean by that dark fool.

Xiang Chunan's eyes popped as he said, "Becoming sworn brothers. Have you forgotten about it?"

Zhang Ruochen tried to smile politely to avoid the awkwardness, and he didn't answer anything.

Xiang Chunan didn't even know his name, nor did he see what Zhang Ruochen actually looked like, yet he was asking to become sworn brothers. How careless was that Dark Fool?

Zhang Ruochen arrived right under the light screen, sailing his Boat of Truth.

Sizzle!

The guard of the third level of the ocean domain showed up. He was still wearing silver armor, yet there were silver bones and blood inside his half-transparent body. His forces were much larger than the former two's.

The forces alone gave Zhang Ruochen tremendous pressure.

“Even a deity was defeated. The guard of the third level must be a force to be reckoned with.”

Zhang Ruochen tried to stabilize the Boat of Truth with his mind power, and all his one hundred and forty-four apertures gleamed with bright light. He clenched his fists, mobilized the tumbling saint Qi in his body, and stared at the guard.

“You can enter the fourth level of the ocean domain if you defeat me.”

The guard also clenched his fist, and silver light flowed around his fingers as his eyes gave out terrifying forces.

“The first move of Luo Water Fist Technique, Heavenly River Split.”

Zhang Ruochen mobilized the sixty fist way rules and merged them with his fist technique, performing Luo Water Fist Technique at its mid-class-saint-spell level.

The water in the Ocean of Truth was all triggered by the fist technique, merging with the Heavenly River above him, making rumbling sounds.

A Heavenly River that was hundreds of feet long hit the guard.

There were sixty fist way rules in his fist, so it was way stronger than when he performed it on the second level.

The guard was exceptional. Each time he wielded his fist it was like throwing an iron mountain, destroying the Heavenly River that was hundreds of feet long. The water dripped into the Ocean of Truth.

The guard then rushed toward Zhang Ruochen like lightning. “Second move of Luo Water Fist Technique, Nine Twists and Turns.”

Zhang Ruochen mobilized seventy fist way rules this time.

Zhang Ruochen performed the thirty-six moves of Luo Water Fist Technique one by one, and each move was stronger than the last. They formed waves, piling up and getting higher and higher.

Bang!

The guard was extremely powerful, and he managed to break the second move of Luo Water Fist Technique with one strike.

His other iron fist hit toward Zhang Ruochen’s chest.

Zhang Ruochen performed the third move of Luo Water Fist Technique, Heavenly Break Path, and he merged eighty fist way techniques inside.

...

Zhang Ruochen fought the guard of the third level harder and harder.

Both of them were performing fist techniques. However, the guard’s fist techniques were firmer, while Luo Water Fist Technique was smoother. Zhang Ruochen’s arms were like two rivers, sometimes bending and sometimes straightening.

Boom!

The Boat of Truth under Zhang Ruochen’s feet kept shaking fiercely, making large waves.

“The tenth move of Luo Water Fist Technique, Soul-Breaking Song.”

Zhang Ruochen mobilized one hundred and fifty fist way rules, merging them with his fist technique, clashing with the

guard.

Zhang Ruochen was still overpowered this time, and he almost fell off the Boat of Truth.

However, the guard also took four steps back. Obviously, it wasn't easy for him to ward off Zhang Ruochen's Luo Water Fist Technique either.

Zhang Ruochen gradually gained an advantage as the power he wielded became stronger and stronger, knocking the guard back.

He then immediately jumped out of the Boat of Truth, wielding both his fists. "The eighteenth move of Luo Water Fist Technique, Ghost God Came."

Two hundred and thirty fist way rules were merged with the fist technique, and his saint Qi gushed out, forming two phantoms of Ghost Gods in front of his fist prints.

There was a Heavenly River around the phantoms, making shrill noises and causing the water on the third level of the ocean domain to tumble.

Boom!

The guard's body was cut in half.

Before the bodies fell into the ocean, they turned into light spots, flying into the light screen.

A voice came out of the light screen. "Pass."

Zhang Ruochen was relieved and retracted his saint Qi and fist technique.

"It was tricky. I had to use all my power to defeat the guard of the third level without using Rules of Truth."

Luo Water Fist Technique was divided into two halves with eighteen moves in each half.

However, the former eighteen moves and the latter eighteen moves were almost of the same strength. The final move of the first half, 'Ghost God Came' and the final move of the second half, 'Luo Water Outflow', were both equally strong.

Zhang Ruochen vanished from the light screen, sailing the Boat of Truth.

Xiang Chunan's eyes popped as he stood under the light scree. After a while, he calmed himself down and yelled, "What a fist technique! Can you teach me, brother?"

However, Zhang Ruochen had entered the fourth level of the ocean domain, so he couldn't hear Xiang Chunan.

Chapter 1639 - Way of the Void?

Chapter 1639: Way of the Void?

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The fourth level was still ten miles wide.

Boom!

On the sea, the windstorm created various tornadoes connecting to the sky. Below, the sea was swept into vortexes, making the waves angry and dangerous.

Not only did Zhang Ruochen use Spiritual Power, he also released all his Holy Qi to wrap around the boat. Finally, he steadied the violently-shaking Truth Boat.

As expected, I received another 1-10,000th of the Mysteries of Truth after crossing the third level.

He raised his head and looked into the distance with a smile. He stared at the fourth pass with even more determined eyes.

He would try his hardest to cross the fourth level.

It was much, much harder to cross the fourth level than the third. Even the Thousand Star Maiden and Feng Yan had trouble. It wasn't as easy as before.

Among them, the Thousand Star Maiden had a lead. She was already at four miles.

Feng Yan was close behind at three miles.

Blue Fang and the Deity with five-colored lights were still within two miles.

A big reason why Wang Xu could cross the fourth level was probably because he cultivated the Way of Fleeting Light, the fastest way. He had a big advantage. Otherwise, as a half-step Saint King, it would be almost impossible to cross the fourth level.

Zhang Ruochen was confident in reaching the fourth pass, but he wasn't sure he could beat the guardian.

Thus, he tested the effect of the Rules of Truth while crossing the sea. This way, he could be calmer when facing the fourth guardian.

He activated 100 Rules of Truth.

They connected the Truth Boat to the sea like 100 tentacles.

Next, Zhang Ruochen collected the Holy Qi around the boat back into his body.

If he used both his Holy Qi and Spiritual Power to control the boat, then he wouldn't be able to move when he met the guardian. He wouldn't be able to fight at all.

The guardian could knock him into the sea easily.

After retracting half of the Holy Qi, the boat started wavering.

After retracting 70%, it shook more and more violently. It was already very hard to control.

Zhang Ruochen hurriedly took out 20 more Rules of Truth. This equaled 20 more tentacles. Gradually, the Truth Boat steadied again.

...

After multiple tries, Zhang Ruochen was using 135 Rules of Truth with Spiritual Power to finally steady the Truth Boat. This way, he could finally have hands to fight the guardian.

He'd only comprehended 247 Rules of Truth.

In other words, he could only use 112 Rules of Truth while fighting the guardian.

As the boat continued forward, his expression grew more and more uncomfortable.

Because as he continued, the difficulty shot up. He had to use more and more Rules of Truth on the boat to steady it.

When he reached two miles, he had to use 140 Rules of Truth.

When he reached three miles, he had to use 150 Rules of Truth.

For a first step Saint King, one had to use 81 Rules of Truth to double their saint spell's power.

With Zhang Ruochen's attainment in the Way of Truth, it was sure that he'd be unable to use 81 when he reached the fourth pass.

Without the help of the Rules of Truth, it would be extremely hard for Zhang Ruochen to defeat the fourth guardian.

My attainment in the Way of Truth is still too low. If I could cultivate 2,850 rules like Feng Yan, I wouldn't be so embarrassed now. He sighed inwardly.

Feng Yan only had to use 729 Rules of Truth to unleash three times the amount of power.

If he used 2187 rules, he could unleash four times the amount. Thus, he still had a lot more left to control the Truth Boat.

No matter how strong Zhang Ruochen was, he still couldn't take a spell from Feng Yan with triple or quadruple the power.

In the end, the most important part of the Ocean of Truth was that one needed more Rules of Truth.

Wang Xu and the Thousand Star Maiden had all cultivated more than 2,000 rules. Even Blue Fang had more than 1,600 rules. Zhang Ruochen couldn't compare at all.

I can't just sit and wait. I must think of a solution.

Since he couldn't place hope on the Way of Truth, he had to strengthen himself from another aspect.

The time sword technique and spatial power might be able to counter his enemy. What about the fist technique? Could he strengthen it?

He thought for a moment and took out the Fire God Armor and two boxing gloves and wrist guards. He put them on.

Even though he still hadn't found the correct way to use the Fire God Armor and couldn't unleash too much power, it could still strengthen him a bit.

Boom!

There was a huge sound behind him.

Then Xiang Chunan's laugh rang throughout the fourth level of the sea. "Your lord Xiang is here too... F*ck, what is this..."

As soon as he arrived, his Truth Boat fell into a huge whirlpool and spun around rapidly.

He tried his hardest to control the boat in the whirlpool, using all his might to break free while yelling out, "No, no, I used up all my good luck!"

The people who were crossing the sea all turned around.

The shining Deity was shocked. "That Dark Fool actually reached the fourth level too?"

Blue Fang's eyes were trained on Zhang Ruochen, feeling suspicious. "Familiar body, wearing a mask, and can reach the fourth level. Who can this person be?"

Feng Yan glanced at Zhang Ruochen who was cruising forward calmly. A smile appeared on the three faces at once. Then, no longer looking, he continued chasing after the Thousand Star Maiden.

Zhang Ruochen and the Thousand Star Maiden had both been number one on the Saints Merits Rank, but they crossed the sea completely differently from their usual personalities.

The Thousand Star Maiden's personality was light and wispy, but her aura while crossing the sea was sharp. No cultivator could even think about surpassing her.

After coming to the Truth Heavenly Domain, Zhang Ruochen created bloodshed everywhere, terrorizing countless

cultivators. But he crossed the Ocean of Truth without any rush, as if he was strolling on the sea.

Two interesting people, Feng Yan thought.

The spectators on land were in an uproar.

Five cultivators entered the fourth level at the same time. This was extremely rare. It meant that they were the top elites of the Heaven World. Everyone else could only look up at them.

These spectators were all guessing who could reach the furthest? Who would be the first to fall?

Some troublemakers even began betting with their companions.

“The Thousand Star Maiden and Feng Yan already crossed the fourth level before reaching the Saint King Realm. They’ll definitely go the furthest.”

“Next, it’ll be Blue Fang.”

“He should be able to defeat the fourth guardian this time.”

“The masked man or whatever seems powerful too. His fist technique earlier was amazing. It might be some mid-level saint spell.”

...

While everyone was in heated discussion, someone finally fell into the sea.

It wasn’t the Dark Fool, who was still spinning in the whirlpool. Instead, it was the colorfully shining Deity.

He’d gone all the way to the eighth mile.

When he returned to the land, his expression was very cold. He’d thought that he could reach the fourth pass easily after cultivating more than 300 Rules of Truth, but it was all in vain.

Now, the Thousand Star Maiden and Feng Yan reached the curtain of light one after another and started fighting with the guardian.

Zhang Ruochen observed their fight while cruising. He wanted to estimate the fourth guardian’s power.

After a dozen exchanges, the Thousand Star Maiden extended a slender finger and pointed at the guardian. An extremely strange power converged at her fingertip and hit the guardian's forehead.

Boom!

The guardian's body exploded.

But what was shocking was that the guardian disappeared the moment that it exploded. It was traceless and didn't even fly back into the curtain of light.

It just vanished.

"The Way of the Void?" Zhang Ruochen's heart raced.

Zhang Ruochen had heard Granny Begonia mention before that the most powerful of the Nine Ancient Ways was the Fate and the Void. Fate determined all; the Void destroyed all.

Was the Thousand Star Maiden really a controller of the Void?

After she defeated the guardian, she didn't enter the curtain of light immediately. Instead, she sat cross-legged in her boat and closed her eyes. It seemed that she'd used up too much Holy Qi in the last attack. She had to recover before she dared to enter the fifth level.

Blue Fang and Zhang Ruochen arrived at the curtain of light almost at the same time.

Blue Fang looked at him and grinned. "Sir, since you could reach the fourth pass, you must not be a nameless figure. You should at least be in the top thousand of the Saints Merits Rank. We've met before, right?"

Zhang Ruochen just smiled. Instead of speaking, he went to challenge the guardian directly.

Not only did the fourth guardian wear silver armor, but its body was also silver. It seemed to be a solid giant made out of true silver.

"Defeat me and enter the fifth level. Now, choose your weapon."

Zhang Ruochen activated the Hundred Saints Blood Armor to cover himself. He took out the Abyss Ancient Sword again and grasped it.

The sword spirit only comprehended around 20 Rules of Truth. With Zhang Ruochen's current state, it couldn't help much with the Way of Truth anymore.

But it was a true Third Yao Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon. It was abnormally sharp and may pose a threat to the guardian.

In the distance, Blue Fang was already fighting the guardian. He didn't have the energy to study Zhang Ruochen's sword.

Whoosh!

Boxing gloves and a sword appeared in the guardian's hand too. It pointed it at Zhang Ruochen and strong power exploded out, crushing toward him.

"This..."

Zhang Ruochen felt extremely heavy and unable to move.

Boom!

The guardian's silver sword created a ten-foot-long Sword Way Xuangang. Thousands of Sword Qi flew around the sword.

The silver arm moved. The Sword Way Xuangang and thousands of Sword Qi flew out at the same time.

It can actually produce Sword Way Xuangang. If I'd known, I wouldn't have taken out the Abyss Ancient Sword.

He was a bit regretful, but he had to face it head-on.

He couldn't take the Sword Way Xuangang squarely.

In an instant, he used the Spatial Move. The Truth Boat disappeared with him and dodged the guardian's attack. The Sword Way Xuangang and Sword Qi hit the sea surface, producing loud booms. Tall waves lifted up. It was truly a spectacle.

At the same time, the Truth Boat appeared above the guardian's head. Standing on it, Zhang Ruo Chen uttered softly, "Wu Sword."

At that moment, time froze.

Only a beam of black sword light cut down at the guardian's head.

Chapter 1640 - Completion of Sword Eight

Chapter 1640: Completion of Sword Eight

The guard had Sword Gang to protect his body, so he managed to dodge Zhang Ruochen's sword.

Sizzle!

There were sparkles on its head, and the Abyss Ancient Sword tore it a bit.

"Damn it. I didn't kill it." Zhang Ruochen sighed.

The power of time vanished. The guard then wielded its giant silver sword, carrying gleaming Sword Way Xuangang.

It was too fast for Zhang Ruochen to dodge.

He immediately used his sword, trying to ward it off.

Bang!

The power that Zhang Ruochen couldn't fight against fell onto the Abyss Ancient Sword, and the sword shook fiercely.

Zhang Ruochen's hand was cracked, and lots of saint blood was spilled. His body constitution could rival that of a third-step saint king, yet it was so fragile in front of the guard.

The Boat of Truth and Zhang Ruochen were both knocked away, falling.

Zhang Ruochen had to try to control the Boat of Truth. If he fell into the ocean, it meant he failed, which was the last thing he wanted.

All of a sudden, a giant shadow showed up above him as the Boat of Truth was about to fall into the ocean.

Zhang Ruochen looked up, and the guard was floating above him. He looked like a ruthless God of Death.

It wielded its giant silver sword.

The power contained in the giant silver sword was horrific, which pushed the water down when it was more than a hundred feet above Zhang Ruochen.

Meanwhile, Zhang Ruochen felt that his head was about to burst because of that invisible force.

“No, I can’t fail. How can I fail on the fourth level of the ocean domain? I’m Zhang Ruochen, Time and Space Manipulator. I want to become a God and defeat Chi Yao... I must accomplish what others can’t.” Zhang Ruochen had great perseverance, and an unbending will.

His body potential was fully triggered at this moment. His mind became clear as the time around him flowed more and more slowly. He felt like he was standing in a dark, silent and cold universe, and that he could see the changes of everything.

All the confusion he had been having was gone.

Zhang Ruochen held his sword handle tightly again seeing the giant silver sword slaying toward him.

Whoosh!

Black light emerged on the Abyss Ancient Sword.

It wasn’t sword light though. Instead, it was Sword Way Xuangang.

Meanwhile, the Fire God Armor on his arms gleamed with blazing flames, which merged with Sword Way Xuangang, surging.

Boom!

The two Sword Way Xuangangs clashed with each other.

The guard’s giant silver sword was torn apart, and its body was also cut in half.

Bang!

The Boat of Truth landed on the ocean again, making waves that were several times taller than Zhang Ruochen’s body, yet he was standing on the Boat of Truth stably.

The guard's half bodies turned into light dots and flew back to the light screen. "Pass."

Zhang Ruochen guffawed, looking at the sword in his hand.

He didn't expect himself to fully comprehend the final level of Sword Eight and to condense Sword Way Xuangang.

Incredible.

It was incredible.

Suddenly, he stopped laughing as he realized something. He thought, It seems trying to cross the Ocean of Truth won't just give me awards. The most important thing is to help monks refine themselves.

When trying to cross the ocean, monks can comprehend how to better control their power.

Each guard is a teacher. Fighting them not only makes us more experienced, but also allows us to learn their fighting skills. A monk can improve drastically after fighting a teacher like that.

Without the guard on the fourth level of the ocean domain, it would take a while longer for Zhang Ruochen to complete Sword Eight.

What was more incredible was that Fire God Armor finally showed the power it should've shown, much larger than when Qiu Yu had it.

Zhang Ruochen managed to defeat the guard with the help of Fire God Armor.

Why was that?

Zhang Ruochen was baffled. He immediately mobilized a trace of mind power to inspect the two boxing gloves and arm guards of the armor.

The boxing gloves and the arm guards were like four fiery godly irons. There were lots of ancient godly engravings on their surfaces, including some pictures of divine beasts.

There weren't this many changes when he was trying to trigger Fire God Armor before.

Gradually, Zhang Ruochen retracted his saint Qi.

He then noticed the light spots in the saint Qi he pulled back.

“That is... Mystery of Truth...”

Because of the dire situation before, Zhang Ruochen didn't have the capacity to control Mystery of Truth, which was why he infused Mystery of Truth and saint Qi into the Fire God Armor at the same time.

Did Fire God Armor show its real power because of the Mystery of Truth?

After pulling back all the Mysteries of Truth and saint Qi, Zhang Ruochen then infused his Fire God Armor with saint Qi only. Crimson fiery god armor emerged on the armor, but its force was nothing compared to before.

And then, Zhang Ruochen infused it with Mysteries of Truth again.

Boom!

Suddenly, the two gloves and the arm guards glowed with gleaming fire, shining upon Zhang Ruochen's arms as if his body was made of crimson bronze with ferocious power.

Godly might gushed out.

“Seems like I need to use Mysteries of Truth to trigger its maximum power.”

Zhang Ruochen got more confused. Qiu Yu didn't have Mysteries of Truth at all before. How did he wield the real power of Fire God Armor?

Perhaps Mystery of Truth wasn't the only way to utilize Fire God Armor, and there might be a different way.

The thing to figure out was, how.

As Zhang Ruochen was thinking, Thousand Star Maiden, who was recovering her saint Qi on her Boat of Truth, opened her almond eyes and looked to him.

To be accurate, she was staring at the Fire God Armor on his arms.

She was kind of dazed, and then, she looked away and entered the fifth level of the ocean domain on her Boat of Truth.

It took Feng Yan a long time to defeat the guard of the fourth level of the ocean domain. He then looked to Zhang Ruochen, thrilled.

He didn't say a word. Instead, he just sat on the Boat of Truth to recover his saint Qi as well.

Zhang Ruochen also consumed more than half of his saint Qi during the previous fight. At this moment, he was standing at the center of the boat, refining 'Eight Polar Concealing Sky', the eighth level of 'Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture', to mobilize the saint Qi in his body.

After one circle of vital energy, his saint Qi went back to the pinnacle status.

The more complex the technique was, the quicker a monk could absorb saint Qi, and the saint Qi they refined would be purer.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen rushed to the light screen at the front, sailing his Boat of Truth.

"You've passed the second level of the ocean domain, which earned you two ten thousandths of the Mysteries of Truth." He heard the familiar voice again as he passed the light screen.

And then, a large number of light spots rushed into Zhang Ruochen's body.

"I only gained one ten thousandths of the Mystery of Truth when I crossed the first, the second and the third level of the ocean domain, but I gained double after I crossed the fourth level. Was it because of the difficulty?"

As Zhang Ruochen was pondering the reason, he heard a different voice. "You got Mystery of Truth as well?"

Zhang Ruochen was shocked, looked to the left, and saw Thousand Star Maiden standing on her Boat of Truth, engulfed in starry mist.

She stopped sailing her Boat of Truth as if she was waiting for Zhang Ruochen on purpose.

“What were you saying?”

Zhang Ruochen played dumb.

Thousand Star Maiden looked very apathetic. She said, “The boxing gloves and the arm guards you’re wearing were made by a God using special weapon-refining techniques. Only the power of mysteries can trigger their godly might.”

No wonder she’s a heavenly maiden. How perceptive. But what is the power of mysteries? Are there any other mysteries? Zhang Ruochen wouldn’t ask this question. Otherwise, he would be admitting that he obtained Mysteries of Truth.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and denied it. “Don’t you want to know the differences between this special weapon and the godly remains ancient weapons, godly weapons, and saint weapons?”

Zhang Ruochen then realized she must’ve confirmed that he obtained Mysteries of Truth already.

By doing so, Thousand Star Maiden also exposed that she obtained Mysteries of Truth.

If both of the monks had Mysteries of Truth, they would become mortal enemies even if there were no grudges between them, as they both wanted to kill each other to get more Mysteries of Truth.

It was likely that Thousand Star Maiden followed the Way of the Void, and that she had a giant ancient civilization backing her. She was as large a problem as Shang Ziyan.

Zhang Ruochen only wished that she wouldn’t recognize him as he was wearing a mask, although it was almost impossible.

Zhang Ruochen used the power of time and space in the previous fight, and he also wielded his Abyss Ancient Sword. Even if Thousand Star Maiden hadn’t heard of Zhang Ruochen before, she would soon by doing only a little research.

If Shang Ziyan and Thousand Star Maiden fought him at the same time, he would be rendered defenseless against them. He

didn't want the worst scenario to happen.

What should he do then?

Should he try to assassinate her after crossing the Ocean of Truth?

To Zhang Ruochen, women were nothing, no matter how beautiful they were, as long as they weren't his. If she posed a threat to his life, he would have to strike first and kill her.

Thousands of thoughts flooded Zhang Ruochen's mind.

Thousand Star Maiden said, "You hid your hostility very well, but you can't deceive me. I know you want to kill me and seize my Mysteries of Truth. Unfortunately, you're not strong enough yet."

Zhang Ruochen stopped pretending and smirked. "Really? Then let's see who can survive longer."

Sizzle!

The light screen shook.

Obviously, more monks came to the fifth level of the ocean domain.

Thousand Star Maiden stopped talking and kept sailing her Boat of Truth.

Chapter 1641 - Rich Reward

Chapter 1641: Rich Reward

The one who came out of the curtain of light was Feng Yan.

He gazed at the backside of the Thousand Star Maiden in the distance and smiled. “This icy fairy-like maiden seems to have said something incredible to Brother Zhang? Could it be that your shocking performance won her heart?”

“Stop joking. The Thousand Star Maiden is so noble. How could she like a mundane person like me?”

With that, Zhang Ruochen steered his Truth Boat carefully forward.

The fifth level was much more difficult than the fourth level. Zhang Ruochen released all of his Spiritual Power and 247 Rules of Truth to control the boat.

In the end, Holy Qi had to come out of his 144 apertures and wrap around the Truth Boat to manage to keep going forward.

Beside him, Feng Yan also had a serious expression. He released all of his Spiritual Power, Holy Qi and more than 2,000 rules to steady the boat and go forward.

He glanced at Zhang Ruochen with an impressed look. You only cultivated around 200 rules, but you can force yourself to the fifth level. If he has as many rules as me, it won't be hard to reach the sixth level, right?

They continued forward for around three miles and Zhang Ruochen finally fell into the sea.

Blue Fang defeated the fourth guardian, but as soon as he entered the fifth level, he was unable to control the Truth Boat and fell sooner than Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen returned to land and Blue Fang went up to him. Leering, he said, “I already know who you are. What point is there in continuing to wear that mask?”

“No point,” Zhang Ruochen said. “But I’m going to keep wearing it. What can you do about it?”

Blue Fang hated Zhang Ruochen’s guts, but he couldn’t break into the Moon Goddess Dojo because of the time and space formations. Otherwise, how could he not go take revenge after Zhang Ruochen killed so many Yin and Yang Field cultivators and destroyed the Yin and Yang Palace?

“I can’t kill you in the Truth Heavenly Domain, but I can still break your arms and legs.”

Blue Fang clenched his hands into claws. Divine Fire Jingmie poured out of the claws and he swept at Zhang Ruochen. Because it included more than 1,000 Rules of Truth, Blue Fang’s claw had triple the power.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen used the spatial move and vanished from the spot. He appeared a dozen feet away, easily dodging Blue Fang’s attack. “You’re not my match,” he said indifferently. “Stop embarrassing yourself.”

“Earth Sea Clock.”

Blue Fang extended his right hand. A delicate bronze clock floated above his palm. Shreds of demonic Qi flowed atop it, so it was obvious it wasn’t an average Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon.

Zhang Ruochen summoned the Abyss Ancient Sword and grasped it, ready to fight at any moment.

The sword had a time print carved on it. He could cut down Blue Fang’s lifespan without any sign.

Since Blue Fang was purposely provoking him, Zhang Ruochen was determined to use this chance to take out this quite threatening enemy.

Just as they prepared to fight, Feng Yan came onto land and stopped them. “The Ocean of Truth forbids any type of fighting. If a godly disciple finds out, both of you will be locked up in the saint prison for at least one year.”

Blue Fang had worries, but he put the Earth Sea Clock away and left the Ocean of Truth.

Before leaving, he glared at Zhang Ruochen with strong hatred. If he found the chance, he would definitely use the cruelest methods against Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen was guarded, thinking about how to kill Blue Fang without breaking the rules of the Truth Godly Palace.

After all, if someone as strong as Blue Fang kept trying to kill him, it would indeed pose a great threat.

“The Yin and Yang Field is very strong,” Feng Yan said seriously. “Even though more than half of the strong figures died in the Moon Goddess Dojo battle, there are still powerful people spread throughout the other dojos. Brother Zhang, you must be careful.”

“I know.” Zhang Ruochen nodded and asked, “I was caught up with Blue Fang earlier and didn’t see how handsomely you crossed the sea. Did you pass the fifth level?”

“It’s fortunate you didn’t see.” Feng Yan sighed. “As soon as I met the fifth guardian, it sent me into the sea with one strike. It’s unspeakable.”

“Actually, it’s not that disgraceful,” Zhang Ruochen said. “Many talents at the top of each world work their entire life without being qualified to fight with the fifth guardian.”

“That’s true...”

Feng Yan’s eyes stared at the Ocean of Truth and his pupils kept expanding as he began feeling worse. “The Thousand Star Maiden passed the fifth level!” he muttered. “Amazing. It’s true that there are always people who are better than you.”

Zhang Ruochen looked toward the sixth level too. Seeing that beautiful figure, he felt great emotions inside.

The universe was too vast. No one knew how many talents were hidden. You could be excellent, but there was always someone better. You could be strong, but there was always someone stronger.

After reaching the sixth level, the Thousand Star Maiden stopped going forward. She stopped, turned the Truth Boat, and went to the bank. The entire time, she maintained the most elegant and perfect figure. No one could find any flaw in her.

What welcomed her were the envious, reverent, jealous, and worshipping expressions of the people on land.

They couldn't help it. The Thousand Star Maiden's performance was too shocking. She was only a first step Saint King, but she'd reached the sixth level. She might not be the first, but she was definitely in the first ten of history.

It could be imagined that her amazing feat would shock the entire Truth Heavenly Domain and spread through Heaven World.

Feng Yan chuckled wryly. "See? She's so smart. She knows that she can't pass the sixth level, so she chose not to do it. She's not like us, embarrassing ourselves and looking like fools without being able to cross the fifth level. We're all first step Saint Kings, but it's too obvious. We were just there to make her look good. It's a bit embarrassing."

"That woman is indeed strong. She knows how to give and take and can make the correct choice. She's smart, but unfortunately..."

Here, Zhang Ruochen stopped and didn't continue speaking, because the Thousand Star Maiden seemed to have heard Zhang Ruochen and Feng Yan's telepathic messages. Her alluring eyes stared at him with an eavesdropping expression.

With mine and Feng Yan's cultivation, she can still hear our telepathic messages? Zhang Ruochen was very shocked.

The Thousand Star Maiden's voice sounded in Zhang Ruochen's ears. "Unfortunately what?"

Her voice was soft but very clear. She seemed to speak right beside him.

She really did hear!

He was shocked, but he didn't show it on his face. He just replied coolly, "I don't think I have to tell you."

“Two top talents are secretly talking about me, but I’m not qualified to know the result of your discussion?”

If it was any other cultivator discussing, the Thousand Star Maiden wouldn’t care, but Zhang Ruochen and Feng Yan were different. One was the Time and Space Descendant; the other was from a super-ancient race. They didn’t speak for no reason.

Judging from Zhang Ruochen’s tone, it seemed like she had some fatal weakness.

This was why she was curious and took the initiative to ask Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and didn’t reply.

The Thousand Star Maiden’s slender brows creased, and she was thinking, Could this person know that I can hear them, so he purposely said that to attract my attention? If that’s the case, then Saint Monk Xumi’s descendant really isn’t much.

A burly and bearded man walked to her side. “Your Highness, we should go. Fairy Tianchu and Lady Huairou have been waiting for you at Qingming Island.

“Let’s go!”

The Thousand Star Maiden shot a hard look at Zhang Ruochen. Then she gracefully entered an ancient carriage. Snow-white birds pulled the carriage into the sky and she disappeared in the clouds.

Seeing her leave, many cultivators there sighed. They probably would never see this lofty maiden again.

Different people had different fates.

To other cultivators, they were indeed powerful talents. But compared to the Thousand Star Maiden, they were no different from common people.

Dragons were in the clouds. People were on the ground.

An ant would never know how far heaven was when looking up.

Zhang Ruochen sighed. With Feng Yan beside him, he couldn't leave at all. He'd have to find another chance to kill the Thousand Star Maiden.

Feng Yan heard him sigh and misinterpreted it, thinking Zhang Ruochen was sad about the Thousand Star Maiden leaving. Smiling, he asked, "What did she secretly say to you again?"

"Would you believe me if I said we were just chatting?"

"Of course not," Feng Yan said. "Before, Wang Xu tried to pursue her. With his appearance, talent, and status, he could get any girl. But after visiting countless times, he never even saw the Thousand Star Maiden. Now, she voluntarily talked to a man twice. This is incredible. And you just tell me that you were chatting? You're a horrible friend. Do you think I would tell Lady Mu about this?"

"Are you threatening me?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"No," Feng Yan said. "It's obviously you being a bad friend. If you really are interested in the Thousand Star Maiden, I can provide some help."

"What help?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"I know where she's staying for now."

"Where?"

"Qingming Island, the cultivation land of Huairou, wife of a godly disciple."

Zhang Ruochen's expression flickered. "It seems that you're very interested in her. You researched so carefully."

"Aren't you trying to find out too? Seems like you're more interested."

"Perhaps!"

Without meaning to, Zhang Ruochen looked toward the Ocean of Truth. He saw that the Dark Fool Xiang Chunan was still in the fourth level. He was still spinning in the whirlpool but hadn't fallen.

Feng Yan had a surprised expression. "A strange figure."

It was indeed incredible to survive so long in the whirlpool.

“Oh, Brother Zhang, you crossed the fourth level in your first year at the Truth Heavenly Domain,” Feng Yan said. “You’ll definitely get great rewards.”

“Let’s go get it from the saint pavilion now.”

Zhang Ruochen and Feng Yan visited the saint pavilion. After receiving his rewards for this time, he was much happier.

After crossing the second level, he received two months in the Truth Godly Palace and six spots for Guanghai Field.

After crossing the third level, he received four months and 12 extra spots.

After crossing the fourth level, he received eight months and 24 extra spots.

This way, when the Truth Godly Palace opened again, he’d be able to cultivate there for one more year. It was enough to make great improvements in the Saintly Way and Way of Truth. By then, he could cross the fifth level and sixth...

He also worked to get 42 cultivation spots for Guanghai Field. Su Jing and the others would probably go crazy with excitement.

He carved a communication rune and sent it back to the Moon Goddess Dojo to tell Su Jing to come and get the 42 badges.

Chapter 1642 - Thousand-Mile Vision

Chapter 1642: Thousand-Mile Vision

After arriving back on Kongling Island, Feng Yan set up a separate refining chamber for Zhang Ruochen. There were two maidens guarding outside to serve Zhang Ruochen at any time.

Zhang Ruochen was really confused by Feng Yan's hospitality, and he was always on guard.

A first disciple from Truth Godly Palace had a very solid background, yet he befriended him, the Time and Space Descendant who was enemy to many, which was tough to understand for Zhang Ruochen.

Was he really just friendly? Or was he up to something else?

“Feng Yan had several chances to take me down after we met each other, but he's never done it. It seems he doesn't belong to the sinister power.”

Zhang Ruochen couldn't figure out why, so he had to suppress all his questions.

...

After saying goodbye to Zhang Ruochen, Feng Yan walked to the splendid saint palace at the center of Kongling Island.

The gate to the saint palace opened automatically, then he walked in.

The godly disciple, Feng Xi, was wearing a Crane Blue Sky Cape and a veil, sitting beside the chessboard and studying the situation on the board.

She didn't turn around hearing the stepping sound, and instead, she said, “Were you put down?”

“You've heard of it already?” Feng Yan forced a smile.

Feng Xi sneered and said, “I’ve received messages from at least ten godly disciples that Thousand Star Maiden has crossed the fifth level of the ocean domain, yet the one with three heads and six arms from the Feng family has already crossed the fourth level. Don’t you find it humiliating?”

“How is that humiliating? Thousand Star Maiden is a talented person that might not come for ten thousand years...”

Before Feng Yan finished talking, Feng Xi interjected, “I find it humiliating. You could’ve saved face if you didn’t try to cross the Ocean of Truth with her, but now, you’re nothing but a foil for her. Do you know what a stepping stone is? It’s you.”

Feng Yan was very timid in front of his sister. He stroked his nose and whispered, “I’m not the only stepping stone...”

Feng Xi shot Feng Yan a glare, then he immediately stopped talking.

After a while, Feng Xi said, “God-Naming Platform Conference is conducted only once every ten years. It’s an incredible opportunity. However, you’ll definitely run into danger if you want to gain something there. Prepare yourself and don’t humiliate our family again.”

“Okay. I’ll go prepare myself now.”

Feng Yan rushed out of the saint palace, and he only felt relieved after walking out the door. He looked up at the sky and whispered, “I wouldn’t have come meet her if I knew she was going to scold me like that.”

...

“I’ve finally finished making it.”

Zhang Ruochen was sweating as he looked at the Shining Sun Arrow in his hand, smiling.

It took him more than half a day to finish crafting three time prints, which made that arrow extremely lethal.

The arrow itself was a physical attack, while the time prints on the arrow were almost impossible to defend against.

Zhang Ruochen made that arrow specially to fight Thousand Star Maiden. That girl might've refined Way of the Void, so he couldn't engage in close combat against her.

If he could kill Thousand Star Maiden from afar, it'd be perfect.

Zhang Ruochen then left Kongling Island and rushed toward Qingming Island with his Blue Sky Bow and Shining Sun Arrow.

Both Qingming Island and Kongling Island were floating in the sky, and neither of them was more than ten thousand miles away from Truth Godly Palace. The saintly way rules were vigorous there, making them the perfect place to refine.

The godly disciples who owned islands less than ten thousand miles away from Truth Godly Palace were all exceptional among their peers.

It was very dangerous to try to kill someone in the refining place of a godly disciple. However, Zhang Ruochen had no choice but to do that.

Both of them had Mysteries of Truth, so they'd try everything to kill each other.

Zhang Ruochen would be at a disadvantage if Thousand Star Maiden struck first.

Zhang Ruochen changed his appearance and put on his mask. Then, he took out the seed of the True Hallucination Flower. Suddenly, his body vanished in the air.

Zhang Ruochen didn't rush to strike after arriving on Qingming Island. Instead, he hid himself and observed everything on the island first.

There was a defense formation on the island, so ordinary power couldn't penetrate it.

However, with the help of Fire God Gloves, Shining Sun Arrow might be able to pierce through the defense reticle and kill Thousand Star Maiden.

Zhang Ruochen found a tall mountain which was at the same level as Qingming Island, making it the perfect place to strike.

After two days of observation and waiting, Zhang Ruochen finally saw Thousand Star Maiden on Qingming Island.

Thousand Star Maiden was walking with two other beautiful women. They were ethereal like angels, and even the distance of dozens of miles couldn't shield their beauty.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't in the mood to appreciate their faces. Instead, he grabbed Blue Sky Bow and Shining Sun Arrow.

Crimson fire emerged on the two gloves of Fire God Armor as if there were two miniature suns, giving Zhang Ruochen unprecedented power.

Zhang Ruochen had no idea what kind of saint weapons Blue Sky Bow and Shining Sun Arrow were. He only knew that as his cultivation became higher, their power also got stronger.

Bang Bang!

Zhang Ruochen had to use all his strength to draw the Blue Sky Bow.

Just as Zhang Ruochen located Thousand Star Maiden and was about to shoot the arrow, he heard someone laugh behind him. "Finally, I've found you, brother. Haha."

Xiang Chunan showed up out of nowhere and tapped Zhang Ruochen on his shoulder.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen shook his arm and Shining Sun Arrow, and then, the Shining Sun Arrow was shot toward Qingming Island, trailing.

Boom!

Shining Sun Arrow was indeed immensely powerful, and it pierced through the formation reticle of Qingming Island.

However, because of Xiang Chunan, it was derailed and hit the bottom of Qingming, shaking the giant island, and then, mud and stones fell from the sky.

The owner of Qingming Island, Qie Huairou, released freezing power and yelled, "Who was it?! How dare you attack Qingming Island?"

Qie Huairou was enraged. She grabbed a saint sword and flew to dozens of miles away like a trace of white light, wielding her sword.

Boom!

The mountain that Zhang Ruochen was standing on collapsed.

The noise Qie Huairou made shocked the monks a thousand miles away from her. They saw the floating island surrounded by saint Qi lose a corner, with palaces collapsing.

They were shocked and curious. Who dared attack Qingming Island?

Qingming Island was less than ten thousand miles away from Truth Godly Palace, making it a central area. Even supreme saints and the assassins from the Three Assassination Organizations didn't dare try kill someone in this area.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

The formation on Qingming Island had been fully activated, forming twelve layers of defense reticles.

All the monks were anxious, preparing to fight.

Thousand Star Maiden still looked very calm. She grabbed the Shining Sun Arrow that was about to fly away, studying it in her hands.

“Um...?”

Ordinary monks couldn't see the time print at all. However, Thousand Star Maiden had a pair of special saint eyes, which helped her to see the three time prints on the arrow.

“Was it him?”

Thousand Star Maiden looked curious.

She then raised her head and looked to the distance. She curved her lips and forced a smile. “Why did that guy make such a scene?”

Thousand Star Maiden had already figured that it was Zhang Ruochen who shot the arrow.

However, Zhang Ruochen didn't aim correctly, so Thousand Star Maiden didn't think he was trying to kill her. Instead, she reckoned Zhang Ruochen might be into her, so he pulled a cheap game like this.

Thousand Star Maiden was so confident because too many guys fell for her after one look, so it wasn't strange that Zhang Ruochen followed the same path.

How ridiculous, Thousand Star Maiden thought.

Qie Huairou flew back to Qingming Island with her saint Qi and said, "That guy was very fast. He already got away when I got there, and he didn't leave any traces. I'm not sure who the one that holds grudges against us is."

Thousand Star Maiden handed the Shining Sun Arrow to Qie Huairou with a smile on her face.

"Is this the arrow that broke the defense on Qingming Island?"

"That's right."

Qie Huairou infused the Shining Sun Arrow with her mind power, which amazed her. She said, "What an extraordinary arrow... The techniques used to make this arrow are very special. I can't even figure out how many inscriptions there are inside.

"This arrow alone is invaluable."

Thousand Star Maiden didn't voice her speculation. After all, she wasn't sure that it was Zhang Ruochen who shot the arrow.

"Could I have the arrow? I want to study it a bit." Thousand Star Maiden smiled.

Qie Huairou didn't find anything strange on the Shining Sun Arrow, so she handed it to Thousand Star Maiden.

Thousand Star Maiden's eyes gleamed, holding the Shining Sun Arrow. The owner of the arrow would definitely come for her again as she was in possession of such a valuable arrow.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed Xiang Chunan and fled to hundreds of miles away, performing spatial move dozens of times. He

didn't stop until he was certain that Qie Huairou didn't catch up with him.

Fortunately, he had become a saint king, so he could teleport himself very fast each time, making it easy for him to escape.

He brought Xiang Chunan with him because he might expose Zhang Ruochen if he fell into Qie Huairou's hands.

After they stopped running, Zhang Ruochen summoned the Abyss Ancient Sword and pointed it at Xiang Chunan, looking solemn.

"What are you doing, brother? There's no grudge between us. Why are you pointing your sword at me?" Xiang Chunan found it hard to understand.

Zhang Ruochen looked at him fiercely and asked, "Why were you there?"

Xiang Chunan was dazed, then he said, "I heard Truth Godly Palace is about to hold a God-Naming Platform Conference in the near future, and I want to go there and have a look, which is why I've been staying in Truth Godly Palace. I've been wandering around outside today, and I saw you standing on the mountain."

"No way it can be that coincidental."

Xiang Chunan said, "It's a great coincidence, which means we're destined to become sworn brothers!"

Zhang Ruochen couldn't stab him, seeing how sincere Xiang Chunan was. He then said, "I surrounded myself with the illusions formed by the seed of True Hallucination Flower, and I've changed my body shape using a secret technique. How did you see through the illusions and recognize me with just a random look?"

Xiang Chunan blinked and guffawed. "To be honest, I have Thousand-Mile Vision. No illusions within a thousand miles of me can deceive me, including any transformation technique."

Chapter 1643 - Sworn

Chapter 1643: Sworn

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

It was Zhang Ruochen's first time hearing about such a miraculous Thousand-Mile Vision.

Thus, he experimented with it.

He used the illusion and Traceless 36 Changes at the same time, activating all the power of the Unfounded Pearl, but Xiang Chunan could see through it every time. His eyes were even more powerful than the Yin Yang Mirror.

Is there really such a coincidence in the world?

Zhang Ruochen rubbed his temples, feeling a headache.

Why did he have to run into the Dark Fool?

He'd finally carved three time prints onto the Shining Sun Arrow. But instead of killing the Thousand Star Maiden, he'd lost the fatal arrow and even alarmed her.

Now, it would be even harder to try and assassinate her.

Xiang Chunan glanced at Zhang Ruochen again and grinned. "Brother, I'm confused. Why are you spying on a group of ugly women from so far away? Why did you shoot an arrow at them? Are they your enemies?"

"Ugly women?"

Zhang Ruochen looked at Xiang Chunan strangely.

Even though he wasn't interested in the famous Thousand Star Maiden, Fairy Tianchu and Lady Huairou, he still had to admit that they were definitely top beauties. There were countless talents who pursued them.

If they were ugly, then there probably weren't any pretty girls in the entire world.

“Yeah, so ugly!” Xiang Chunan said. “Look at how pale they are, and their bodies have dents everywhere. They're not round at all. And their faces hurt my eyes. The ugliest one at least knows her place and covers up half her face with a cloth. Otherwise, she'd get beaten up if she walked in our village with those looks.”

Shocked, Zhang Ruochen laughed inwardly. If the Thousand Star Maiden knew that she was being judged like this, then she'd probably chase Xiang Chunan to the end of the universe.

Coughing dryly, Zhang Ruochen asked, “Then what's a beautiful girl to you?”

Xiang Chunan's eyes brightened and he started drooling. Imagining something, he said dreamily, “First, their bodies have to be perfect. Their waists can't be any thinner than a bucket. And they have to be as dark as me, need a big face, thick lips, big ears, and a short neck. And their legs—this is important. They can't be too thin. They have to be as thick as a bowl's mouth.”

Then he sighed. “Unfortunately, it's too hard to find a beautiful girl like that. The girls I've seen after coming to the Truth Heavenly Domain are each uglier than the last. I'm in despair.”

Zhang Ruochen touched his nose and studied Xiang Chunan for a long time before asking, “Have you seen top beauties like that?”

“Of course!” Xiang Chunan said seriously. “My teacher's wife and junior sister are all top beauties.”

It dawned on Zhang Ruochen. “So, your teacher's wife taught you about beauties?”

“No, it's my teacher.”

Then, Xiang Chunan continued, “Ever since childhood, he told me that his wife is the most beautiful woman of the thousands of worlds. My junior sister would be the top beauty of the next generation. Brother, I've never told anyone else about this

secret. If you ever meet my junior sister, don't get any ideas about her just because she's so pretty. She's already mine."

Xiang Chunan was both proud and a bit guarded.

Zhang Ruochen looked pitifully at him. It was so sad. His standard of beauty had been twisted since young. His teacher was probably a pitiful man too.

This Dark Fool probably came from a diverse place isolated from the rest of the universe. His previous actions probably weren't on purpose either.

Otherwise, instead of patting Zhang Ruochen on the shoulder from the back, he would've smashed his skull apart.

Zhang Ruochen didn't continue asking. He prepared to leave and flew toward Kongling Island.

"Brother, wait!" Xiang Chunan caught up with him.

"What are you following me for?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"Didn't we say that we'll be sworn brothers?" Xiang Chunan asked.

"But we just met each other."

"If we're fated, then why does time matter?"

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen actually didn't know how to refute him.

The Dark Fool was extremely fast. Even if Zhang Ruochen used the Spatial Move, he could still catch up. Zhang Ruochen couldn't get rid of him.

Thus, he stopped, preparing to talk to him.

Xiang Chunan caught up breathlessly. Seeing Zhang Ruochen waiting in the front, he grew excited. "Brother, you agree?"

Zhang Ruochen put his hands behind his back. "It's not a good thing to follow me. I have a lot of enemies and some of them are really powerful. They're extremely cruel. Not only would they attack me, they'd also attack the people beside me. Aren't you afraid that you'll die the day after you become my sworn brother?"

Zhang Ruochen really didn't want to harm a Dark Fool who didn't have any calculative thoughts. The sight of his senior brothers and sisters' heads hanging on the Yin and Yang Palace's gate was still fresh in his mind.

Xiang Chunan immediately grew furious. "Am I the type of person to be afraid of trouble? Brother, tell me who your enemy is. I'll go kill them now!"

This Dark Fool never went according to what was normal, making Zhang Ruochen chuckle wryly. He couldn't do anything except say, "Fine. If you want to follow me, then do it!"

Xiang Chunan happily walked to Zhang Ruochen's side. Laughing, he said loudly, "To be honest, I don't know anyone in the Truth Heavenly Domain. I don't even have a place to stay, so at night, I just find a tree and sleep until morning."

"You don't cultivate at night?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"I do, but you still have to sleep when needed. Otherwise, how boring would life be?"

Zhang Ruochen sighed. He suddenly realized that Xiang Chunan wasn't the pitiful one. It was himself.

He wished he didn't have to care or worry about anything, didn't have to cultivate with all his life, and could sleep peacefully on a tree.

But he couldn't even remember the last time he'd slept.

Xiang Chunan suddenly thought of something and asked, "Brother, I have a question I must ask you. Do you know what the Mysteries of Truth are?"

Zhang Ruochen stopped and looked at him. "You received the Mysteries of Truth?" he asked seriously.

"Yeah," Xiang Chunan said in annoyance. "When I was crossing the Ocean of Truth, every time I passed a level, a damned voice would ring out in my mind, saying I received some Mysteries of Truth. And then weird light would get into me. But no matter how I asked, he never told me what I could do with it."

Zhang Ruochen shot a deep look at Xiang Chunan. Could this Dark Fool really have crossed the Ocean of Truth for the first time?

He could pass the third level on his first try?

The Moon Goddess once told him that the Mysteries of Truth in the world never changed. It was always “one.” Every cultivator who possessed it would try their hardest to collect more. When they collected one percent, they would become a Messenger of Truth.

So, all cultivators with the Mysteries of Truth had to keep it a secret.

If it was revealed, people would try to kill them.

“Mysteries of Truth can help a cultivator comprehend the Saintly Way and has many benefits,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“Anyway, just remember that you should never mention it to anyone, or else you’ll bring about disaster for yourself.”

“Is there a need to be so careful?”

“Yes,” Zhang Ruochen replied firmly.

Even someone like the Moon Goddess had repeatedly warned Zhang Ruochen, so it was obvious that having the Mysteries of Truth was an incredible secret.

Thankfully, the Dark Fool had met him or else he’d probably already be dead by now.

Xiang Chunan didn’t know that Zhang Ruochen had the Mysteries of Truth. With his personality, he wouldn’t be a threat either, so Zhang Ruochen naturally wouldn’t go provoke him.

His main reason for wanting to assassinate the Thousand Star Maiden was because he wanted to get rid of a potential threat.

After all, the Thousand Star Maiden wasn’t the same type of person as Xiang Chunan.

“You went to the Ocean of Truth as soon as you arrived at the Truth Heavenly Domain?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Yeah!”

Curious, Zhang Ruochen asked, “But you seem to have very high attainment in the Way of Truth. Where did you learn it from?”

“My teacher taught me.”

Then Xiang Chunan said, “When I was really, really little, my teacher had me look at some pictures and study what they meant.”

“What pictures?”

“Some weird pictures and words carved on tables, walls, and stools. They made my head hurt, but I got beaten if I didn’t look at them.” Xiang Chunan shook his head in after-fear.

Zhang Ruochen frowned and started thinking.

According to what Xiang Chunan said, the images on the tables, walls, and stools must contain the Way of Truth.

But even a god could only come to the Truth Heavenly Domain and carve down their understanding of the Way of Truth into images. Without the Truth Godly Palace’s support, even a god wouldn’t be able to make the image appear outside of the domain.

What kind of existence was Xiang Chunan’s teacher?

After that, Zhang Ruochen asked some more questions. Xiang Chunan could answer some, but for others, even he didn’t know the answer.

For example, Zhang Ruochen asked him where his village was.

Xiang Chunan only knew that it was in an undeveloped mountain.

The night before coming to the Truth Heavenly Domain, Xiang Chunan and his teacher became very drunk. When he woke up, he wasn’t in the village anymore. He was in the Truth Heavenly Domain, sleeping naked under a tree.

“The cultivators in the Truth Heavenly Domain aren’t like the ones in your village,” Zhang Ruochen said. “After coming

here, you have to be careful. Don't tell people about everything."

"Hehe. Brother, your tone is just like my teacher's wife. I know you're a good man." Xiang Chunan didn't seem to care about Zhang Ruochen's words. He was still grinning widely.

"People aren't good for no reason in this world. People aren't bad for no reason either."

With that, Zhang Ruochen sped up. He returned to Kongling Island soon.

Then Zhang Ruochen introduced Xiang Chunan to Feng Yan. The latter was quite a good host and liked to make friends, so he quickly became close to Xiang Chunan. They had a nice conversation and had someone bring over the top wine to drink together.

"Brother Zhang, it's so boring with only us two drinking," Xiang Chunan complained. "Why don't you drink at all?"

Zhang Ruochen sat in a corner of the pavilion. "It's not that I don't drink. It's just that drinking ruins things. There's no reason to drink for fun."

Xiang Chunan pointed at the sky. "The moon is so round and big tonight. It's a great day. How about us three become sworn brothers? From now on, we'll share our happiness and difficulties."

Feng Yan was moved. "With the ivory moon in the sky and a soft breeze, it is indeed a rare kind of night. How fated are we to be able to be together?"

Then Feng Yan poured a cup of wine and pushed it toward Zhang Ruochen. "If Brother Zhang deems us worthy and is willing to become brothers with us, drink this wine."

Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan both stared at Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen frowned. Xiang Chunan was careless and it was understandable that he kept talking about being sworn brothers. But Feng Yan was a logical and smart person. Why was he getting into it too?

If they were sworn, then they would be involved with each other.

Just as Zhang Ruochen was hesitating and thinking that it was a brash decision, Mu Lingxi walked over from the distant lights. She was like a beautiful elf in the night. Her sweet voice rang out. "Since everyone is so enthusiastic and it's a rare full moon, stop hesitating and drink this wine!"

Chapter 1644 - God-Gazing Mountain

Chapter 1644: God-Gazing Mountain

Under the moon.

Mu Lingxi walked into the pavilion and handed the wine cup to Zhang Ruochen.

Her hands were smooth like jade and her eyes glinted with gorgeous light.

Zhang Ruochen immediately stood up and looked more mellow. He took the wine cup, looked to Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan, and said, "It's not that I don't want to become sworn brothers with you. I have a lot of concerns myself, so I don't want to bring you guys trouble."

Feng Yan smiled and said, "You're insulting me by saying that. I'm not afraid of trouble."

Bang!

Xiang Chunan slapped the table and said, "I'd do anything for my brothers, no matter how dangerous it can be. Your trouble is our trouble, and I'm not joking about it!"

Zhang Ruochen then said, "Okay, now that you guys said so, I'll have this drink now with you!"

"Wait, let's drink up together!"

Xiang Chunan and Feng Yan also raised their cups, and they finished their drinks at the same time.

Xiang Chunan smashed the cup on the ground and asked, "Who should be the big brother, the middle brother, and who's the little brother?"

Feng Yan said, "If you decide it by age, it's too tacky, but if we use power to decide, it'll damage our relationship. How about we use a different strategy?"

“What strategy?”

Feng Yan said, “The God-Naming Platform Conference will begin the day after tomorrow. We’ll decide it by seeing who gains the most in the conference. How about that?”

Xiang Chunan said without hesitating, “Okay! Sounds good!”

Zhang Ruochen smiled. “Brother Feng, you’re a disciple of Truth Godly Palace, so you must know much more about the God-Naming Platform Conference, so you have an edge already. Do you want to be the big brother?”

“That’s right. I want to be the big brother as well,” said Xiang Chunan.

“Rest assured. Now that we’ve become sworn brothers, I’ll tell you guys everything I know about the God-Naming Platform tonight.”

...

Zhang Ruochen, Feng Yan and Xiang Chunan finished all the alcohol on Kongling Island, and there were alcohol bottles everywhere inside and outside the pavilion.

Enjoy your life to the fullest and raise your wine cups to the moon.

Sometimes, you needed to put down everything that bothered you and do the simplest thing.

Zhang Ruochen was incredibly happy tonight. He felt like someone who finally got out of a swamp, relaxed as never before.

He let loose and got drunk.

Probably because of the change in his state of mind, Zhang Ruochen found that he had hundreds of more saintly way rules in his body on the next day, and he now had forty-two hundred saintly way rules in total.

He could easily feel that his cultivation had reached a new level.

Zhang Ruochen operated his exercises, and the saint Qi in his body rapidly flowed. He formed a fist print, and a gigantic

saint Qi storm was formed.

“Have I become a second-step saint king?” Zhang Ruochen looked pleased.

After becoming a saint king, comprehension was the most important. Also, the monks’ state of mind mattered. Sometimes, the monks could be stuck at a level for several years, but sometimes, their cultivation could surge overnight.

He wasn’t sure whether he’d reached a new level or not as he couldn’t head to Nine Steps to the Sky Path. However, it was still amazing that his cultivation surged.

There were ancient trees with red flowers on them in the yard, giving dimming light.

Mu Lingxi was standing under the tree, and she smiled seeing Zhang Ruochen wake up. “Uncle Jing came and took forty-two tokens when you were still drunk, and he thanked you on behalf of the entire Guanghan Field.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “That’s nothing.”

“To Guanghan Field, it’s significant. That King Wuhan won’t make things difficult for you anymore,” said Mu Lingxi.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and held Mu Lingxi in his embrace.

Mu Lingxi pretended to struggle, and then, she leaned her blushing face against Zhang Ruochen’s chest like a cat. She whispered, “Are you wondering why I persuaded you to become sworn brothers with them?”

“I know why,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Mu Lingxi said, “I know you don’t want to become their sworn brothers because of Empress Chi Yao and the sinister power, and that you’ll bring trouble to any monk who’s close to you, but you’re the only one I care about, so I hope you can have friends who can share your burden and fight side by side with you. Then you don’t need to carry all the pressure by yourself. Am I being too selfish?”

Mu Lingxi looked anxious, as she was worried that Zhang Ruochen would be pissed.

Zhang Ruochen said, “You can only expect others to treat you sincerely if you do the same thing. I won’t tell them about my enemies, as I’ll deal with them myself.”

“Sorry.”

Mu Lingxi started to tear up.

Zhang Ruochen kissed Mu Lingxi on her neck and smiled.

“Don’t say anything like that. You were only trying to help, weren’t you? However, please try a different way next time.”

“Okay.”

Mu Lingxi nodded.

...

The God-Naming Platform was one of the few ancient remains in Heaven World.

It was said that Heaven World built Truth Godly Palace here because of the God-Naming Platform.

However, the God-Naming Platform was almost always sealed, so even the disciples from Truth Godly Palace didn’t know exactly where the God-Naming Platform was. It would only be revealed every ten years during the God-Naming Platform Conference.

A crimson cloud boat was sailed to Kongling Island on the morning of the God-Naming Platform Conference. It was led by Feng Xi, Feng Yan, Zhang Ruochen, Xiang Chunan and Mu Lingxi, who had boarded the boat.

And besides, there were also twenty-two first disciples who lived on Kongling Island that boarded the Cloud Boat with them.

They were appendages to Feng Xi.

All those first disciples were extraordinary, which amazed Zhang Ruochen.

Every first disciple was a top-tier talent with great status in Truth Heavenly Domain. Supreme saints from the weak fields would greet them if they walked out of Truth Heavenly Domain.

Which showed how prominent Feng Xi was in Truth Heavenly Domain, otherwise, there wouldn't be so many first disciples following her.

That Feng Xi was very forceful and aloof, and she didn't say a word on the boat.

As for the first disciples and Feng Yan, nobody dared talk loudly as if they were subordinates in front of a queen.

"She's very powerful, at least as strong as Ji Fanxin," Zhang Ruo Chen speculated.

The Cloud Boat was sailed again, heading to the floating islands to pick up people.

Almost all the floating islands were the refining places for godly disciples.

Godly disciples kept boarding the Cloud Boat. All of them looked dashing and proud as they were the best talents among their peers. However, the godly disciples had different numbers of first disciples following them.

Some godly disciples were only followed by one or two first disciples.

However, some godly disciples were followed by seven to eight first disciples.

As for Feng Xi, she was the only one who had more than twenty first disciples following her.

Gradually, there were more than twenty godly disciples on the Cloud Boat, so the sailor stopped picking up people from the floating islands, flying toward God-Gazing Mountain.

God-Gazing Mountain was only tens of thousands of miles away from Truth Godly Palace. It was yellowish brown without any plants on it. The mountain was steep and spectacular.

The part of the mountain that was above the clouds was more than seventy thousand feet tall. The Cloud Boat that was only five hundred feet long was nothing but a dark spot compared to that.

Zhang Ruochen and the others got off the Cloud Boat and climbed up on God-Gazing Mountain where they found lots of monks having gathered on the peak already. They came from different large fields, and they were wearing different saint blouses and armor. Besides, human monks only made up a small fraction of them. Most of the monks came from other races.

“Brother Zhang, brother Xiang, let’s meet in God-Naming Mountain.” Feng Yan smiled.

Xiang Chunan waved his hand and said, “Rest assured. We’re definitely powerful enough to pass the qualification test easily.”

Zhang Ruochen, as the priest of Guanghan Field, could get an invitation letter and get into the God-Naming Platform Conference.

However, he learned from Feng Yan that the God-Naming Platform Conference wasn’t just a conference, but a battle for ancient valuables, which made it very dangerous.

‘Zhang Ruochen’ was already put under the spotlight, so he would be targeted.

Which was why Zhang Ruochen decided to change his appearance and join the God-Naming Platform Conference in a different way.

Feng Xi, Feng Yan and the twenty-two first disciples walked to the southern cliff of God-Gazing Mountain.

There was an ancient godly door that was hundreds of feet tall on the edge of the southern cliff, and they arrived at God-Naming Platform after walking through the godly door.

There were sixteen generals wearing white saint armor on both sides of the godly door. Every monk who came here needed to show them their invitation to get in.

“Senior sister Feng.”

The sixteen generals in white saint armor greeted Feng Xi at the same time.

The godly disciples who went through the door weren't welcomed like this.

Feng Xi handed the generals the invitation letter and walked through the door with her hands behind her back. Her body vanished as she stepped in as if she was swallowed by the water screen.

The monks on God-Gazing Mountain all looked envious as they saw the people walking through the godly door. Anyone who received an invitation was definitely an exceptional talent under supreme saints.

That godly door represented power and identity.

The monks who didn't receive an invitation had to pass the qualification test to enter the conference.

A monk who was only around thirty years old exclaimed, "If I could join the God-Naming Platform Conference, it'd be the highlight of my entire life. I'd boast about it for the rest of my life after getting back to Tianyuan Field."

"I heard that most of the angels from 'Nine Angels Beauty Scroll' are going to join the God-Naming Platform Conference. If I could get into the God-Naming Platform and meet my Goddess Hundred Flower Fairy, I'd be willing to live a hundred less years," a young man carrying a saint sword said.

"There are seven forbidden lands in the God-Naming Platform where you can find the valuables left by ancient Gods. I heard someone dug out the fragment of a godly weapon in the last God-Naming Platform Conference."

"That's nothing. An elder in my family told me that someone trespassed on Dark Demon Well ten thousand years ago and released an ancient demonic God, who later joined Truth Godly Palace and became one of the top-tier beings in Truth Godly Palace."

...

The monks were waiting on God-Gazing Mountain while sharing the stories they'd heard before.

Everyone was very excited as they wanted to pass the qualification test to enter the God-Naming Platform Conference, and they all had different goals.

“Look! There are nine golden dragons dragging a divine carriage,” someone screamed.

Everyone looked to the Cloud Ocean.

There were nine giant golden dragons that were thousands of feet long pulling an ancient carriage a thousand miles away, and the forces coming from the ancient carriage were terrific.

“That golden dragon carriage is a Nine-Yao ten thousand patterns saint weapon.”

“Gosh! Even some supreme saints don’t have Nine-Yao ten thousand patterns saint weapons. Who’s the owner of that golden dragon carriage?”

Mu Lingxi stared at that ancient golden carriage, looking confused. She knew that it was Zhang Ruochen’s Golden Dragon Carriage, and only the emperors of Sacred Central Empire were qualified to ride it.

How did the Golden Dragon Carriage fall into the hands of other monks?

And besides, Zhang Ruochen had never brought it up before.

Boom!

The Golden Dragon Carriage arrived at God-Gazing Mountain in the end. Someone inside the carriage lifted the carriage curtain made of saint gold with her ethereal hands.

Before the beauty in the carriage walked out, her fragrance had been spread everywhere, permeating the entire God-Gazing Mountain, mesmerizing people.

Beautiful flowers started to grow on the barren rocks and mountains, and the mist in the air formed white pedals, falling onto the ground.

Seeing an amazing scene like this, some male monks figured out who was inside the golden dragon carriage, and they were exhilarated.

Chapter 1645 - Amazingly Ugly

Chapter 1645: Amazingly Ugly

The Hundred Flower Fairy Ji Fanxin walked out of the Golden Dragon Carriage and the entire God-Gazing Mountain was in an uproar.

Unfortunately, no one could see her features clearly. They could only watch her backside walk toward the divine gate.

Zhang Ruochen had a wry smile. This Hundred Flower Fairy didn't pretend to be polite at all. She actually used the Golden Dragon Carriage as her own carriage.

I must find a chance to reclaim the carriage.

Suddenly, he noticed Mu Lingxi's eyes trained on his face.

He tensed slightly, understanding what was wrong. "It's a long story. I'll tell you the reason later."

Mu Lingxi didn't continue asking, because she knew that the Golden Dragon Carriage was significant to Zhang Ruochen. It wouldn't fall in the hands of another cultivator unless he had no other choice.

However, she was curious whether this famous Hundred Flower Fairy was Zhang Ruochen's friend or foe.

If she was a foe, then she'd definitely stolen the Golden Dragon Carriage from Zhang Ruochen.

If she was a friend, then their relationship...

Just as Mu Lingxi's thoughts were going crazy, Zhang Ruochen passed a defensive scroll into her hands. "It'll definitely be dangerous after entering the God-Naming Platform Conference. This is four Heavenly Sword Runes. Each one is as strong as a third step Saint King's full power attack."

Seeing his action, Mu Lingxi fluttered her lashes and chuckled. “Are you feeling guilty and giving me the Heavenly Sword Runes to make up for it?”

Zhang Ruochen didn't deny it. “To be honest, I bought these four runes from Ji Fanxin.”

Mu Lingxi was very wise. Hearing Zhang Ruochen's words, she suddenly thought of something. “Did you buy all the runes to attack the Yin and Yang Palace from her?”

“Most of them,” Zhang Ruochen replied.

Mu Lingxi's eyes reddened slightly. She'd guessed what had happened.

In order to conquer the Moon Goddess Dojo and take back the heads of his seniors and friends, Zhang Ruochen must have sold the Golden Dragon Carriage to the Hundred Flower Fairy.

Very few dared to help Zhang Ruochen and Guanghan Field. In this exchange, Zhang Ruochen must have been taken advantage of her.

But she didn't do anything to help with the Moon Goddess Dojo.

“What are you thinking about?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“N...nothing.”

Mu Lingxi accepted the four Heavenly Sword Runes and gazed toward the gates. She stared at Ji Fanxin, thinking about something.

On the side, Xiang Chunan shook his head and sighed. “Each woman of the Truth Heavenly Domain is uglier than the last. Thankfully, she wore a veil, or else my eyes would probably have gone blind!”

His voice was really loud. Many murderous gazes were shot at him.

Even Ji Fanxin, who was about to walk through the gates, seemed to hear these words, her ears twitching. An intimidating cold aura was released from her body.

Every woman, no matter her cultivation, cared heavily about her features.

The Hundred Flower Fairy had countless pursuers. Some of those who thought they were strong rolled up their sleeves and released saintly might, surrounding Xiang Chunan.

Some who wanted to win over the Hundred Flower Fairy also grew furious and prepared to attack.

“How dare you blaspheme my goddess? You’re looking for death.”

“Who did you say is ugly? Say it again if you dare and I’ll knock all your teeth out!”

...

Xiang Chunan clenched his fists and rolled his wrists. “She’s ugly and I can’t say it?” he said loudly. “She thinks no one can see that she’s extremely ugly just because she’s wearing a veil? That skin, that figure, that aura is less than one-millionth of my junior sister!”

Zhang Ruochen saw that Ji Fanxin had stopped walking. Her slender frame trembled, evidently very angry.

He was afraid that Xiang Chunan would cause trouble and get attacked, so Zhang Ruochen rushed over to stop him from spouting nonsense.

“Brother Zhang, why are you stopping me?” Xiang Chunan asked furiously. “Why can’t I say the truth?”

“Just shut your mouth,” Zhang Ruochen ordered. He put his hands together and explained to everyone, “My brother’s eyes...are different from other people. He didn’t intend to offend the fairy. I’m sorry, I truly am.”

An Angel cultivator with two wings on his back scoffed. “Is an apology useful? He’s clearly provoking her. We must cut out his tongue.”

“Gouge out his eyes!” another cultivator exclaimed.

A young man with goat horns said coldly, “We cannot let this go today. The fairy obviously wouldn’t punish a lowly

creature, but I'm willing to do it for her.”

Zhang Ruochen grew unhappy. “Who did you call a lowly creature?”

Xiang Chunan couldn't stand it anymore. He rushed out, saying, “Brother Zhang, he's talking about me. Don't stop me anymore. I'm going to break all of the bones in his body.”

The horned man had a scornful expression. He laughed. “Okay, let's see who'll break who—ah...”

Before he could finish, he was sent into the air by Xiang Chunan's fist. The handsome face twisted in pain.

Xiang Chunan felt wronged. He was speaking the truth but was called a lowly creature, so his actions were very violent. He poured out his anger and pummeled the horned man with his steel fists.

Boom, boom.

The sounds of punches, bones breaking, and cries intermingled.

Zhang Ruochen didn't stop him. After all, he'd apologized, but they didn't plan on forgiving Xiang Chunan. In that case, they'd have to pay for it.

“Why offend someone with twisted beauty standards?” Zhang Ruochen sighed.

Moments later, the horned man was bruised and bleeding from Xiang Chunan's beating. He curled up on the ground, quivering like a small bird.

“A powerful half-step Saint King couldn't even fight back at the Dark Fool.”

“This Dark Fool's physical body is very strong. He might be a Taigu Remains.”

The cultivators who'd wanted to punish Xiang Chunan earlier were all terrified now. They grew hesitant, not wanting to follow in the horned man's path.

What if they were humiliated instead of becoming a hero?

Xiang Chunan's aura was very strong. Shining with dark gold light, he roared, "What are you looking at? Whoever wants to get beaten, come at me!"

The cultivators all retreated. They were afraid that they'd be Xiang Chunan's target if they were too close.

Ji Fanxin stared at Xiang Chunan with a thoughtful expression. Then her pretty frame shook and disappeared through the gates.

After she left, the cultivators lost all bravado and slipped into the crowd.

Only the horned man was still curled up on the ground, unable to move. He looked pitiful.

The man's companion wanted to go help him up, but they were intimidated by Xiang Chunan's menacing appearance.

Zhang Ruochen walked to Xiang Chunan's side and sent a message. "Watch your mouth in the future. More importantly, never comment on a woman's features. No matter how...ugly they are, don't say it out loud."

"Okay, I'll listen to you." Xiang Chunan patted his broad chest.

Zhang Ruochen knew that this guy was loud and careless. He agreed now, but he'd probably forget it all later, so Zhang Ruochen just chuckled and nodded.

In the following two hours, more and more cultivators came from all over. Some had invitations and went in directly. Even more stayed on God-Gazing Mountain to await the test.

"I heard that each year has different tests. I wonder what it'll be this year."

"Why isn't it starting yet? If we keep waiting, all the saint fruits and springs on the God-Naming Platform will be taken by the others."

...

Just as all the cultivators were getting impatient, Zhang Ruochen sensed something, so he looked up into the sky.

Ten balls of white light appeared above them.

At first, the lights were the size of fists. Gradually, they enlarged into ten white clouds. Each cloud had a 100-foot-wide white stone battle platform. They just hovered in the air.

The cultivators at the mountaintop noticed this change too. They all looked up at the platforms while discussing it.

“Are we going to have different rounds of fights?”

“I heard that very, very few cultivators can pass each year’s test. If it’s a fight competition, then probably only the top 3,000 cultivators can qualify.”

There were countless cultivators on the mountain. Even if the Truth Godly Palace could provide 3,000 cultivators, then it would still be intense competition.

Zhang Ruochen grew thoughtful. A competition wasn’t very possible.

There were only ten battle platforms in the sky. With how many people were there, even if every cultivator only went and walked around, then it would take countless days. The God-Naming Platform Conference would be long over.

What method would the Truth Godly Palace use to test the cultivators?

An old man with long whiskers appeared above the ten platforms.

He looked down at everyone. A benevolent smile appeared on his wrinkled face. “I am the spirit of Saint Spirit Book and the host of this test. Now, I will announce the rules of the test.

“The test is six hours long. During these six hours, everyone must enter the platform and defeat a saint projection of the same realm. The winners may enter the God-Naming Platform.”

Xiang Chunan was shocked. “That easy?”

“It’s not easy at all.” Zhang Ruochen shook his head.

“How is it not? Are the projections strong?”

“The entire test is only six hours,” Zhang Ruochen stated.
“There are so many cultivators here. It’s hard to reach the platform before others. In other words, more than 90% of cultivators won’t be able to step foot onto it.”

Mu Lingxi nodded. “Indeed. Becoming the first to get onto the platform is much harder than fighting the projection.”

Xiang Chunan finally understood. He glared at the old man.
“Damn old thing, you gave us such a hard task. This way, it doesn’t matter how strong you are. If I’m attacked by hundreds of cultivators, I won’t be able to fend them off at all.”

“You still have an advantage if you’re strong,” Mu Lingxi said, chuckling.

Zhang Ruochen smiled. “It’s definitely hard for some to get onto the platform before others. But for us, it’s extremely simple.”

Xiang Chunan grew overjoyed. “Brother Zhang, do you have some top trick?”

Chapter 1646 - Qualification Test

Chapter 1646: Qualification Test

“Be patient. Just let me tap on your shoulder.” Zhang Ruochen chuckled.

Xiang Chunan looked confused and said, “Why tap on my shoulder?”

Mu Lingxi knew what Zhang Ruochen intended to do. She smirked and said, “Seems like we’re at a huge advantage, but we need to be strong enough to defeat Saint Void Body.”

Xiang Chunan didn’t know what Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi were thinking about, which made him anxious.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t try to explain anything to him. Instead, he looked up at the old Confucius man standing in the air; he said he was the weapon spirit of the Saint Spirit Book.

What was the Saint Spirit Book?

How did its weapon spirit form a ‘Taoist Body’? What level was the Saint Spirit Book?

The ‘Taoist Bodies’ formed by the saint weapon spirits were as powerful as the saint body formed by human beings. They could even comprehend the saintly way rules and practice saint spells.

‘Taoist Bodies’ weren’t of flesh and blood. Instead, they were a combination of saint Qi, weapon Qi and some other mysterious power.

Zhang Ruochen heard the Abyss Ancient Sword talking to him. “That’s the weapon spirit of a supreme saint weapon, and the weapon spirit formed a Taoist Body tens of thousands of years ago. That Taoist Body is extremely powerful, being a supreme saint. The forces coming out of it suppress the weapon spirits of other saint weapons.”

“Really?”

Zhang Ruochen didn't feel any pressure from the old Confucius man.

“Only weapon spirits can feel that pressure,” the Abyss Ancient Sword said, intimidated.

Zhang Ruochen wouldn't doubt the Abyss Ancient Sword's judgment, but it was still thrilling that a weapon spirit had the cultivation of a supreme saint.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen recalled something and said, “The supreme saint weapons from Kunlun's Field has been in existence for a long time. Are their weapon spirits stronger than the Saint Spirit Book's?”

The Abyss Ancient Sword said, “I'm curious about that as well. Blue Sky Hovering Tower that's been suppressed in Universe World, Thousand-bone Empress's Void Sword and Moon Worship Demonic Sect's Life-Death Furnace don't seem to have their weapon spirits inside their bodies. There's only a slight trace weapon spirit consciousness left inside those saint weapons. I'm not sure whether the weapon spirits were annihilated or are dormant. If their weapon spirits are still inside, only a few creatures under Gods can defend themselves against that. Even supreme saints will be killed.”

What the Abyss Ancient Sword said shocked Zhang Ruochen.

When he was fighting Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion with the precious officials from Sacred Central Empire, Lingxiao Heavenly King was unstoppable when he was using his Blue Sky Hovering Tower. If it weren't for the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron, the army from Sacred Central Empire might've been annihilated already.

However, the Abyss Ancient Sword was telling Zhang Ruochen that the weapon spirit of Blue Sky Hovering Tower wasn't in the tower. If it was, how powerful could Blue Sky Hovering Tower be?

“The qualification test has now begun.” the old Confucius man shouted, which brought Zhang Ruochen back to reality.

A thick silver book showed up in the old Confucius man's hand.

The book looked ancient, as if it documented the histories of all time. Tumbling saint Qi gushed out of the book.

Whoosh!

The old Confucius man flipped the book.

And then, ten battle generals wearing silver armor flew out of the book, landing at the centers of the ten battle platforms.

They were ten Saint Void Bodies, releasing tumbling fighting forces.

Boom!

The monks on God-Gazing Mountain swarmed toward the ten battle platforms.

A fourth-step saint king from Evil Wolf Race held the iron rod in his hand and swept away everyone in his way. "This is my platform. Nobody can compete against me."

Fourth-step saint kings were extremely powerful beings, definitely top-tier among the monks on God-Gazing Mountain.

After knocking away more than ten monks, the great being from Evil Wolf Race was encircled before he could get onto the battle platform.

More than a hundred saint weapons flew toward him, shedding blood and making him fall off the platform.

The battles around each platform were brutal. Fortunately, the old Confucius Man was powerful enough to prevent deaths from happening.

Xiang Chunan was very anxious, as he also wanted to go have a fight. However, he suppressed that urge recalling what Zhang Ruochen told him. Just as he wanted to turn around and ask Zhang Ruochen...

Bang!

He was slapped on his shoulder.

After spinning, Xiang Chunan found himself standing on the platform already when he could see everything clearly again.

The monks fighting each other around the platform were all dazed.

Some of the monks couldn't help swearing. "Damn it! Did anyone see when the Dark Fool got onto the platform?"

"No! He just came out of nowhere!"

A saint king from Ape Race was about to land on the platform, and he was furious now. His eyes gleamed with hostility as he wanted to tear that Dark Fool apart.

Xiang Chunan gradually realized what happened. He guffawed and said, "Sorry. I own this platform now!"

The monks around that platform had to rush to other platforms now that it was occupied already.

The old Confucius man looked at Zhang Ruochen who was standing on God-Gazing Mountain, smiled, nodded, and said, "Impressive."

Zhang Ruochen looked to Mu Lingxi and said, "Let me send you there as well. Be careful, it isn't easy to defeat Saint Void Body."

"Why do you have so little confidence in me? I'm Moon Goddess's disciple and the inheritor of the Ice and Fire Phoenix." Mu Lingxi rolled her eyes, as she felt that Zhang Ruochen had underestimated her.

"Then I shall see the power of the Goddess."

Zhang Ruochen chuckled and tapped on Mu Lingxi's shoulder.

Whoosh!

The space power teleported Mu Lingxi to an empty battle platform, which caused another wave of complaints.

However, only a few used curse words this time, as it was an exquisite woman.

'Spatial Capture' was to some extent similar to 'Spatial Move'; they worked in a different way.

Spatial Move was used for Zhang Ruochen himself, the monks, and the objects around him.

As for Spatial Capture, Zhang Ruochen would always stand still and move the objects or monks from one location to another.

It was very similar to space transportation.

Space transportation required transportation formation as the distance was very far. As for Spatial Capture, it didn't need any formation so it could only move stuff to a limited distance. It wouldn't work if it was too far.

Spatial Capture was a move made by Zhang Ruochen based on space power and martial way capturing saint spells. It was more direct and fiercer than Spatial Twist.

However, Zhang Ruochen was still studying and trying to perfect the technique, so it had a lot of loopholes.

If the monks who were captured fought back, they could get out of Zhang Ruochen's Spatial Capture, so this move wouldn't help him much in a real battle at the moment.

He needed to refine more space rules in his body to make it better.

Zhang Ruochen didn't go challenge the Saint Void Body directly. Instead, he was watching Mu Lingxi's and Xiang Chunan's fights.

Xiang Chunan was much stronger than Zhang Ruochen thought as he managed to crush the Saint Void Body, turning it into mist.

Xiang Chunan received an invitation from the old Confucius man, jumped off the battle platform, and rushed toward Zhang Ruochen gleefully. "Thanks to you, brother, otherwise, I wouldn't have gotten the invitation."

"Too easy." Zhang Ruochen chuckled.

Xiang Chunan held the invitation tightly in his hand and looked curious. "Why didn't you go for the qualification test? How about you teaching me that secret technique, after which I can send you up there by tapping on your shoulder."

Xiang Chunan didn't seem to know about space power. Instead, he thought there was something magical about Zhang Ruochen's palms.

"No. I don't think you can learn that secret technique."

Zhang Ruochen witnessed how Xiang Chunan managed to crush the Saint Void Body with one strike. God knew how strong he was.

He immediately stopped Xiang Chunan from doing so.

He then pointed at a battle platform in the air and said, "I'm here to watch Lingxi fight. I'll go after she wins."

Xiang Chunan looked at Mu Lingxi who was fighting the Saint Void Body, and after hesitating for a while, he said, "Brother, I have something that I want to say to you for a long time."

"What?"

Zhang Ruochen was staring at the battle platform instead of turning around.

Xiang Chunan said, "How could you be attracted to my younger sister-in-law given how she looks? You really love her, don't you?"

"Um? I really love her... Wait. What did you just say?"

Zhang Ruochen immediately shot Xiang Chunan a glare and said, "What do you mean?"

Xiang Chunan felt a bit awkward. He chuckled and said, "This is just between us brothers. Please don't tell younger sister-in-law. I don't want to hurt her feelings."

Zhang Ruochen felt very awkward, and he was also irritated. If Mu Lingxi heard what he said, he wouldn't be able to stay sworn brothers with Xiang Chunan in the future.

Zhang Ruochen said seriously, "I'll pretend I never heard you say that. And don't say anything like that in the future."

"I understand. I'll never bring it up in the future. She's your girl after all. No matter how bad-looking she is, she's my family." Xiang Chunan smiled.

Zhang Ruochen then said, “Besides, although we’re sworn brothers, the ranking result hasn’t come out yet. Perhaps I’ll be the big brother in the future. Don’t you think it’s a bit too early to call Lingxi ‘younger sister-in-law’?”

Xiang Chunan was dazed and said, “Damn it! I almost forgot about that. Feng Yan’s already entered the God-Naming Platform and must’ve been collecting valuables. How could I let him be the big brother?”

Xiang Chunan immediately rushed toward the godly gate and said, “Brother, I won’t wait for you and younger sister-in-law anymore. I must become the big brother!”

Actually, Zhang Ruochen wasn’t interested in being the big brother at all, so he’d just let those two fight for that title.

Zhang Ruochen kept watching Mu Lingxi and the Saint Void Body fight, which was coming to an end. Mu Lingxi was at an absolute advantage, and she should be able to defeat it within ten moves.

Needless to say, Mu Lingxi had improved a lot after refining for a long time.

Chapter 1647 - God-Naming Platform, Outer South Yard

Chapter 1647: God-Naming Platform, Outer South Yard

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Pluto Ice Thread Rain.”

The Power of Pluto Ice that Mu Lingxi had struck out turned into thousands of strands. Like rain falling from the sky, they tied up the saint projection, making its body stiff and its movements slow.

Whoosh!

A slender hand held the phoenix feathers and dragged out a long trail of cold light. She swept it across and cut the projection’s waist.

After accepting the invitation from the old man, Mu Lingxi immediately spread her wings and flew out of the platform to meet with Zhang Ruochen.

“See?” she said a bit proudly, lifting her snowy chin. “A mere saint projection isn’t my match.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded and smiled. “Indeed, not bad.”

“Where’s the Dark Fool?”

“He smashed the projection with one punch,” Zhang Ruochen said. “He went to the God-Naming Platform long ago.”

“One punch?”

Mu Lingxi was shocked.

Earlier, she'd fought with the saint projection, so she knew how strong it was. She couldn't even imagine defeating it with one punch.

"How can there be so many shocking figures in Heaven World?" Mu Lingxi felt unconfident.

Zhang Ruochen chuckled. "If Heaven World didn't have so many shocking figures, it probably would have been defeated by Hell World long ago. Plus, you're already great. You don't have to compare yourself to them. If you have to, I'll do it for you."

Mu Lingxi's eyes twitched. "Oh, you're a shocking figure too. How many strikes do you intend to defeat the projection with?"

"How many do you think I should use?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"Um... Three?"

"Okay, three it is."

Zhang Ruochen flashed and disappeared from the spot. He reappeared on the platform that Mu Lingxi had fought the projection on.

With his hands behind his back and a smile, he looked around. All of the cultivators that had been preparing to enter the platform were stunned.

"What's going on? How did that human scholar get onto the platform?"

"Does he know an invisibility spell?"

"No, it might be spatial power. There must be a cultivator amongst us who's skilled in the spatial way and can instantly send beings onto the platform."

Zhang Ruochen gazed up and looked at the old man hovering in the air. "Should I challenge a saint projection?"

"You are at the pinnacle of the first step Saint King Realm. Your projection will be in the same realm."

The old man flipped open his scroll and tapped his finger on a page. Then a speck of light flew out of the paper and landed on the platform.

Whoosh!

The speck of light transformed into a general at the pinnacle of the first step Saint King Realm. He held a spear and looked very powerful.

“Pinnacle of the first step?” Zhang Ruochen was a bit disappointed.

He’d thought that he had reached the second step already.

The old man was very advanced and probably wouldn’t misjudge.

I must continue working hard. Zhang Ruochen sighed inwardly.

The projection was made out of Holy Qi and Rules of Saintly Way. His spear was like a sharp dragon. It transformed into a beam of light and stabbed straight at Zhang Ruochen’s forehead.

“Even though it’s a projection, it’s still very strong. It’s like a second step Saint King.” Zhang Ruochen was surprised.

What was shocking was that the old man had just flipped through the saint spirit scroll and could create such a strong projection. This was even more powerful than turning beans into soldiers.

Holding that scroll was like holding countless Saint Kings. One could easily destroy an ancient sect.

He couldn’t think about it too closely. If he did, it was enough to give him goosebumps.

With step techniques, Zhang Ruochen let the projection take two hits.

When it was about to attack a third time, Zhang Ruochen took a step beforehand and condensed the Sword Way Xuangang. He pointed his sword forward and stabbed through the projection’s skull, winning easily.

After receiving the invitation, Zhang Ruochen put his hands together and bowed to the old man. Then he flew down the podium and landed beside Mu Lingxi.

Mu Lingxi bit her lips, asking, “You could defeat him in one move. Why did you have to use three?”

“Because you told me to use three.” Zhang Ruochen smiled.

She knew that Zhang Ruochen said this on purpose, but Mu Lingxi still felt warm inside. Shyness appeared on her face. Thankfully, she had a veil on and it covered her blush. “Oh, you. You’re getting better at capturing a girl’s heart.”

“Let’s go. We should hurry to the God-Naming Platform too. I heard there are many treasures there. We’ll get more if we go earlier.”

Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi charged through the gates. It was like going through a curtain of water. An ancient aura immediately hit their faces. It felt like crossing over the river of time, going from the present to the past.

There was a majestic divine mountain hovering before their eyes. It was pyramid-shaped. Compared to this, God-Gazing Mountain looked like it was just a small hill.

Some parts of the mountain had bloody light shooting into the sky and some parts were pitch black. Some places bathed under sunlight and were filled life; other places were dead like hell.

This was the God-Naming Platform.

There were four paths before them, leading to four directions on the mountain.

Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi chose a path and walked forward quickly. They walked through mist. It was white all around them. They couldn’t see anything other than the stone bridge underfoot.

Gradually, the mist scattered and countless ancient trees appeared before them. They had black bark and green leaves. The trunks were thick enough that you needed a dozen people

holding hands to wrap around it. The leaves shone with green light.

Mu Lingxi's eyes sparkled. "These ancient trees have probably grown for tens of thousands of years. They're treasures for refining weapons. The leaves may be useful for pills too."

"They're definitely extremely great trees for those under the Saint Realm," Zhang Ruochen said. "But they're not valuable to us. Look, they're all over and no one cares about them."

Mu Lingxi took a few more steps forward and the line of sight grew clearer. As expected, these trees spewing Holy Qi grew everywhere on the mountain. Those that she'd seen before seemed so common.

Other people's voices sounded before them.

Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi hurried over. Gradually, a mass of majestic yet dilapidated buildings appeared before their eyes.

A hundred-foot-tall green stone door stood under a tree. There was a golden sign above the gate with three words: Outer South Yard.

Behind the stone door, there was a broken wall that he couldn't see the end of.

The broken wall, ground covered in broken tiles, rusted tripods, collapsed pavilions... Even though it was a pile of rubble, it still shone with a saintly glow.

The broken wall was made out of spiritual jade.

The tiles were made from saint clay.

The rusted tripod was the remnant of an ancient saint weapon. However, the weapon spirit had died and the spirituality leaked out, so it turned into scrap metal.

...

Nothing here looked ordinary.

One could imagine that, at its peak, this place must have been a cultivation paradise with many strong cultivators living here.

Mu Lingxi lowered her delicate frame and dragged her finger through the dirt. Purple specks of light emerged in the dirt. Her eyes instantly became pleasantly surprised. “The soil actually contains faint divinity. This must be where a god used to live.”

“I’m afraid it’s not that simple,” Zhang Ruochen mused.

When they continued, they finally met other people.

These people were gathered around a saint pool. There were at least 20 people—all strong figures with invitations. They were top figures from their worlds.

The pool was around 170 meters long.

There was a white saint tree in the center of the pool. Its bark, branches and leaves were all milky white as if carved out of jade.

The tree had more than 40 saint fruits. Each fruit was like a moon, shining with ivory light. The fragrance from the fruits filled the air within hundreds of feet. Taking a breath could make you feel refreshed.

Zhang Ruochen’s face had a pleasantly surprised expression. “Heartmoon Saint Fruit.”

“No way! The fruit on this tree really is the legendary Heartmoon Saint Fruit?” Mu Lingxi widened her eyes. Her lashes all stood up straight.

The cultivators around the pool heard Zhang Ruochen’s surprised cry and turned around to look at him.

Amongst them, a short and thin man with eight spidery arms walked toward Zhang Ruochen. Chuckling, he said, “Brother, you have great eyes. You recognized the Heartmoon Saint Fruit at once.”

He glanced at Mu Lingxi and shock flashed past his eyes.

But he quickly looked away and his eyes grew composed. He was clearly a very steady person and wasn’t easily tempted by beauty.

“I heard that the Heartmoon Saint Tree is very rare,” Mu Lingxi said. “It’s only planted where a Supreme Saint

cultivates. It absorbs the Supreme Saint's exhalations to grow normally and bear fruit.

"If you eat a Heartmoon Saint Fruit, a Saint can immediately raise to the next level or even help a Saint King.

"How can one tree have more than 40 of these extremely precious fruits?"

The eight-armed spider king chuckled. "It's not only around 40 fruits. Earlier, it had a total of 138 fruits, but most of them were picked away by the monstrously strong people."

"It could produce 138 fruits?" Zhang Ruochen was shocked too.

After all, the ancient records stated that one Heartmoon Saint Tree could only produce one fruit.

The eight-armed spider king said, "The God-Naming Platform isn't an ordinary place. It's not just the Heartmoon Saint Fruit. Even the more precious Ghost King Fruit can have a dozen on one tree."

"The God-Naming Platform has a Ghost King Fruit Tree?" Zhang Ruochen was extremely shaken.

When the eight-armed spider king first arrived at the God-Naming Platform, he'd been even more shocked than Zhang Ruochen. But after seeing a dozen of the legendary saint fruit trees in a row, he'd gradually calmed down.

In the distance, a young girl with snowy-white skin glanced at Zhang Ruochen and scoffed. "Only the powerful figures can pick the Heartmoon Saint Fruits and Ghost King Fruits. Those who aren't enough can only watch."

"Is it really hard to pick?"

Zhang Ruochen walked toward the saint pool. Staring at the white tree, he inhaled the fragrance emanating from the fruits and instantly, his limbs felt refreshed.

The young girl could tell that Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi had just entered the God-Naming Platform. They evidently hadn't been invited by the Truth Godly Palace and had entered through the qualification test.

Thus, she kind of looked down on Zhang Ruochen. “So many of us here have failed, so you ask if it is hard or not? I advise against trying, or else you might fall into the pool and turn into an ice statue from the Yin Pluto Ice.”

Chapter 1648 - Harvest

Chapter 1648: Harvest

Zhang Ruochen walked to the saint pond where he felt a piercing coldness striking him. It was Extreme Yin Pluto Ice Water that could kill saints.

Mu Lingxi was very irritated by the white girl beside her as she found her too arrogant. She said, "I'll go harvest a Heartmoon Saint Fruit and try it."

Mu Lingxi practiced Power of Extreme Yin Pluto Ice and had attained a certain level, so she wasn't afraid of the Extreme Yin Pluto Ice Water in the saint pond at all.

Eight-arm Spider King walked toward Mu Lingxi, trying to talk her out of it by telling her how dangerous it was. "The saint pond is very strange, girl. No matter how strong you are, you can't fly above it, and you can't touch the Extreme Yin Pluto Ice Water. Otherwise, your saint Qi will be frozen. If you don't believe me, look at the bottom of the water.

Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi then looked to the bottom, and they saw four creatures frozen in an ice crystal, lifeless.

"They all wanted to pick the Heartmoon Saint Fruit, but they all fell into the water, losing their lives." Eight-arm Spider King sighed.

Zhang Ruochen got cautious and asked, "Did it just happen?"

"No."

Eight-arm Spider King shook his head and said, "It all happened in the previous God-Naming Platform Conferences. They were powerful when they were alive, and with Extreme Yin Pluto Ice Water, their corpses didn't decompose.

"Now, everyone knows how dangerous this place is, and monks who aren't strong enough won't take risks. Even if someone's having a try, they will be well-prepared and go with lots of companions, so deaths happen less and less often."

The girl beside wanted to watch Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi embarrass themselves, so she said, “Didn’t you say you wanted to go pick up the saint fruit? Why haven’t you started yet?”

“Ugh. I’ll go right now.”

Mu Lingxi wasn’t scared at all as she was certain that the Extreme Yin Pluto Ice Water couldn’t harm her.

“Wait a minute.” Zhang Ruochen stopped Mu Lingxi.

Mu Lingxi looked to Zhang Ruochen and said, “Don’t worry. I’ll be able to do it.”

Extreme Yin Pluto Ice Water had several levels just like Divine Fire Jingmie.

Although Zhang Ruochen had practiced Divine Fire Jingmie, and his flames had reached the pinnacle ‘ordinary-flame’ level, he would still be in grave danger if he ran into ‘official flames’, and the same rule applied to Mu Lingxi. Her practicing Extreme Yin Pluto Ice Power didn’t mean she could ward off all the Extreme Yin Pluto Ice Water.

“Let me go have a try first,” said Zhang Ruochen.

The young woman chuckled contemptuously, which annoyed Mu Lingxi.

Zhang Ruochen held Mu Lingxi off with his right hand, and he released a trace of pure saint Qi with his left hand, which flew into the saint pond, toward the Heartmoon Saint Fruit.

The saint Qi flowed above the water like a long cloth, approaching the Heartmoon Saint Fruit.

All the monks in the scene held their breath, looking dazed.

Could he actually pick a Heartmoon Saint Fruit like that?

The saint Qi suddenly froze when it was ten feet away from the Heartmoon Saint Fruit, turning into an ice pillar and falling into the saint pond.

“The water indeed froze the saint Qi.” Zhang Ruochen frowned.

No monks laughed at him even though Zhang Ruochen had failed.

Instead, they were all looking at Zhang Ruochen with respect.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't the first monk who tried to use his saint Qi to get the Heartmoon Saint Fruit. However, the fact that his saint Qi survived that long meant his saint Qi was much purer than others'.

Other monks' saint Qi would be frozen after going for around ten feet.

Zhang Ruochen was refining 'Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture', and he had Divine Fire Jingmie in his body, which kept purifying his saint Qi, so naturally his saint Qi was much purer than others'.

Eight-arm Spider King could feel that Zhang Ruochen was incredible, so he wanted to befriend him.

Zhang Ruochen took out a long whip that was a ten thousand patterns saint weapon, trying to use it to get a Heartmoon Saint Fruit. He reckoned the coldness could in no way freeze a ten thousand patterns saint weapon.

"Wait."

Eight-arm Spider King walked to Zhang Ruochen and warned him again. "Brother, Heartmoon Saint Fruits are very fragile, and there are specific ways to pick them. They can't be touched by the forces of gold, fire, mud and water, otherwise, they will be liquified immediately and fall into the saint pond."

Zhang Ruochen frowned and said, "Are you saying that only objects made of wood characteristics can hold the Heartmoon Saint Fruits?"

Eight-arm Spider King said, "Not just any object of wood characteristic, but objects made of divine wood."

Mu Lingxi frowned and said, "Why is it so tough to pick up the fruits?"

"We should be grateful that it's so demanding, otherwise all the Heartmoon Saint Fruits would've been gone already."

Eight-arm Spider King shrugged and said, “Actually, I’ve come up with a way to pick up the Heartmoon Saint Fruits, but I need an object made of divine wood to enact my plan. Hopefully I can borrow it from other monks. Do you two have this kind of object with you?”

Before Zhang Ruochen responded, the young woman said smugly, “My senior brother has a ruler made of divine wood. When he brings me that, he’ll be able to help me pick a Heartmoon Saint Fruit.”

People who received invitations were either immensely powerful themselves or came from a privileged background. That young woman was only a half-step saint king, so she definitely came from a powerful family.

Mu Lingxi sneered, “Nothing incredible about an object made of divine wood. I have that myself as well.”

She flipped her palm, and a wooden jar showed up in her hand.

That wooden jar was made of the wood of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree. It looked mediocre as the divine Qi had been gone already.

That young woman chuckled. “Is that really an object made of divine wood?”

The monks around all stared at Mu Lingxi’s wooden jar, and they couldn’t see anything special about it, so they all looked disappointed.

Half the monks were gathered here, as they wanted to do the same thing as Eight-arm Spider King, wanting to borrow other monks’ objects to pick Heartmoon Saint Fruits.

“When my senior brother gets here, I’ll definitely ask my senior brother to lend you the ruler if you give us enough saint stones,” said the young woman.

“Ignorant.”

Mu Lingxi spread her phoenix wings, holding her wooden jar, flying toward the white saint tree at the center of the saint pond.

Zhang Ruochen didn't try to stop Mu Lingxi.

He'd learned a bit about the Extreme Yin Pluto Ice Water after the previous test. It was dangerous, but it couldn't freeze Mu Lingxi, and besides, Zhang Ruochen could immediately save her if she ran into danger.

The phoenix wings couldn't help Mu Lingxi fly above the water, but they could make her relatively lighter so that she could step on the water, reaching the saint tree fast.

"She's an Ice Phoenix. No wonder she's not afraid of Extreme Yin Pluto Ice Water," Eight-arm Spider King said.

Whoosh!

Mu Lingxi put a shining Heartmoon Saint Fruit into her wooden jar.

Bang!

The Heartmoon Saint Fruit fell into the wooden jar.

That young woman started to feel anxious, and she still said, "Heartmoon Saint Fruit should've been melted in the wooden jar already, and its saintly way rules will be dispersed in the air soon."

Mu Lingxi rolled her eyes at her, planning to pick another Heartmoon Saint Fruit.

Suddenly, something horrifying happened, which shocked Mu Lingxi, who flapped her wings and tried to fly back to the edge of the saint pond.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen wielded his long whip and grabbed Mu Lingxi back.

She was only relieved after getting back on the shore, but her heart was still pounding fast.

"What happened?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Mu Lingxi shook her head and said, "I'm not sure either. I felt a great power pushing me almost to the pond."

"How could that be possible?" asked Zhang Ruochen.

Eight-arm Spider King said, “Of course it is. A monk is only supposed to pick one saint fruit of each kind in the Outer South Yard, and if you want to pick the second one, it’ll be several times more dangerous and difficult. Truth Godly Palace set this up because they don’t want some powerful monk to pick all the saint fruit at once. I thought this was common sense so I didn’t warn you earlier.”

“I see. Perhaps I was being too greedy.” Mu Lingxi shook her head and forced a smile.

Eight-arm Spider King stared at Mu Lingxi’s wooden jar which gave out white saint light. He asked “Is the wooden jar in your hand really made of divine wood?”

“Why would I lie?”

Mu Lingxi tipped the jar a bit, and the Heartmoon Saint Fruit was lying at the bottom of the jar, perfectly intact.

All the monks gathered around to have a look.

“Can I borrow your wooden jar, girl? I only need fifteen minutes. I’ll give you thirty thousand saint stones, wait no, fifty thousand.”

“I’ll give you eighty thousand saint stones!”

“I’ll give you a hundred thousand! Please lend it to me first!”

...

There were almost ten monks who were confident that they could pick the Heartmoon Saint Fruits, and now, they all turned to Mu Lingxi for help.

Mu Lingxi looked to Zhang Ruochen, waiting for his opinion.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Just a wooden jar, which is nothing. You don’t need to pay me any saint stones. Just take it if you want, but you do need to wait in line. I can’t lend it to all of you at once after all.”

All the monks looked at Zhang Ruochen, full of respect.

Eight-arm Spider King wanted to befriend Zhang Ruochen more. He said, “Brother, you’re such a decent and noble

person, but Heartmoon Saint Fruit is invaluable. Since we're borrowing your jar, we must pay you. Please don't say no."

Eight-arm Spider King then took out a hundred thousand saint stones, putting them in a storage bag and handing it to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen was rich enough not to care about one hundred thousand saint stones, so he wanted to make a good friendship with the monks who were present, which might help him a great deal in the future.

After all, every monk who entered the God-Naming Platform Conference was an incredible being.

Zhang Ruochen wouldn't say no to the saint stones. After all, it was nothing to them, much less valuable than Heartmoon Saint Fruits.

In the end, they still owed Zhang Ruochen a small favor.

Chapter 1649 - Perfect Control

Chapter 1649: Perfect Control

Mu Lingxi swallowed the Heartmoon Saint Fruit and sat on the side to meditate.

Zhang Ruochen handed the wooden jar to the eight-armed spider king and other creatures so they could pick the fruit. Whether they could succeed or not depended on their own abilities.

Zhang Ruochen guarded Mu Lingxi while staring at the water of the saint pool.

Those who dared to borrow the wooden jar were all extraordinary beings. Some of their performances stunned him.

For example, the eight-armed spider king actually spat out colorful string and wrapped around the saint tree. He used the web's strong pulling strength to fly across the water. His hand shot out like lightning and the next moment, a Heartmoon Saint Fruit was in the jar.

The colorful web had five different types of flames that countered the coldness of the Extreme Yin Pluto Ice.

Other types of spider webs would probably freeze before reaching the saint tree and fall into the water.

“Five-colored Divine Spider race, Five Elements Fire.”

Zhang Ruochen was subtly surprised. This ugly fellow had such a shocking background.

As expected, no one at the God-Naming Platform Conference was ordinary.

The young girl with snowy-pale skin was both anxious and annoyed to see cultivators keep picking the fruit. How could

she have thought that two cultivators who didn't even have invitations would have a container made of divine wood?

A while later, Mu Lingxi refined the Heartmoon Saint Fruit. Her entire body shone with white light and she had a joyful expression. "I have 300 more Rules of Saintly Way. It's like months of cultivation. Even my physical strength has improved."

"It's that amazing?" Zhang Ruochen was happy for her.

For a half-step Saint King, this Heartmoon Saint Fruit was a priceless treasure and could improve their cultivations vastly. It was also beneficial for first and second step Saint Kings.

Of course, the effect wasn't that great for those above the third step!

After all, even the weakest third step Saint King had 30-40,000 Rules of Saintly Way. Gaining 300 Rules of Saintly Way was nice, but it wasn't enough for them to risk their lives for.

"You should try to pick a fruit too," Mu Lingxi said. "You might be able to reach the second step at once."

Zhang Ruochen nodded. he gazed toward the eight-armed spider king and the others. Some cultivators were sitting cross-legged on the ground, refining the fruit that they'd just picked.

Others had tried countless times and all failed. They had sad and disappointed expressions. They looked toward those who were refining the fruit with envy.

Sometimes, you would brush shoulders with a great opportunity just because you were a bit too weak.

Eleven beings in total borrowed the wooden jar from Zhang Ruochen, but only seven succeeded.

A first step Saint King with a snake head returned the jar to Zhang Ruochen, sighing. "Thank you for your help, but unfortunately, I'm not strong enough. I couldn't pick the Heartmoon Saint Fruit of my dreams."

"I'll return the saint stones to you."

Zhang Ruochen accepted the wooden jar with one hand while he took out the storage bag with his other.

The snake-headed being quickly waved his hand. “I used those saint stones to rent the wooden jar. Whether I succeeded or not, I should not take the saint stones back.”

He wasn't someone without a vision. He knew that there were many saint fruits in the God-Naming Platform that needed saint wood in order to collect them.

Thus, he had to maintain a good relationship with Zhang Ruochen. He couldn't cut off his path just for these small benefits.

“Okay.”

Zhang Ruochen didn't push further. He put the saint stones away and picked up the wooden jar, walking toward the saint pool.

The snake-headed being and other cultivators all looked at Zhang Ruochen's back. They all thought, Is he finally going to pick the Heartmoon Saint Fruit?

Earlier, they could tell that this human wasn't ordinary.

Now, he was about to really pick the fruit, so they naturally had to observe him. Perhaps, they would be able to see just how skilled he was.

Zhang Ruochen didn't want to attract too much attention, so he didn't use spatial power. Instead, he took out a Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon whip and clutched it. He prepared to wrap the whip around the trunk.

It was similar to what the eight-armed spider king had done.

Seeing his intention, the snake-headed figure warned, “Sir, you must not.”

“Why not?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“The Extreme Yin Pluto Ice's Qi can freeze Holy Qi. As soon as the whip flies out, it'll freeze. Only the First Yao power can fend off the cold, but it's too aggressive. When it touches the tree, it'll probably destroy the tree and all the fruits.”

“That makes sense.”

In the distance, that young girl scoffed, looking at Zhang Ruochen as if he was stupid.

Zhang Ruochen ignored her. He thought carefully and tied the wooden jar to the end of the whip.

Sizzle, sizzle.

He added Holy Qi into the whip. It started flying like a wriggling snake and brought the wooden jar quickly toward a fruit on the white tree.

All the beings there shook their heads, thinking that Zhang Ruochen would fail.

They'd already done similar things. The whip would probably freeze before getting halfway to the center. He could only force aside the icy Qi with the First Yao power.

But that power was extremely violent and difficult to control. How could he do something as detailed as picking fruit?

When the whip was a dozen feet away, it started slowing down. The Holy Qi on the whip froze, turning into white frost. It was about to fall into the water.

Whoosh!

Dark gold power emerged on the whip. The First Yao power was unleashed, forcing aside all cold Qi.

However, that power was restricted to the whip. It flowed down it, seeming very obedient, and didn't spread out.

“How is that possible? How can he control the First Yao power so easily?” The girl bit her red lip with a face of disbelief.

The other beings all exchanged glances, feeling extreme shock.

Usually, only a fourth step Saint King and above could control the First Yao perfectly. However, this human was only a first step Saint King. How could he do it?

“Could he be hiding his cultivation?”

“Not necessarily. I heard that some crazily talented figures can control the First Yao perfectly in the first or second step.”

“Anyway, the more perfect you can control your power, the stronger you are.”

...

While everyone was discussing him, Zhang Ruochen had already picked a Heartmoon Saint Fruit and swallowed it quickly.

It melted as soon as it entered his mouth and poured into his stomach like an icy spring. A great number of Rules of Saintly Way were released.

Zhang Ruochen quickly used a technique to move the Rules of Saintly Way through his meridians and into the Heaven Pass River in his Sea of Qi, combining them with his Rules of Saintly Way.

Moments later, he had 300 more Rules of Saintly Way in him. The total reached 4,500 rules.

The Heaven Pass River made up of rules suddenly flowed faster. However, the state wasn't steady. It was sometimes fast and sometimes slow and completely erratic.

This should be a sign of a breakthrough. If I have another Heartmoon Saint Fruit, I should be able to make the Heaven Pass River flow even faster and more steadily. Will I become a second step Saint King soon?

Zhang Ruochen grew excited. He hurriedly hurled his whip out again. It cut a beautiful arc over the water and flew toward the white tree in the center of the pool. He wanted to get a second Heartmoon Saint Fruit.

Suddenly, the whip trembled.

“Oh no.”

Even with the First Yao, it was difficult to fend off the icy Qi coming from all over. The flexible whip gradually stiffened. An invisible force also weighed upon the whip and wooden jar, making it much harder for Zhang Ruochen to control it.

The other people didn't find this out of the ordinary.

The second fruit obviously wasn't easy to pick. It was impossible no matter how great your control was, unless you had perfect control of the Second Yao power.

However, it was impossible for a first step Saint King to perfectly control the Second Yao. Plus, the human's whip was only a First Yao weapon.

Just as everyone was sure that Zhang Ruochen would fail, the sinking whip suddenly floated up and turned agile again.

The snake-headed being cried out, "Spiritual Power! He added Spiritual Power to the whip!"

"His Spiritual Power must be at least level 55 and his control of it is incredible too. Look, the Spiritual Power has turned into thin strands and wrapped around the whip, becoming one with the First Yao power."

The human's precise control impressed all of the extraordinary beings there.

In order to pick the second fruit, not only did Zhang Ruochen activate Holy Qi and Spiritual Power, he also released his blazing Masculine Yang Qi. He added it to the whip to fend off the coldness.

Of course, it was fortunate he had experience from crossing the Ocean of Truth that he could utilize the power so precisely, making them work and complement each other.

Moments later, he picked the second fruit.

Zhang Ruochen was finally able to breathe. He realized he was sweating, but he felt happy inside.

Just as he was about to eat the second fruit, the snake-headed being, eight-armed spider king and the others surrounded him. A girl with long white hair and pointed ears hurriedly said, "Lord, it's a complete waste to eat the second fruit. How about you sell it to me? I can give you a satisfactory price."

"Why is it a waste?" Zhang Ruochen was confused.

The eight-armed spider king chuckled. “You might not know that even though the fruits of the God-Naming Platform are miraculous, only the first one is effective. Eating a second one is like drinking water. It’s useless.”

The snake-headed being quickly said, “There have been cultivators who ate two of the same fruit to quickly improve, but they regretted it greatly! Lord, how about you sell it to me? I can pay 500,000 saint stones.”

“I offer 800,000,” the girl with pointed ears said.

“I offer one million.”

...

Those who’d failed or didn’t dare to pick the fruit were all envious of Zhang Ruochen’s Heartmoon Saint Fruit, so the price kept increasing.

Even the girl with pale skin was tempted. But earlier, she’d mocked Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi many times, so she naturally was too embarrassed to buy the fruit from them.

“Why is my senior brother still not here with the weapon?” She was getting anxious.

Chapter 1650 - Unstoppable Picking

Chapter 1650: Unstoppable Picking

“I’ll give you one million, five hundred thousand saint stones.”

The woman with pointy ears wanted the Heartmoon Saint Fruit very much, so she shouted a high price again.

...

Zhang Ruochen didn’t want to sell the Heartmoon Saint Fruit now, as he could sell it at a much higher price in the saint shops outside.

However, seeing how all the monks gazed at him passionately, he didn’t know what to do.

The eight-armed spider king saw the impasse Zhang Ruochen was facing. He stepped out and said, “Please, everyone, calm down. This is a saint fruit that can help half-step saint kings and saint kings improve their cultivation. Have you seen anyone selling them before?”

And then, the eight-armed spider king said to Zhang Ruochen, “It’s impossible to buy a treasure like the Heartmoon Saint Fruit in the saint shops no matter how many saint stones you have. If you want to maximize its value, you’d better exchange it for another treasure that can’t be purchased.”

“You mean like barter?” said Zhang Ruochen.

“That’s right.”

The eight-armed spider king knew that Zhang Ruochen wasn’t well informed about the God-Naming Platform Conference, so he said, “There’re ten yards in the God-Naming Platform Conference. One of the yards is for trades, and it’ll open at midnight. You can go trade your Heartmoon Saint Fruit for other kinds of saint fruits.”

Zhang Ruochen took notes, and he said to the monks around him, “Sorry, everyone. I won’t sell this Heartmoon Saint Fruit to you guys now. If you really want it, please go to the trading yard with other saint fruits.”

They all knew that it was very difficult to buy the Heartmoon Saint Fruit with saint stones, so they didn’t keep pushing Zhang Ruochen.

Just as they were about to leave, a man wearing golden-threaded saint armor came to the saint pond.

There was a golden thorn on the man’s head. There were powerful ripples coming out of him, and his blood Qi was so dense that all the monks felt intimidated.

A great being. At least a third-step saint king who can fight those with higher cultivation, Zhang Ruochen thought.

The snake creature looked shocked. “Gold-armored Guard. He’s a Golden-armored Guard of the crown prince from the Dizu Divine Dynasty.”

“Did Dizu Crown Prince come here?”

“Not possible. Dizu Crown Prince is always followed by a huge group of monks.”

That young man was pleased to see the Gold-armored Guard. She walked toward him and asked, “Why’re you the only one here, North Guard? Where’s my senior brother?”

The Golden-armored Guard greeted the young woman and said, “Crown Prince is using his Divine Red Ruler to get Kirin Absolute Complete Fruit, so he doesn’t have time to come here.”

The young man looked extremely disappointed and complained, “Doesn’t he know that I can become a saint king after taking the Heartmoon Saint Fruit? Heartmoon Saint Fruit is very important to me.”

“Heartmoon Saint Fruit is nothing compared to Kirin Absolute Complete Fruit. His Highness asked me to tell you, princess, that when the Free Trade Yard opens tonight, he’ll bring you a

saint fruit to improve your cultivation,” said the Golden-armored Guard coldly.

...

The eight-armed spider king sneered in the distance. “No wonder she’s so arrogant and looks down upon all the other monks. She’s a princess from Dizu Divine Dynasty.”

Zhang Ruochen had read enough books to know something about Dizu Divine Dynasty, which was one of the top three divine dynasties from Huangdao Large Field, which was one of the top hundred large fields in the universe.

Even Thousand Pistil wasn’t ranked the top hundred.

A princess from Dizu Divine Dynasty indeed had a solid background.

Zhang Ruochen asked the eight-armed spider king, “What is Kirin Absolute Complete Fruit? What’s so special about it?”

The eight-armed spider king’s eyes gleamed and he said, “It’s definitely amazing. I heard that the fruit can help make a talent with supreme complete body constitution, and monks with supreme complete body constitution who eat it will obtain God’s Destiny.”

“A fruit can help make supreme complete body constitution?” Zhang Ruochen was thrilled.

Although monks with sub-complete body constitution were rare, there were always some in each large field.

Gods could help some monks refine sub-complete body constitution using their godly power, and monks with great luck who gained the inheritance from paramount supreme saints, like Mu Lingxi, could also refine sub-complete body constitution.

As for monks with complete body constitution, the number was much lower.

As for monks with supreme complete body constitution, they were so rare that some large fields didn’t even have one.

Which was why Zhang Ruochen was surprised.

The eight-armed spider king smiled. “It isn’t that easy, of course. The monk’s body constitution must attain a certain level even with the Kiri Absolute Complete Fruit, and he must have the assistance from some special environment.”

“There’ll only be several Absolute Complete Fruits in each God-Naming Platform Conference, and there’ll be fierce competition for each one of them.”

“Let’s not think about such valuables. Only the top-tier great beings from the powerful fields have the power to fight for them. As for the others, they’ll only humiliate themselves.”

Zhang Ruochen looked to Mu Lingxi, as he wanted to get one for her.

Mu Lingxi knew what Zhang Ruochen wanted to do, so she said, “The better my body constitution is, the harder it’ll be for me to refine. It’ll be much harder for monks with supreme complete body constitution to become supreme saints. I don’t want that kind of body constitution to slow down my refining speed.”

Zhang Ruochen knew that Mu Lingxi said so because she didn’t want him to take risks.

It would be extremely hazardous to try to seize valuables from the great beings from the powerful fields.

The eight-armed spider king also tried to talk Zhang Ruochen out of it. “Kirin Absolute Complete Fruits have masculine characteristics, yet this girl is more feminine. It won’t help her refine Supreme Complete body constitution, and it’ll damage her body.”

Zhang Ruochen frowned. “It has something to do with body characteristics as well?”

“Of course. It isn’t that easy to get Supreme Complete Body Constitution,” said the eight-armed spider king.

Mu Lingxi smiled. “Hear that? The Kirin Absolute Complete Fruit isn’t useful even if you get it.”

Zhang Ruochen had to suppress that urge since it couldn’t help Mu Lingxi refine Supreme Complete Body Constitution.

The eight-armed spider king took off to look for other valuables.

Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi also walked off, and after several miles of walking, Zhang Ruochen turned into a different shape using Traceless 36 Changes.

He also took off his clothes.

Mu Lingxi looked at him and asked, “What’re you doing?”

“Wait for me here. I’ll pick a couple more Heartmoon Saint Fruits.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled at Mu Lingxi, performed body techniques, and went back to the shore of the saint pond.

Most of the creatures had left, and there were several more new faces looking at the white saint tree, thinking about ways to pick the Heartmoon Saint Fruits.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t mind them. He held the wooden jar in his hand and performed ‘Spatial Capture.’

Whoosh!

A branch on the white saint tree shook, and a Heartmoon Saint Fruit vanished, showing up in Zhang Ruochen’s wooden jar.

The second one... The third one...

Every time he picked a saint fruit, the space around the white saint tree would get denser, making it several times harder to pick the fruit.

After picking five Heartmoon Saint Fruits, Zhang Ruochen’s palm bounced back after he performed Spatial Capture again, and his fingers were in grave pain as if he had just hit an iron wall.

“Truth Godly Palace is indeed incredible. Even the space power can’t break it.”

Zhang Ruochen waved his fingers again, making a space crack.

That space crack was closed up by an invisible force as it flew toward the saint pond.

Zhang Ruochen looked confused, and he pushed his hands forward.

His palms were stopped by an invisible yet sticky power, and he couldn't reach into the space above the saint pond, not to mention picking the Heartmoon Saint Fruit.

“The force is too strong for me to pick another one.”

Zhang Ruochen sighed as he was a bit disappointed. He left the saint pond with the five Heartmoon Saint Fruits he'd just picked and gathered with Mu Lingxi.

A female saint king from the human race suddenly yelled as she found out something strange about the white saint tree.

“Look! There're five less Heartmoon Saint Fruits on the tree!”

“How did that happen?”

“Did the monk pick them?”

“How is that possible? Nobody can pick five saint fruits of the same type.”

...

All the creatures on the shore rushed out, performing their body techniques, trying to look for Zhang Ruochen.

Meanwhile, Zhang Ruochen turned into a refined and bookish man, walking with Mu Lingxi, showing up at the bottom of a white bone slope more than twenty miles away.

The white bone slope was surrounded by gloomy mud.

There were some bones showing above the mud, giving out white saint light, and they were all saint bones. Some of the bones were releasing white flames.

There was a Ghost King Saint Tree on the slope, and there were more than twenty Ghost King Fruits on the blossoming tree.

There were dozens of powerful creatures standing around the white bone slope. They all wanted to get the fruit on the tree.

However, the white bone slope was very dangerous as several powerful saint kings had already been injured, sitting beside

the slope with blood all over their bodies.

Zhang Ruochen observed the white bone slope for a while, and he left with Mu Lingxi after learning more about the slope.

After a while, Zhang Ruochen changed his appearance and came to the white bone slope, performing space skills and picking up four Ghost King Fruits. He left while everyone stared at him in shock.

It was way more difficult to pick Ghost King Fruits than Heartmoon Saint Fruits, so Zhang Ruochen only got four in the end.

In the next two hours, Zhang Ruochen picked seventeen kinds of saint fruits.

The creatures in the Outer South Yard all knew that a loner who practiced the space way had shown up. He was mysterious with incredible skills, and he could pick saint fruits as if they were his own.

The leaders of each large field speculated. “It must be a space manipulator. Ordinary space monks aren’t that powerful...”

Chapter 1651 - Surprising Discovery

Chapter 1651: Surprising Discovery

Outer South Yard

There was an old eerie stone house. Moss grew all over the walls and two of the walls had cracks and holes. The bronze door had long since turned into a piece of rusted metal.

Inside the house, the smoky Holy Qi contracted inwardly and poured back into Zhang Ruochen from the 144 apertures.

Phew.

Zhang Ruochen opened his mouth and exhaled a long breath.

Qi condensed into a thin thread and hit the rusted bronze door. It actually penetrated the door with a soft sound.

After eating six different saint fruits, I have 3,700 more Rules of Saintly Way in me. I now have more than 8,200 rules.

Because of his great improvement, his breath could penetrate a thick bronze door within ten feet.

In the Sea of Qi, the Heaven Pass River flowed much faster than before.

After cultivating 8,200 Rules of Saintly Way, Zhang Ruochen was sure that he was a second step Saint King now, even without going through the Nine Steps to the Sky Test.

Feng Yan was right. The God-Naming Platform Conference indeed is an unprecedented opportunity. If I continue searching for saint fruits, I can try to reach the third step here.

With the great improvement, Zhang Ruochen was feeling great and very confident.

Beside him, Mu Lingxi was still refining the saint fruit. The light shining from her grew brighter and brighter. Her pure figure seemed to have been carved from jade.

Zhang Ruochen took out the fruits that he'd collected earlier. Some were preserved in saint wood jars while others were in jade caskets. There were hundreds in total.

Including the Heartmoon Saint Fruit, Zhang Ruochen had eaten all seven types of fruit that could improve cultivation.

Of the remaining 12 types, some could cleanse the Saintly Meridian, some could increase longevity, some could strengthen the saint soul, some could help cultivators learn special techniques and spells...

Anyway, they were all top treasures that were difficult to find outside.

Zhang Ruochen didn't eat these fruits now. After all, the God-Naming Platform Conference was only three days long. He had to use the time to find other treasures.

Mu Lingxi's cultivation technique wasn't like the Emperor Ming Nine-Sky Scripture, so she wasn't as fast as Zhang Ruochen in refining the fruit.

An hour passed before she woke up. She opened her eyes and looked forward.

She saw Zhang Ruochen hold a broad sword, studying it. He would sometimes wave it or perform a complete sword technique.

Seeing that Mu Lingxi was awake, Zhang Ruochen stabbed the sword into the ground. He turned around and studied her. He nodded and smiled, saying, "Not bad. You should be at the second step Saint King Realm now."

"Eating the seven fruits helped me gain close to 4,000 Rules of Saintly Way. Isn't it normal for me to reach the second step now?"

Mu Lingxi stood up slowly and walked out of the stone house. A ball of Extreme Yin Pluto Ice Qi spread from her palm. She waved her arm back.

Crackle, crackle.

The Qi landed in the house. The house was instantly frozen inside a small ice mountain. As Mu Lingxi clenched her fist,

the mountain and house both exploded into fist-sized shards.

She studied the sword in the ground with surprised eyes.

“That’s a Third Yao sword. The material is very special and it must be extremely heavy.”

Zhang Ruochen picked up the heavy sword with one hand and shrunk it to the size of a dagger. Placing it in his sleeves, he said, “It’s not good to expose your identity at the God-Naming Platform. You could lure over the enemies. I’m using this sword for now to replace Abyss. Earlier, I tamed the sword spirit. I can use it as I wish now.”

After that, Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi continued searching the Outer South Yard. They went to places they didn’t go to before, wanting to pick more fruits.

The Outer South Yard was very wide. They walked around 100 miles in one direction before reaching the edge.

Here, they saw a lot of rubble, canyons, walls, ancient forests... The saint trees grew in very dangerous environments with different types of risks.

However, because so many cultivators joined the conference and many hours had passed, when Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi reached those dangerous places, they discovered that most of the fruits had been picked clean.

This was a competition. Those who were stronger and faster could pick more fruits.

After spending two full hours, they had gained practically nothing.

“Other than the zone above the White Bone Hill, we’ve searched practically the entire Outer South Yard. Even if there are some saint trees hidden inside hallucinations or formations, it’ll take a lot of time to find them.” Mu Lingxi suggested, “How about we go to the Outer East Yard and pick some saint flowers and grass?”

The God-Naming Platform Conference had ten different yards: four outer yards, four inner yards, the Central Royal Yard and Free Trade Yard.

According to the rules, other than the leaders of each world, all other cultivators below 1000 on the Ten Thousand Fields Merit Rank could only stay in the four outer yards.

The cultivators who passed the qualification test could only stay in those yards too.

Of course, the cultivators of fields in the top 1000 of the Ten Thousand Fields Merit Rank could also fight for treasures in the outer yards. This was the advantage of the strong fields. The others could only watch with jealousy.

It was survival of the fittest everywhere else. The God-Naming Platform Conference was no exception.

Even in the four outer yards, they had different treasures.

The Outer South Yard had all sorts of saint trees.

The Outer East Yard had different types of flowers and plants, namely ten-thousand-year-old medicine.

The Outer North Yard had different saint springs.

The Outer West Yard was an ancient mine. One could unearth saint stones and all types of jade.

The Outer South Yard was the only one that they hadn't investigated. It was above the White Bone Hill and was pitch black. Looking from afar, they could see dark ink swirling. Even Spiritual Power couldn't penetrate it.

Many cultivators looked on from the outside with hesitant expressions.

Before attending the God-Naming Platform Conference, seniors had warned them that this area was very dangerous. They couldn't venture in. Every conference, more than one being would die there.

They hesitated because their seniors had told them that the area was very vast. It was bigger than the entire Outer South Yard and some strong and lucky people had come out alive with a great amount of saint fruit. Some of the fruits were even more precious than the treasures in the inner four yards.

Since they couldn't enter the inner four yards, this was where they would find the best opportunities.

However, they only had one life. No one wanted to take that risk.

When Feng Yan had mentioned this area, his expression had been very serious and fearful. He'd warned Zhang Ruochen many times not to take the risk. A godly disciple in the eighth step Saint King Realm had died there before.

Thus, Zhang Ruochen was curious but he repressed the curiosity. Instead of going in, he went to the Outer East Yard with Mu Lingxi.

There was a 20-meter-wide river between the Outer South and East Yards.

Rather than water, the river was formed by a white saint spring. A layer of faint white mist hovered above the river, making it seem smoky and ethereal.

All types of flora grew along the riverbank. Most were centuries old, but some were thousands of years old.

Of course, this grade of flowers and grass was useless to Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi. They didn't even look.

Mu Lingxi sighed. "If someone below the Half-Saint Realm discovered this saint spring, they'd probably start collecting it crazily. But it's useless to us."

"It's useless to us, but it can nurture flowers and grass," Zhang Ruochen said. "If we continue searching upstream, we might be able to find the precious ten-thousand-year-old medicines."

Some precious ten-thousand-year-old medicines could improve a Saint King's cultivation too.

Mu Lingxi nodded. She spread her phoenix wings and flew off.

Zhang Ruochen used special foot techniques and walked down the riverbank. He seemed relaxed, but he wasn't any slower than Mu Lingxi.

Other cultivators had already searched the flowers along the bank multiple times. They couldn't find ten-thousand-year saint medicines at all. Even those above 3,000 years old were rare.

After walking for around seven or eight miles, Zhang Ruochen suddenly stopped. Seeming to have made some discovery, he stared at the surface of the river.

There were small whirlpools in the center.

Just then, he'd used his strong Spiritual Power and sensed strange ripples under the whirlpools.

The ripple appeared and then disappeared. When he searched with Spiritual Power, he couldn't sense anything amiss. This made him suspect whether he'd sensed incorrectly.

“What's wrong?”

Mu Lingxi flew over from the other side and landed beside Zhang Ruochen. She also looked toward the whirlpool.

“Seems to be a great discovery.”

Zhang Ruochen took the Mercury Gourd out and sent it out. It hovered above the river and he uttered, “Collect.”

Extreme attractive force exploded from the gourd, sucking the saint spring in. The river quickly grew shallow. A moment later, the river stopped and revealed the dark purple bed.

Zhang Ruochen focused his eyes and saw a mouth in the riverbed. He didn't know where it led. It was less than two meters wide.

A shocking medicinal fragrance emanated from the cave.

Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi's expressions turned joyous at the same time. They were about to go search inside the cave.

But just then, wind sounded in the distance. A familiar voice rang out too. “Such rich medicinal fragrance. Could there be 100-thousand-year-old medicine here?”

The next moment, five figures with white angel wings appeared in Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi's line of sight.

They were all strong Saint Kings. One of them was Lan Sibai, supposedly Shang Ziyang's cousin.

Chapter 1652 - Coward

Chapter 1652: Coward

Whoosh, Whoosh!

Five saint kings from the angel race landed on the sides of the river.

Lan Sibai's eyes glinted when he saw Mu Lingxi.

However, he immediately looked gloomy again as he saw Zhang Ruochen standing beside her.

Some of the other four saint kings of the angel race were staring at the Mercury Gourd floating in the air while some were staring at the mysterious cave on the river.

A female angel who looked beautiful, with eyes like sapphires, said, shocked, "That gourd is a saint valuable of water characteristic, and it's probably worth more than an ancient divine medicinal pill a hundred thousand years old."

An angel with a fiery engraving on his face looked greedy. He thought for a moment and yelled, "It's an inborn gourd, yet we found it, which is our great luck! Let's get it now!"

"That's right. Don't let the other monks notice it, otherwise, there'll be a huge fight."

The five saint kings from the angel race looked at each other and transmitted their voices as if Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi weren't there.

Mu Lingxi was outraged. Those saint kings from the angel race had no shame. They obviously wanted to seize the Mercury Gourd from them.

She took out her Phoenix Flume, ready to kill the first angel-race saint king who was going to seize the Mercury Gourd.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed Mu Lingxi's wrist, smiled and transmitted his voice. "Since they mistook the Mercury Gourd

as an inborn valuable, then I'll use this inborn valuable to teach them a lesson.”

The angel-race saint king with a fiery engraving flew above the Mercury Gourd, wearing a pair of crimson gloves, and pressed down, trying to catch the gourd.

The other four saint kings from the angel race all looked to Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi. If they dared move a bit, they would be attacked by the four of them at the same time.

You're unlucky enough to expose your true treasure gourd,
The four saint kings of the angel race thought.

Lan Sibai curved his lips, thinking about how to take that ethereal woman of the phoenix race.

However, to the surprise of the four saint kings of the angel race, the two people weren't furious at all, and they weren't trying to stop Saint King Qiulan, who was trying to get the gourd.

Are they too scared to offend Heaven Field?

Just as Lan Sibai thought this...

Ah!

A terrifying sound came from the gourd saint valuable.

It was the voice of Saint King Qiulan.

The four saint kings of the angel race were shocked. They immediately looked away from Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi toward the gourd saint valuable.

The gourd was still floating above the river, but Saint King Qiulan was nowhere to be found.

The four angel saint kings were all dazed, looking confused.

Lan Sibai thought and said, “Did Saint King Qiulan go into the cave to try to catch the divine medicinal pill?”

The five saint kings of the angel race weren't a tight team. They wanted their respective benefits, and there were some hidden conflicts among them.

The only female saint king of the angel race shot a glance at Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi and said, "Let's get the gourd before anything changes."

Lan Sibai nodded and said, "Even if Qiulan got into the cave fist, he won't be able to take all the divine medicinal pills by himself."

The beautiful female angel spread her wings that were engulfed in saint light, flying as high as the Mercury Gourd and taking out a fur bag, moving it toward the gourd.

Whoosh!

The Mercury Gourd shook, and the entry to the gourd suddenly aimed at that female angel.

Saint King Luoqi, who was a third-step saint king yelled, "Careful!"

Zhang Ruochen exerted power from all ten fingers, performing Spatial Twist on that female angel. The female angel couldn't get away even after using all her power, and she was sucked into the Mercury Gourd in the end.

The angel saint kings couldn't notice that he used the space power given Zhang Ruochen's cultivation and mind power.

However, the angel saint kings weren't idiots. They speculated that it was Zhang Ruochen or Mu Lingxi who used the Mercury Gourd to capture Saint King Qiulan and Saint King Jiya.

Saint King Luoqi drew a long sword, staring at Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi. He yelled, "Let them go now!"

"Finally, they stop ignoring us."

Zhang Ruochen smiled and pretended to look confused. "What are you talking about? I don't understand."

Mu Lingxi wanted to laugh, but she suppressed the urge and said, "We were just passing by. Who are you asking us to let go?"

"Stop playing dumb in front of me. Saint King Qiulan and Saint King Jiya come from an incredible background, and

they're not yours to mess with. Let them out now and give them your gourd." Saint King Luoqi couldn't look more solemn.

Lan Sibai thought for a bit, and he transmitted his voice to Mu Lingxi. "Girl, you've gotten yourself into big trouble! Saint King Qiulan is the only son of an emperor angel, while Saint King Jiya is a grandson adored by a God. It's humiliating for them to be captured in your gourd. Even if you let them out, they won't just let it go easily."

Lan Sibai then observed Mu Lingxi, hoping that she would be terrified.

To his disappointment, Mu Lingxi was very calm.

Lan Sibai then kept transmitting his voice to Mu Lingxi. "As long as you let the two of them out, I'll definitely help you placate them and make sure that you're safe, but you might not be able to keep your gourd saint valuable."

Mu Lingxi couldn't help chuckling and said, "Can you please shut up. It has nothing to do with us. They're the only ones to blame, yet they're too weak to tame even a gourd."

Saint King Luoqi's eyes glinted. "Since they dare attack us and capture Saint King Qiulan and Saint King Jiya, let's suppress them."

Zhang Ruochen admired how shameless these saint kings were.

"There're some other monks staying around. We should get rid of these three angel saint kings as fast as possible, otherwise, it'll be more difficult to get all the divine medicinal pills when those monks come here!"

Zhang Ruochen noticed six to seven other forces using his mind power, covering dozens of square miles.

The monks didn't attack them out of nowhere. Instead, they were hiding. They were either afraid of the monks from Heaven Field or waiting for the best time to take action.

The situation was getting worse and worse.

Saint King Luoqi, Saint King Senyu and Lan Sibai all took out saint weapons to attack Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi from three different directions.

Just as Zhang Ruochen was about to attack, Xiang Chunan's yelling came from the forest in the distance. "Who dares encircle my brother? Are you suicidal?"

Boom!

The ground shook.

Xiang Chunan jumped up three hundred feet high like an ape, carrying an iron hammer that was as large as a millstone. He dived and hit the back of Saint King Luoqi with his hammer.

Bang!

A protection rune on Saint King Luoqi's body cracked while he dived, making a huge pit on the ground.

This angel great being that was a third-step saint king lay in the pit with his back bleeding and shaking. He couldn't stand up at all.

On the other side, Zhang Ruochen wielded his sword and suppressed Saint King Senyu with one strike.

Bang!

Saint King Senyu kneeled on the ground with one knee while holding himself with one of his hands. He had to use all his strength to ward off Zhang Ruochen's sword, yet Zhang Ruochen looked very relaxed.

Whoosh!

Mu Lingxi wielded her Phoenix Flume, knocking Lan Sibai back.

Extreme Yin Pluto Ice Power was released from the Phoenix Flume, freezing Lan Sibai.

Lan Sibai stumbled back to the shore of the river, paling. He immediately triggered ten thousand patterns saint armor and pinched a rune between his fingers.

Lan Sibai now realized that the couple was difficult to mess with.

Especially that human man. He had greatly underestimated him before. He wasn't a half-step saint king. Instead, he was an incredible being who pretended to be weak.

And where did that Dark Fool come from? How did he severely injure Luo Qi with one strike?

Lan Sibai was intimidated by the three people in front of him. He immediately performed body techniques and flew far away. As he ran away, he yelled, "You guys made a huge mistake. How dare you attack the monks from Heaven Field? You will have no place on the God-Naming Platform."

Xiang Chunan yelled, carrying his iron hammer, "Stop running! I'll hit you with my hammer again!"

Xiang Chunan's voice was so loud that it sounded like it exploded beside Lan Sibai's ears, which terrified him. He then rushed away faster.

"Ugh. What a bunch of cowards!" Xiang Chunan shook his head and sighed.

The monks who were hiding in the dark were all shocked, as they didn't expect the attack to be this powerful, as they easily defeated the four-wing angels from Heaven Field. They were suppressed, injured and scared away.

However, they didn't think it was something to be proud of. On the contrary, they felt that Zhang Ruochen and the other two were being too impulsive.

"Heaven Field is one of the four ruling fields. The monks from other fields either ingratiate themselves to them or avoid them, yet they suppressed the four-wing angels from Heaven Field. How dare they? It was a slap in the face for Heaven Field."

"They should've just avoided the conflict. At least that way they wouldn't have offended Heaven Field."

"I heard that a four-wing crimson angel from Heaven Field is in the Outer East Yard. If Lan Sibai asks him here, it'll end tragically for those three."

“Four-wing crimson angel? Are you kidding? How can someone like that not go to the inner four yards?”

Chapter 1653 - Mysterious Cave

Chapter 1653: Mysterious Cave

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen swept his sword forward and hit the left side of Saint King Senyu's face. His cheekbone caved in, blood flowed out of his mouth, and his spine cracked.

Saint King Senyu felt his saint soul shake and his vision went dark. All his Spiritual Power and Holy Qi were scattered.

This was the God-Naming Platform Conference that the Truth Godly Palace hosted, so Zhang Ruochen didn't kill Saint King Senyu and Saint King Luoqi. He just tied them up with Saint-binding Chains and tossed them into the Mercury Gourd.

He studied Xiang Chunan and asked curiously, "Chunan, how come you appeared here coincidentally?"

"Coincidence? I have the Thousand-Mile Vision. I saw you and sister-in-law get attacked by five bird men from hundreds of miles away, so I hurried over to help you. I didn't know that these bird men were so weak. You could flatten them without me even doing anything." Xiang Chunan looked like he hadn't had enough fun.

"They're not bird men," Zhang Ruochen said seriously.

"They're angels from Heaven Field, one of the four top fields. You should leave quickly and not get involved, or else you'll bring trouble on yourself."

Hearing this, Xiang Chunan's hair was about to stand up in anger. "We said we'll go through all troubles and joys together. Am I the type to shrink back? I'm a man and I keep my word. So what if they're angels from Heaven Field? I'm not scared."

Zhang Ruochen stared deeply at Xiang Chunan. His heartstrings were pulled.

“Go through all troubles and joys together” was such a rare phrase. It was even more precious to hear when trouble was hanging above one’s head.

If Zhang Ruochen had thought becoming sworn brothers with Xiang Chunan and Feng Yan was a play before, he now had to take the relationship seriously.

“Go through all troubles and joys together” was carved into his heart.

“Okay, go through all troubles and joys together.”

Not wanting more time for dangers to arise, Zhang Ruochen put the Mercury Gourd away. He led Mu Lingxi and Xiang Chunan into the cave in the riverbed.

Kaboom.

The saint spring upstream flooded down, filling the dried river with water again.

Whoosh, whoosh!

Many figures flew over from all directions, landing on the riverbank. They all looked hesitant. They wanted to charge into the cave too, but they feared the power of Zhang Ruochen’s trio.

After all, those five Angel Saint Kings had been crushed so easily. Who still dared to fight with them?

...

In an ancient medicine garden of the Outer East Yard, Lan Sibai saw Nie Zhan, a red angel with four wings.

Nie Zhan was tall with broad shoulders. The two pairs of red wings on his back spread open like two red clouds hugging his body. He was filled with a bloodthirsty aura.

Other than Nie Zhan, there were close to 100 strong beings there. They were all from worlds that were friendly with Heaven Field.

Amongst them, a monk with no facial features stood side by side with Nie Zhan. His saintly might wasn’t any weaker than Nie Zhan’s.

This monk's name was Faceless.

This group surrounded the ancient medicine garden so people from other worlds couldn't enter. They monopolized the garden. Other people feared Heaven Field, so they were angry but didn't dare to say anything.

When Lan Sibai hurried over, most of the medicine there had been picked already.

A beam of red light shot into the sky from Nie Zhan's body. "He dared to attack prides from Heaven Field. Who is he? Could he be a godly descendant from one of the top 100 worlds?"

Usually, only those from the top 100 worlds dared to go up against Heaven Field. Even then, they were forced to attack instead of proactively attacking.

Proactively attacking was a provocation and had very serious consequences.

Gritting his teeth, Lan Sibai said, "They definitely aren't from the top 100 worlds. They're very unfamiliar. They must be the top figures from a weak world."

A voice came from Faceless's stomach. "You said earlier that they have a gourd treasure that can suck in Saint Kings?"

"Yes, the gourd must be a top rare treasure that they found at the God-Naming Platform. It's very strong and emanates a water element Qi that is even heavier than 100-thousand-year-old medicine." The image of the Mercury Gourd hovering in the air appeared in Lan Sibai's mind. He had a strong desire for it.

"What is the situation with the cave under the saint spring?" Faceless continued asking.

Lan Sibai's expression grew furious. "Divine light shone from that cave, along with the fragrance of medicine. There's probably 100-thousand-year-old medicine in there. We discovered the cave first, but those three were barbaric and shameless. They attacked us secretly without any warning. Otherwise, with how strong the five of us are, how could we be defeated so tragically?"

Nie Zhan could become a red four-winged angel, so he was naturally very wise. He heard some holes in the story and guessed what had happened from Lan Sibai's subtle expressions.

Lan Sibai's group took advantage of their strong background and identity as cultivators of Heaven Field. They were used to intimidating and bullying cultivators of weaker worlds.

This time, they must've gotten their eyes on the gourd and wanted to steal it but took a hit.

Of course, no matter the reason, Saint King Luoqi and Jiya had extraordinary statuses. As the top figure of Heaven Field guarding the outer four yards, Nie Zhan couldn't just sit and watch.

Whether they were right or wrong, Heaven Field was one of the ruling fields and couldn't take any losses.

Plus, Nie Zhan was quite interested in the gourd and mysterious cave too.

Nie Zhan huffed. "He dared to be so violent toward Heaven Field cultivators. No matter who they are, we must make them pay for this. Otherwise, what will become of our reputation? Lan Sibai, lead the way."

Lan Sibai was overjoyed. With Nie Zhan there, that human scholar and Dark Fool would definitely be dead! The gourd would probably fall into the hands of Nie Zhan, but he could take the opportunity to take over that pretty phoenix girl.

Earlier, that phoenix girl had almost hurt him with a strike and Lan Sibai still hated that. He'd have to make her beg for forgiveness later.

Thinking of this, Lan Sibai's lips curled up in an evil smirk.

With Lan Sibai leading the way, Nie Zhan and Faceless led a dozen Saint Kings quickly toward the saint spring.

...

Zhang Ruochen was the first to enter the cave. The thick fragrance was almost liquid. When he breathed, his organs seemed to have been cleansed.

“Could there really be a 100-thousand-year-old medicine?”
Zhang Ruochen’s heart pounded.

The deeper he went, the wider the space. Divine light flowed on all the walls around him. Perhaps due to being under the divine Qi, the stone walls were harder than metal.

Mu Lingxi was confused. “Was this cave made naturally or is it man-made?”

Slam!

Zhang Ruochen hit the wall with his sword.

A three-foot-deep gash appeared on the wall. Then purple Qi flowed out of the gash and it disappeared quickly.

“It can heal itself.”

Xiang Chunan pursed his thick lips, growing cautious. This cave felt too strange. They might run into unpredictable danger.

The cave was filled with purple, red, and blue haze that kept growing heavier.

The thick haze could block a cultivator’s vision and Spiritual Power. Even with Zhang Ruochen’s Heavenly Eye, he could only see smoke before him.

The more this was so, the more possible danger was.

Just then, Xiang Chunan cried out behind him. “Saint medicine! Ten-thousand-year-old medicine!”

Then the Dark Fool rushed past Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi.

“Is his Thousand-Mile Vision that amazing?”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t see a bit of saint medicine, but he trusted Xiang Chunan’s eyes, so he also sped up and followed him.

In the front, the cave grew wider until it was more than 50 meters wide. A lot of purple, red, and blue specks of light shimmered in the fog.

Each speck was a saint medicine.

Xiang Chunan kept howling in ecstasy. “This is such a paradise! Brother Ruochen, Sister-in-law, hurry and start picking! We hit a fortune this time!”

Xiang Chunan turned around and was shocked. He saw that 64 Zhang Ruochens had appeared in the cave and were picking the medicine crazily.

“You can use Spiritual Power clones to pick medicine. This isn’t fair.”

Xiang Chunan was sweating from anxiety. He hurriedly went to pick the medicine, afraid that he would be slower than Zhang Ruochen. However, his two hands couldn’t compete with 128 hands. Zhang Ruochen was way too fast for him.

“Don’t worry,” Zhang Ruochen said. “The three of us will share the medicine from the cave equally.”

Hearing this, Xiang Chunan was overjoyed. “Brother Ruochen, you’re a great brother. This is what ‘sharing troubles and joys’ means.”

Mu Lingxi didn’t pick the medicine. Instead, she stood on the side and pressed her ear to the stone wall. Suddenly, her expression changed drastically. “A large group of cultivators entered the cave and are hurrying over.”

Xiang Chunan picked up his metal hammer and yelled, “So many people who don’t want their lives. I’ll go crush them.”

Zhang Ruochen was picking the medicine. Frowning, he said, “Come back. Earlier, the three of us easily defeated five Saint Kings of Heaven Field. Regular cultivators wouldn’t dare to come in. I believe the ones who entered are most likely top figures of Heaven Field invited by Lan Sibai.”

Heaven Field and their supporting fields were filled with strong figures. No matter how strong Xiang Chunan was, he couldn’t fight an entire group by himself.

“Okay, I’ll let them go for now.”

Xiang Chunan’s muscles swelled and shone with black light. He swung his metal hammer onto the stone wall and actually made the sturdy stone collapse. He quickly blocked the tunnel.

Seeing this, Zhang Ruochen was stunned. This Dark Fool's power is a bit crazy. I underestimated him earlier.

Mu Lingxi's brows creased. "Brother Xiang, if you blocked the tunnel, how will we get out?"

"Huh?"

Xiang Chunan froze. Clearly, he didn't even think about this problem.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen's voice traveled into their ears with shock and joy. "There really is 100-thousand-year-old medicine."

Chapter 1654 - Psychic Sage

Chapter 1654: Psychic Sage

“An ancient divine medicinal pill that’s a hundred thousand years old?”

Xiang Chunan and Mu Lingxi were exhilarated, rushing forward.

Even supreme saints would go mad for an ancient divine medicinal pill that was a hundred thousand years old, not to mention them. Such true treasures were very scarce in the universe.

There was a simple Taoist temple made of stone in the cave, and the temple was only around three feet tall with four levels. It didn’t seem to be a place where monks lived, yet there was a thick fragrance coming out.

And the small stone Taoist temple was covered by purple mist, making it look mysterious.

Xiang Chunan licked his lips and said, “Why is there a stone Taoist temple here? It’s too small for anyone to live in. Who built it?”

“The medicinal fragrance is so thick that I can feel the saint Qi tumbling after inhaling it. Perhaps there is an ancient divine medicinal pill that’s a hundred thousand years old.” Mu Lingxi’s eyes gleamed.

“Let me smash this Taoist temple.”

As Xiang Chunan raised his iron hammer and was about to hit the temple, Zhang Ruo Chen stopped him. “Don’t. If you damage that ancient divine medicinal pill, its function will be hampered.”

“That’s right. I shouldn’t have done that.”

Xiang Chunan slapped his forehead and put his iron hammer away. He shook his body and shrank his muscles and bones, becoming the size of a fist and walking into the temple.

Mu Lingxi also shrank her body, turning into a three-inch-tall beautiful fairy, flying to the second level.

Zhang Ruochen didn't get into the Taoist temple immediately. Instead, he took out the Eighteen Pool Formation Flag and stuck it around the temple, after which he shrank his body until the flag pool was thicker than his body.

Just as Zhang Ruochen was about to enter the Taoist temple...

Bang!

He heard a deafening sound coming out of it.

The stone temple shook and cracked, and a powerful purple force gushed out.

Whoosh Whoosh!

The Eighteen Pool Formation Flags all gleamed with crimson light.

Xiang Chunan yelled, "Brother Ruochen, stop that old man! Don't let him run away!"

"Old man?"

Before Zhang Ruochen could realize what happened, a trace of purple light rushed out of the Taoist temple. It was too fast to be stopped.

Bang!

The purple light clashed with the Eighteen Pool Formation Flags, and a blonde-haired elder in a purple Taoist cape fell onto the ground.

There was a circular golden hat on the blonde-haired elder, and it was several times larger than his body. It looked like the leaf of a sage.

"The ancient divine medicinal pill that's a hundred thousand years old, Psychic Sage."

Zhang Ruochen yelled and performed a handprint to suppress the blonde-hair elder.

The blonde-haired elder was the Psychic Sage.

Zhang Ruochen was afraid that he would kill him, so he only used thirty percent of its power.

The blonde-haired elder formed a handprint, and thick saint Qi gushed out of his body. The purple Qi formed a cloud with countless lightning bolts flying toward Zhang Ruochen.

“He can perform a saint spell?”

Zhang Ruochen was dazed as he performed spatial move to dodge it.

Boom!

The purple lighting cloud hit the stone wall, leaving a handprint while cracking it.

And then, lots of saintly way rules gushed out of the blonde-haired elder, and they gathered in his arms while he yelled, “Mountain-Moving Force.”

Boom!

A formation flag was knocked away by his power.

The blonde-haired elder then waved his arm, and an ancient bronze carriage the size of a palm flew out of his sleeves. He immediately got into the carriage and rushed deep into the cave.

Mu Lingxi flew out of the stone Taoist temple and shifted back to her original size, gleaming with saint light.

Boom!

Xiang Chunan turned back to his real size and crushed the Taoist temple. He then carried his iron hammer and rushed toward where the elder had rushed. “How dare you ambush me? I’ll get you!”

Xiang Chunan was kicked in the butt the second he got into the Taoist temple and was tripped, so he was very resentful. He wanted to catch the elder and skin him alive.

Mu Lingxi was surprised. “Damn it. A divine medicinal pill managed to refine into an elder with impressive techniques. Who taught him the techniques and saint spells?”

Zhang Ruochen was also amazed by the power of that elder, as even the Eighteen Pool Formation Flags couldn't trap him.

A wildlife divine medicinal pill would never have any fighting power even after a hundred thousand years if no monks taught it techniques and saint spells.

If that elder had kept staying in a cave like that, he would never have gotten such tremendous power.

However, that elder didn't seem to have met the creatures outside much, so he was still scared by Zhang Ruochen, Xiang Chunan, and Mu Lingxi, regardless of his cultivation.

Zhang Ruochen released mind power to inspect the ruins, and he did find something.

He bent over and put away all the crushed stones, and he found a fragment of a turtle shell at the bottom of the Taoist temple. There was a bizarre picture on the fragment, a person in a weird position. He was sitting with his legs crossed and his arms up.

There were also dozens of dimmed characters.

The characters dated back to such ancient times that Zhang Ruochen couldn't comprehend their meaning with his mind power.

Although that fragment of the turtle shell looked very ordinary, there was no way the one-hundred-thousand-year-old Psychic Sage had hid it in the Taoist temple for no reason. There must be something extraordinary about it...

"I'll study it after I get out." Zhang Ruochen put the turtle shell fragment into his space ring.

Boom!

The cave that was sealed by Xiang Chunan was attacked by others, making a tumbling sound.

Mu Lingxi was dazed and said, "The monks have arrived. They'll crack the cave very soon with their cultivation."

"Let's go and rush toward where the Psychic Sage runs. Perhaps there're other exits to this cave."

Zhang Ruochen grabbed Mu Lingxi's arm and rushed forward as fast as possible. After running for a long while, the cave seemed to have moved upward and become smaller.

Mu Lingxi was pleased and said, "There's air flowing at the front of the cave. It might be the exit."

Zhang Ruochen frowned. There was indeed air flowing, but the air was freezing with Yin Qi and death Qi.

Gradually, the air in the cave turned black.

Mu Lingxi now realized something was off. She stopped smiling and looked more and more solemn.

Whoosh!

They rushed out of the cave. The dark world in front of them was filled with Yin Qi, and they felt the tingling as they touched it. The Yin Qi and Death Qi were eroding their bodies.

Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi immediately released saint Qi, using layers of saint light to protect their bodies, expelling the Yin Qi and Death Qi.

"What is this place? It looks more horrifying than the netherworld." Mu Lingxi noticed that this was definitely a hazardous place, and she was so terrified that she grabbed Zhang Ruochen's clothes.

Zhang Ruochen was also a bit scared.

He felt like the Goddess of Fear infused the fear into his body using his godly power.

Zhang Ruochen tried to remain calm and observed the surroundings. However, even after using his Heavenly Eyes and mind power, he could only see things less than one hundred feet away from him.

"Don't you feel that the forces here are similar to those from the forbidden area above the white bone slope?" asked Zhang Ruochen.

"In... Indeed..."

Mu Lingxi's face paled, and she said, "Brother Xiang is nowhere to be found, as he went chasing the Psychic Sage."

Should we follow the way back or wait for him here?”

If it was the forbidden area above the white bone slope; it wasn't a place for them to trespass upon.

Lan Sibai's voice came out of the cave. “There's airflow at the front. It should be the exit.”

“They're indeed the monks from Heaven Field. Seems like we can't get back!” Zhang Ruochen grabbed Mu Lingxi's arms, performed spatial move, and vanished.

After a while, Lan Sibai, Wu Xiang, Nie Zhan, the four-wing crimson angel, and more than ten other saint kings rushed out of the cave. They were engulfed in glowing saint light, yet Zhang Ruochen, who was hiding hundreds of feet away, could only see their shadows.

Nie Zhan was perceptive enough to figure out where this place was, so he didn't do anything.

Lan Sibai felt that his state of mind was wavering with horror, and his legs couldn't help shaking. “Should we keep chasing them, or should we head back?”

Nie Zhan shot him a glare and said, “There's some force of the ancient divine medicinal pill in the cave. Obviously, those people picked the valuable. We might not even be able to find such treasure in the inner four yards. How can we let the three of them walk away with it?”

Wu Xiang also craved for the divine medicinal pill that was a hundred thousand years old. He said, “Although this place is extremely dangerous, it presents a great opportunity. We can find some other treasures even if we can't find the ancient divine medicinal pill.”

Lan Sibai said, “But we don't even know where they're heading to.”

Lan Sibai wanted to say something, but Nie Zhan said it first. “Whoever has the guts to venture, follow me, and those who don't, stay here and guard the exit.”

After a while, Nie Zhan and Wu Xiang vanished in the dark with eight powerful saint kings, following the footprints on the

ground.

Lan Sibai and the other six saint kings guarded the exit of the cave.

Lan Sibai took out a set of formation flags and stuck them around the cave, making a formation to prevent other monks from coming here.

Another creature that was slender took out a stack of jade formation compasses and buried them in the mud, forming an attack formation to prevent creatures from ambushing them from the dark.

As for the other saint kings, they were all cautious, setting up either defense formations or attack formations. They'd heard a lot about this forbidden place, so they all felt very unsettled.

Chapter 1655 - Bloody Ground

Chapter 1655: Bloody Ground

Mu Lingxi sent Zhang Ruochen a message. “It’s so strange. The cultivators of Heaven Field seem to have split into two groups.”

“Not every cultivator dares to come into this forbidden zone,” Zhang Ruochen said. “It must be that one group followed the footprints and scent in the air to pursue Xiang Chunan and the Psychic Sage. Another group doesn’t dare to venture in, so they stayed outside the cave.”

“Then we must hurry over and help Brother Xiang,” Mu Lingxi said.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “Xiang Chunan has the Thousand-Mile Vision and his eyesight is far better than us. He has a great advantage in this forbidden zone. He’d probably discover the Heaven Field cultivators before they can even find him, so there’s nothing to worry about.”

“Then, we should...”

Mu Lingxi sensed the murderous Qi pouring out of Zhang Ruochen’s body and immediately stopped.

Zhang Ruochen stared at the exit of the cave. “This forbidden zone isn’t controlled by the Truth Godly Palace. If we get trapped by them, what do you think they’ll do?”

Mu Lingxi understood what Zhang Ruochen wanted to do. She tugged her hair softly and said, “But there are many cultivators guarding the exit. Each of them is in the Saint King Realm.”

“The enemies are out in the open,” Zhang Ruochen said. “We are hidden. This is an advantage.”

“Okay, since you’ve decided, I won’t try to dissuade you. What do you need me to do?” Mu Lingxi lifted her pale face

and studied Zhang Ruochen.

“No hurry,” Zhang Ruochen said. “Wait until I get closer and test how strong they are before acting.”

A black-robed man who was skilled in formations had set up a fog formation with the cave exit as the center.

Hiss, hiss.

Cold black smoke rose up from the ground. All land within 100 feet became one with the blackness of the forbidden zone.

“With the fog formation, even if the zone has prehistoric monsters, they won’t be able to find us.” The black-robed man held a crystal formation ball and sat down.

Lan Sibai took out a red piece of jade and threw it out. When it landed, it started burning with a whoosh and turned into a fireball.

“What are you doing?” a bone thin creature berated. “Do you want to lure the monsters over?”

“What are you scared of?” Lan Sibai asked casually. “With the fog formation blocking all light and heat, even if there are monsters here, they won’t be able to discover us.”

The bone thin creature was like a bat. His cultivation was even higher than Lan Sibai, but Lan Sibai was from Heaven Field, so he didn’t dare to offend him. Thus, he stopped speaking and closed his eyes, using his ears to listen to any noises in the darkness. He was on high alert.

The saint jade burned and firelight illuminated the darkness.

Feeling the waves of heat, Lan Sibai’s fear finally scattered, so he asked, “I keep hearing you all mention prehistoric monsters...what exactly do they look like? Are they really creatures that have survived from prehistoric times ’till now?”

The black-robed man holding the crystal formation ball shook his head. “It’s not that dramatic. I heard that it’s creatures with prehistoric Yin Qi... Might be dead spirits.”

“In that case, what’s so scary about it?” Lan Sibai scoffed.

“The prehistoric Yin Qi may be the evil that destroyed the civilization before Heaven Field. Even a Supreme Saint fears it.”

Suddenly, the bone thin bat’s ears twitched. He gestured for them to stop talking and sent a message to the six Saint Kings. “Movement in the darkness.”

Lan Sibai’s smile vanished. Growing nervous, he summoned his white sword and gripped it.

The other Saint Kings held their breath and tensed to the max. They all looked into the darkness, but they couldn’t sense anything wrong at all.

Just as they furrowed their brows, thinking that the bat had an auditory hallucination, the entire space shook violently.

Kaboom!

The space exploded and caved in. Half of their outer formation was destroyed.

“Can these prehistoric creatures use spatial power too?” Lan Sibai kept retreating in fear.

“Everyone, spread out!” the bat yelled. “King Yinjie, hurry and activate the formation. Stop the second wave of the attack.”

King Yinjie, dressed in black robes, pointed his ten withered fingers at the crystal ball to activate the formation. But then there were crackles and a layer of ice spread from the distance. It actually froze the formation runes so they couldn’t be activated.

“Oh, no. It’s Extreme Yin Pluto Ice. Everyone, hurry and leave.”

The bat spread its wings and flew dozens of feet into the air. His expression was dark. Evil Qi bounded out of his body. Next, a ring-shaped Ten-thousand-year-old saint weapon released Second Yao power and attacked somewhere in the darkness.

Boom!

The ring landed on the ground and made the ground collapse. Wild energy spread in all directions.

Whoosh!

A spatial crack flew out of the darkness and hit the bat's abdomen. Blood sprayed out.

The bat cried out in pain and fell to the ground, landing on the ice. Strands of Extreme Yin Pluto Ice Qi surged into his wound.

Gradually, his cries disappeared and he was sealed in ice on the ground.

The expressions of the remaining six Saint Kings changed. They hadn't expected that this place would be so dangerous. In an instant, a Saint King had died and they didn't even know what the enemy looked like.

Whoosh!

Dozens of spatial cracks flew out of the darkness.

When they discovered the spatial cracks, they were already within 100 feet of them. They had no time to dodge them. Blocking them was even more impossible.

“Saint Light Rune.”

Lan Sibai sent out one of his runes. A layer of white saint light emerged, enveloping the six Saint Kings.

The dozens of spatial cracks landed on the white light like rain landing in a river. They produced ripples but didn't tear it apart.

Lan Sibai's lips curled up and he scoffed. “My Saint Light Rune is supported by the power of light. It's not something spatial cracks can rip apart.”

The Way of Light was one of the ancient ways.

With the power of light, the rune was very strong and could fend off all kinds of power in the world. Only the power of darkness countered it.

If spatial power wasn't strong enough, it couldn't penetrate the power of light.

The dark-robed King Yinjie's eyes were cold. "The enemy shouldn't be a prehistoric monster. He must be a spatial cultivator. Who are you and why are you attacking us?"

There was no answer in the darkness.

The light from Lan Sibai's rune kept dimming. Small cracks appeared on the rune scroll too.

"The energy is about to be used up. Everyone, think of a solution." Lan Sibai was pained too. After all, he only had one extremely precious Saint Light Rune.

"I have a Supreme Saint's Saint Figure Rune."

A second step Saint King woman in black robes quickly activated all her demonic Qi to her back.

An image appeared on her pale bare back. It was like demonic veins swimming on her snowy skin.

Boom!

The power bursting from her grew stronger and stronger. Soon, she broke past the second step level and reached the third step, fourth step, fifth step...

Moments later, her cultivation reached the seventh step Saint King level. Her combat ability had improved greatly.

This wasn't her power anymore. It was the power of her race's Supreme Saint.

Her vision improved greatly and she saw a handsome scholar in blue clothing standing on a piece of wood a dozen meters away.

Their eyes met.

Then the woman clenched her hands into claws and attacked the scholar.

As if possessed by a demon, she had unlimited strength. The claw came from thin air and shook the world. It was definitely the power of a seventh step Saint King.

Faced with this, the scholar was still composed. He pulled a piece of white jade from his sleeves and sent it out.

Five-colored Qi poured out of the jade. Then, an extremely advanced power filled the air.

Boom!

The Saint Figure Rune on the woman's back was restricted by that power and exploded.

Without the support of the Saint Figure Rune, the woman was like a leaking balloon. She immediately returned to the second step level.

“How is this possible? Who are you? Why do you have the Merits Godly Stamp?” Staring at the hovering jade, the woman was extremely shocked.

The scholar still didn't say anything. There was no point in talking to a dead person.

With one hand behind his back, he held a heavy sword in the other and brought it down.

Poof!

Sword Way Xuangang emerged from the sword and hit the black-robed woman. Her defenses were all shattered. Finally, the sword hit her body.

Vermillion blood dyed the black dirt.

The beautiful features turned into a skeleton; a beauty turned into a corpse. Another Saint King had died.

In the distance, the remaining five Saint Kings were all shocked. Lan Sibai kept shaking his head. “No, this is impossible. How can the enemy have a Merits Godly Stamp?”

The Merits Godly Stamp was the treasure of the Merits Godly Palace. Using the Merits Qi in the stamp, one could repress and destroy a cultivator's Saint Figure Rune. Any weapon or outer force that improved combat ability lost effectiveness before the stamp.

When Shang Ziyang sent Wang Xu's group to go kill Zhang Ruochen, he'd given them a Merits Godly Stamp. After the

assassination failed, the stamp fell into Zhang Ruochen's hands.

Lan Sibai's Saint Light Rune dimmed completely and lost its defensive abilities. It cracked into paper butterflies and fluttered to the ground.

Zhang Ruochen, disguised as a scholar, cast Spatial Collapse again, breaking the space where the five were. In an instant, two Saint Kings cried out as they were swallowed by the broken space.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen used the Spatial Move to appear behind King Yinjie. He beheaded the man with one strike.

Behind Zhang Ruochen, a broadsword with complete power cut down. Like a silver moon falling from the sky, it contained endless murderous intent and was about to kill Zhang Ruochen.

Without looking back, Zhang Ruochen waved his hand. He sent a three-foot-long spatial crack flying out. It cut the broadsword in half.

Poof, poof.

At the same time, a spatial crack cut the waist of the extremely tall first step Saint King. The two halves of the body flew in different directions.

Zhang Ruochen crushed King Yinjie's head that was flying in the air. Then he threw out his heavy sword and stabbed the head of the man who'd just been cut in half.

In an instant, six of the seven Saint Kings were killed. The ground was littered with corpses and blood.

Under the firelight, Lan Sibai looked at the blurry blue-robed scholar. His legs trembled and he almost fell to his knees.

Tap, tap.

The scholar held his bloody sword and walked toward him.

Lan Sibai finally saw the scholar's features clearly and had never felt so shocked before. While retreating, he asked in a

quivering voice, “You... How can it be you? How are you skilled in the Spatial Way?”

Chapter 1656 - Coexistence of Reality and the Void

Chapter 1656: Coexistence of Reality and the Void

Whoosh!

Mu Lingxi flew out of the dark and landed beside Zhang Ruochen like a breeze.

Zhang Ruochen stared at Lan Sibai and said, “Are you really Shang Ziyang’s cousin?”

Lan Sibai seemed to see a chance to survive and said, “It’s true. You’re very close to my cousin, aren’t you?”

Lan Sibai thought this way because the blue-caped person in front of him had a Merits Godly Stamp.

“Indeed.” Zhang Ruochen smiled.

Lan Sibai felt relieved. He ingratiated himself to Zhang Ruochen and said, “It was all a misunderstanding... It was all my fault... Please, for the sake of my cousin, spare my life...”

Bang!

Zhang Ruochen pierced through Lan Sibai’s head with his sword.

Lan Sibai had no idea why Zhang Ruochen had killed him, even at the point of death. He fell onto the ground, bleeding from his face.

Zhang Ruochen collected all their storage containers. They were indeed the top-tier talents of a large field as they had much more wealth than ordinary half-step saint kings.

There were more than twenty ten-thousand patterns saint weapons, lots of saint stones and dozens of bottles holding divine medicinal pills. Other than those, there were also a great many divine medicinal pills and saint fruits that were ten thousand years old. They were so rare that Zhang Ruochen

speculated they'd picked them up from the God-Naming Platform.

While Zhang Ruochen was counting the valuables, Mu Lingxi was destroying the corpses.

These monks all had great status, and it would be a shock, as they'd died during God-Naming Platform Conference. They couldn't leave any traces for Truth Godly Palace to tracked back to them.

Squeak!

A strange sound came out of the dark as if a ferocious beast was grinding its teeth.

However, there was no way a ferocious beast was living in this forbidden area. Could it be an ancient hostile ghost?

Zhang Ruochen was shocked. He immediately put all the valuables on the ground back into his space ring and showed up beside Mu Lingxi, performing spatial move.

Mu Lingxi also heard that voice. Her face paled, and she held her Phoenix Flume in her hand tight, ready for a fight.

"The creatures in the forbidden area are drawn to the fighting noise," said Zhang Ruochen.

Mu Lingxi said, "What should we do now? Should we run away or fight them?"

Zhang Ruochen was actually worried about Xiang Chunan. Although he had thousand-mile vision, he was very reckless, and it was likely that he couldn't make it out of this forbidden area alive, so Zhang Ruochen wouldn't just leave without him.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to send Mu Lingxi out first before he went to look for Xiang Chunan, but he knew that Mu Lingxi wouldn't do it and that she would be upset if he forced her to leave.

Zhang Ruochen said cautiously, "Don't attack before we know our enemies."

Squeak!

The strange sound in the dark became darker and darker.

Horrifying Yin Qi spread everywhere, and balls of blue flames gleamed. They were actually fiery eyes.

Unfortunately, Zhang Ruochen was only able to see clearly things that were less than one hundred feet away from him, so he couldn't see what the people with the eyes looked like.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed Mu Lingxi's wrist and followed the footprints of Xiang Chunan and the great beings from Heaven Field, and there were two blue fiery eyes in front of them.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to see what they looked like, so he didn't perform spatial move.

He got closer and closer, three hundred feet, two hundred feet, one hundred and fifteen feet, one hundred and forty feet...

Zhang Ruochen stared forward when he was a hundred feet away, and suddenly, the blue fiery eyes disappeared, which horrified him.

"Where are they?"

Mu Lingxi clenched her teeth as her Phoenix Flume gleamed with cold blue light.

"There're not space ripples, which means they didn't practice space power... No..." Zhang Ruochen's heart skipped a beat as he felt he was in grave danger, and he wielded his long sword.

Sizzle!

A spear that looked like a saint bone long spear showed up in front of him and Mu Lingxi, giving out great Yin Qi, and it was less than three inches away from Zhang Ruochen's heart.

Fortunately, Zhang Ruochen wielded his sword earlier to hit the saint bone long spear away, otherwise, the spear would've pierced through his heart.

Just as Zhang Ruochen was about to perform spatial move to escape this place, another saint bone long spear was wielded against him, less than three inches away from Zhang Ruochen's head.

Bang!

Zhang Ruochen wielded his sword again, knocking away the long spear, which vanished shortly after.

Mu Lingxi located their bodies based on the angles of the way they wielded their spears, and then, she wielded her Phoenix Flume and released Extreme Yin Pluto Ice Power dozens of times.

However, all the attacks fell to the ground.

“It doesn’t sound like they went invisible. I reckon they don’t even have real bodies or souls, otherwise, they would’ve been frozen by Extreme Yin Pluto Ice Power,” said Mu Lingxi.

“Not quite,” said Zhang Ruochen.

A lot of stepping sounds followed Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi, and dozens of pairs of fiery eyes were swiftly moving, approaching them both.

“Let’s go.”

Zhang Ruochen performed spatial move and disappeared with Mu Lingxi.

Every time he moved, he teleported both of them hundreds of feet away, but even so, there were still a couple of pairs of blue eyes following them and getting closer.

Mu Lingxi took out four Heavenly Sword Runes and pinched them between her fingers. She then wielded them. The runes exploded, turning into four tremendously powerful white heavenly swords, hitting toward the four pairs of blue fiery eyes.

As the swords were about to hit them, the eyes suddenly disappeared while the four heavenly swords vanished in the dark. After a while, the four pairs of blue fiery eyes showed up again, a hundred feet away from the two of them.

Mu Lingxi finally got to see what they really looked like, which horrified her.

It was her father and Shi Qianjuan, the hierarch of the demonic sect, and she also knew the other two, both of whom were great beings feared and awed by her.

However, all four of them had decomposed, showing the bones on their faces, looking gloomy.

Zhang Ruochen also turned around, and he saw Chi Yao, Flame God from Merits Godly Palace, Emperor Qing, and Emperor Ming.

All of them also looked like mummies.

“No. This isn’t what they actually look like, but the Yin Qi coming out of their bodies has affected my saint soul, trying to trigger the fear inside me.”

Zhang Ruochen had a strong will. Perhaps he felt scared at some point in his life, but he had grown to be tough and solid. Even if the four of them actually arrived, he wouldn’t waver.

“Let’s see how you handle this move.”

Zhang Ruochen suddenly stopped walking, mobilized the time power, and stepped back, performing Sword Technique of Time.

Suddenly, time was paused.

‘Chi Yao’, ‘Flame God’, ‘Emperor Qing’, and ‘Emperor Ming’ all froze. Zhang Ruochen pierced through Chi Yao’s forehead and cracked her entire body.

Bang!

The blue fiery eyes were put out, leaving only a human corpse with a broken head, lying on the ground, still.

Blue Yin Qi spread out of the head of the human corpse, making sizzling noises on the black mud.

Zhang Ruochen then performed Sword Technique of Time three times, killing ‘Flame God’, ‘Emperor Qing’, and ‘Emperor Ming.’ Three more human corpses lay on the ground.

The four human beings must’ve been incredible beings when they were still alive, however, given how rotten their bodies were, they must’ve been dead for tens of thousands of years, if not more than a hundred thousand years.

The blue Yin Qi from the corpses was so horrifying that even Zhang Ruochen didn't dare touch it, so he kept running forward with Mu Lingxi.

After running for a long time, they lost those blue fiery eyes.

Zhang Ruochen almost exhausted his saint Qi after performing spatial moves many times, sweating.

And then, Mu Lingxi became the one leading the way to Xiang Chunan and the others while Zhang Ruochen took a saint pill and performed his techniques to recover his saint Qi.

After Zhang Ruochen recovered sixty percent of his saint Qi, Mu Lingxi suddenly stopped walking and said, "They're gone!"

Zhang Ruochen asked, "What's gone?"

"The footprints!"

Zhang Ruochen looked to the ground.

Indeed, the footprints of both Xiang Chunan and the great beings from Heaven Field had vanished as if an invisible door had swallowed them both.

Mu Lingxi walked forward, yet she was stopped by Zhang Ruochen. "Don't do it."

"Why not?" Mu Lingxi was confused.

Zhang Ruochen didn't explain to her. Instead, he looked around and found it to be the remains of palaces. However, it'd been tens of millions of years, and all he could find were some broken walls, most of which had sunk into the ground as if they would soon be gone forever.

Mu Lingxi also noticed that. She got more confused and said, "This forbidden area must've been prosperous. Why is it now engulfed in darkness? If the palaces were still here, they might look as splendid as some godly palaces."

Zhang Ruochen seemed to have figured out something. He pointed at the front and said, "Perhaps that's the answer."

"The front?" said Mu Lingxi.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed Mu Lingxi's wrist and stepped forward.

The gleaming light in the next second was so bright that they couldn't open their eyes. When they opened their eyes again, Mu Lingxi was amazed as a world full of light showed up in front of her.

In front of her were palaces gleaming with godly light. They were all spectacular, tens of thousands of feet tall as if there were true Gods living inside.

"The palaces that were in ruins showed up again. Is this an illusion?" Mu Lingxi couldn't help touching the purple golden door in front of her.

She felt the real texture.

"It's real."

Mu Lingxi felt that her mind was being blown away. She took a step back, however, it seemed that she crossed the boundary again, dropping back to the immensely dark world with nothing but ruins in front of her.

"How did this happen? Which one is the real world? Which one is an illusion?" Mu Lingxi whispered to herself.

Zhang Ruochen also took a step back, thinking, and said, "This must be a place where the reality and the void coexist. If I'm correct, a God who practiced the Way of Truth fought a God that practiced the Way of Void. I can't imagine how horrific the war was. Perhaps some other Gods who practiced other kinds of power joined the fight as well, like fear power and ancient Yin power. The remaining power might have been left by the ancient War of Gods."

Mu Lingxi asked, "Then are the splendid palaces we just saw real or not?"

"This is the remaining place of the battle of Gods. There's no way we can understand anything with our cultivation, but I reckon they should be real... and a part of the void at the same time."

Chapter 1657 - Half of a Prehistoric Supreme Saint Monster

Chapter 1657: Half of a Prehistoric Supreme Saint Monster

Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi stepped forward. The majestic cluster of pavilions appeared before them again.

After activating the 12 Buddhist pearls and collecting their aura, Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi walked timidly through the golden gates. Instantly, Qi more mysterious than Holy Qi surged from the depths of the palace.

The Qi was blue-purple and specks of light floated in it.

Every speck of light was a Rule of Saintly Way. It melted into their bodies as soon as it touched their skin.

“This is too crazy! In just a few short breaths, I gained 16 Rules of Saintly Way.” Mu Lingxi was both overjoyed and a bit unsettled.

This made improvement way too easy. They only needed to touch the specks of light and a rule would automatically appear within them.

How could there be something so easy in the world?

“What exactly are these Qi currents? How were these rule lights formed? If this really is a place that’s even more precious than the Truth Godly Palace, it should have been taken advantage of already. How could it still be so barren?”

Holding the heavy sword, Zhang Ruochen walked timidly toward the flowing blue-purple Qi.

“Look, who’s that?”

Mu Lingxi’s eyes trained on an ancient tree around 200 feet away.

The grayish brown trunk was wide enough for a dozen people to wrap around. The roots were even thicker than pillars. There were many branches and rich leaves. Each leaf seemed to be breathing.

It absorbed the blue-purple Qi and rule lights. What it exhaled was regular Holy Qi.

There were countless blue-purple fruits on the tree. Shaped like pears, they shimmered on the surface. It was like millions of specks of light were nurtured inside it.

One knew without guessing that these fruits were definitely priceless. Your cultivation would improve so much if you could eat it.

However, Mu Lingxi's attention wasn't on the fruits. Instead, she stared at the three corpses nailed onto the trunk.

They were a lion-headed silver-eyed creature, a half-beast half-man with seven tails, and a creature with a bird head and nine-colored wings. They were stabbed through by a saint bone spear. Blood still dripped out of their wounds. Each drop of blood contained extreme power. Evidently, they'd been powerful Saint Kings when alive.

"They didn't die long ago. They must be Saint Kings from the Heaven Field group who wanted to pick the fruits but got killed. Who killed them?" Zhang Ruochen's scalp went numb.

It was obvious that the three beings nailed there weren't regular Saint Kings. They must have had terrifying combat abilities, but they'd all died there tragically.

Mu Lingxi felt chills run down her spine. "Could it be those prehistoric corpses that had been chasing after us?"

"Those corpses are strong, but it's not easy for them to kill these three. There must be even more terrifying monsters here."

Zhang Ruochen released his Spiritual Power and spatial territory. He also took out Emperor Yi's Bone Staff.

The evil spirit inside it had already eaten all the souls of the Yin and Yang Palace cultivators. Now, it could fight anyone

under the seventh step and was Zhang Ruochen's most important trump card.

He'd even taken out the Bone Staff, so one could imagine how stressed he felt.

If not for the fact that he had to find Xiang Chunan, Zhang Ruochen would definitely leave this place immediately. It was too dangerous here. He couldn't venture around here with his current cultivation.

Next, he took out three Assassin Puppets to guard him and Mu Lingxi. After doing all this, he finally felt a bit of security.

The ancient tree with the blue-purple fruits was in the near distance. He'd be lying if he said he wasn't tempted.

Mu Lingxi grabbed his wrist and shook her head. "Those three strong Saint Kings died too strangely. Don't risk it."

"I have my bottom line."

Zhang Ruochen didn't go pick the fruit by himself. Instead, he sent out a third step Saint King Assassin Puppet.

The puppet wore silver armor and was only one meter tall. It held two broadswords and was as fast as lightning. It instantly arrived under the saint tree.

It bent its legs and was about to rush up the tree.

Whoosh!

A bone spear shot out of the purple mist in the corner of the palace with an ear-splitting sound of wind.

Merely the wind made Zhang Ruochen's ears bleed. His head was in pain and his vision went black. His body swayed and he almost fell to the ground with weak knees.

Boom!

It was the sound of metal cracking.

The strong Assassin Puppet was stabbed through by the bone spear and nailed onto the tree. Its metal body had practically fallen apart and was completely destroyed.

Mu Lingxi fell to the side of Zhang Ruochen. She bled from all openings and was horribly injured.

Zhang Ruochen leaned on the heavy sword and gradually recovered. He quickly checked his body and discovered that his organs had cracked from the reverberations. His meridians and Saintly Meridians were in immense pain.

“What kind of creature is this? Merely the sound waves and might of the spear that it threw out injured me so heavily.”

Zhang Ruochen couldn't imagine the consequences if that spear had flown at him.

Mu Lingxi was badly hurt and her Holy Qi was in a mess. Zhang Ruochen fed her a curing pill. A while later, he lifted her up to help her refine the pill.

Heavy steps came from the blue-purple fog in the palace corner.

The sound was light, but as the sound waves traveled over, the ground trembled. With Zhang Ruochen's current cultivation, he couldn't even steady himself.

His organs were also in immense pain as if about to be ripped apart by the power.

Half of a corpse walked out of the fog.

Its body had been cut apart by some sharp blade. Only two legs and a right arm remained. It had no head or left side of its body.

But this half of a corpse created horrible pressure for Zhang Ruochen. His heart constricted and his body went numb. He couldn't move at all.

The half corpse shone with brilliant white light and hadn't decayed at all. Its saintly might was countless times stronger than Zhang Ruochen. It could probably kill him with one finger.

However, Zhang Ruochen's Buddha Pearls went into effect. They hid his aura completely and the half corpse seemed unable to detect him.

It doesn't have eyes. It can't see me. Zhang Ruochen was slightly relieved.

But then, something even stranger happened before his eyes.

Many corpses appeared out of thin air below the tree. At first, there were about ten corpses, then dozens, hundreds... Blue flames burned in their eye sockets and they radiated with ancient Yin Qi.

One of the corpses discovered Zhang Ruochen. It glared with fiery blue eyes and howled.

Zhang Ruochen was about to run out with Mu Lingxi in his arms, but he saw a dozen corpses standing at the exit. They were all as strong as Saint Kings. He wouldn't be able to get past them at all.

The half corpse that hadn't decayed at all sensed Zhang Ruochen too. It moved to face him.

"Brother Ruochen, here! The temple in the southeastern corner. They don't dare to enter!" Xiang Chunan's voice came from the southeast.

Without even thinking, Zhang Ruochen used his fastest speed and ran. A bone spear chased after him.

It was about to hit his back, but he broke open the temple door and stepped in.

Boom!

When the spear flew to the door, purple light poured out of the temple and blocked it. Finally, all the power on the spear disappeared and it clattered to the ground.

Phew.

Zhang Ruochen let out a long breath and looked back.

The group of zombies surrounded the temple and kept howling, but they didn't dare to enter. They seemed to fear something. The half corpse was no exception.

Xiang Chunan came over, carrying his metal hammer. Sighing, he asked, "Brother Ruochen, how come you came to this malicious place too?"

“To find you,” Zhang Ruochen said. “How could I leave by himself?”

“A great brother, so loyal, haha!”

Xiang Chunan patted Zhang Ruochen’s shoulder. Then he said a bit apologetically, “Earlier, I was busy dealing with those guys and didn’t know you’d come. Otherwise, I would’ve reminded you earlier and that prehistoric monster wouldn’t have been lured out.”

Zhang Ruochen had guessed that the half corpse was some ancient Supreme Saint, so he wasn’t surprised.

Under Xiang Chunan’s lead, Zhang Ruochen carried Mu Lingxi deeper into the temple. He saw five strong Saint Kings repressed under a black metal crown with demonic Qi.

The five Saint Kings weren’t weak. The lowest were third step Saint Kings, while two were fourth step Saint Kings.

However, that metal crown immobilized them completely. Faces red, they used all their might to push up the crown so they wouldn’t be crushed to death.

Xiang Chunan was annoyed. “These guys came out of nowhere and wanted to kill me as soon as we met. Thankfully, I took out my teacher’s metal hat in time to restrict them. But two of them were seriously strong and escaped beforehand. One had two pairs of red wings. The other one’s kind of funny. He didn’t have a face.”

Xiang Chunan sounded casual, but the five Saint Kings under the black metal crown were furious. A metal hat? This was obviously an Absolute Saint weapon.

Of the five Saint Kings, one at the peak of the third step was a female Angel Saint King. She was beautiful with delicate features and translucent skin. Entire cities would fall for her.

She held a saint pearl with both hands to fend off the Absolute Saint weapon with thick demonic Qi. Delicate frame trembling, she cast a charm spell. “We must have a misunderstanding,” she said gently. “Sir, please lift this demonic crown and give us a chance to explain.”

This female Saint King was confident in her beauty. She was also advanced in charm spells, so she was confident in taking down this Dark Fool who'd probably never even touched a girl's hand before.

Crack!

Not caring about her beauty at all, Xiang Chunan slapped her, making her spit out blood. "Misunderstand my ass. You think your Lord Xiang is stupid? You're already ugly and you keep squinting your eyes at me. Do you want to make me die of disgust? Ugh, you get uglier the more I look at you. I can't stand it. Brother, how about you deal with her?"

That female Saint King was livid and her chest rose and fell in anger. She'd never been so insulted in her life.

Chapter 1658 - Amazing

Chapter 1658: Amazing

Zhang Ruochen didn't have the time to deal with the five saint kings that were suppressed. He laid Mu Lingxi down on the ground carefully, grabbed her wrist and infused his saint Qi into her body.

A supreme saint was extremely dangerous. Even the after waves severely injured Mu Lingxi and her saint soul.

Saint kings were fragile in front of supreme saints.

Gradually, Mu Lingxi's pale face regained some color, and her saint Qi became stable again. Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath and sent her to the inner space of the Time and Space Crystal for her to recover.

Xiang Chunan asked, "Is my younger sister-in-law alright?"

"She's doing okay now," said Zhang Ruochen.

Even a trace of the forces of a supreme saint could easily kill a low-level saint king.

A trace of supreme saint force also hit Zhang Ruochen, which injured him seriously. Fortunately, his body, mind power and saint soul were all strong enough to ward it off.

Zhang Ruochen took a healing saint pill, and performed his techniques to heal his organs, meridians and saint meridians.

After fifteen minutes, Zhang Ruochen was almost halfway recovered, and he could exert half his pinnacle power.

Xiang Chunan stood at the door of the Taoist temple cautiously and unsettled.

Zhang Ruochen walked behind him with his hands behind his back. He saw the rotten corpses outside the temple. All of them were powerful, constantly yelling and trying to attack the Taoist temple.

There was purple light waving around the Taoist temple, and it contained great divine power. Once the rotten corpses got too close, they'd be annihilated.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen felt a grave danger coming at him as if someone was pointing his sword at his forehead. He saw that the half body of the ancient supreme saint was pointing at him with his finger brighter than a sun.

Boom!

A trace of blood-red light flew out of the tip of his finger.

Boom!

The purple light shone again, forming the formation of Eight Trigrams, exerting power like never before, clashing with the blood-red light pillar.

The Taoist temple shook.

Even with the defense of the Eight-Trigram Formation, Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan were still knocked away, hitting a stone wall, after which dust fell off the roof.

“Terrible. It seems we're going to be stuck here forever.”

Xiang Chunan's body was incredibly sturdy as if it was invincible. He immediately climbed up, unharmed.

Zhang Ruochen also stood up with a stinging sensation on his forehead and his eyes going red. He said, “Perhaps we won't be trapped here. There must be some sort of power in the Taoist temple that can suppress them.”

After performing ‘Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture’ for one large circle, the pain in his forehead faded away.

Xiang Chunan said, “But I didn't find anywhere special in the Taoist temple, and I've checked every spot. It's a very ordinary temple.”

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen recalled something and said, “How did you know that those ancient corpses can't get into the Taoist temple.”

“I got into here chasing that old man, but that old man vanished the second he got into the Taoist temple. I don't

know whether he burrowed somewhere or not,” answered Xiang Chunan.

“If we could burrow, we wouldn’t have been trapped here. I’ve just checked, and there’re lots of inscriptions on the ground. Even a ninth-step saint king will get lose if he burrows, not to mention us.”

Zhang Ruochen stroked his nose, smiled and said, “That Psychic Sage should still be in the temple.”

“But...” said Xiang Chunan.

“Your Thousand-Mile Vision is indeed impressive, but there’s still something you might miss.”

Zhang Ruochen started to inspect the Taoist temple. Sometimes he bent over to check the ground, sometimes he tapped on the wall. As he came to the inner area of the temple, he found that the five powerful saint kings at the center had been knocked unconscious. Each of them was bleeding from the inside out.

Xiang Chunan took back his iron demonic crown. And then, he raised the iron hammer, going to kill them for good.

Zhang Ruochen stared at a grey wall with his hands behind his back and said, “Wait.”

“Brother Ruochen. All of them are evil. Why should we spare their lives?” Xiang Chunan was confused.

Zhang Ruochen said, “You said that two escaped, right? We can’t kill these five if they’re still alive. Otherwise, we’ll bring a lot of trouble to ourselves.”

Xiang Chunan nodded, and then, he walked toward the five saint kings and kicked them.

Zhang Ruochen threw out a Saint-binding Chain, asking Xiang Chunan to tie them all up. As for him, he was studying the grey wall.

There was an old man in blue painted on the wall.

The old man was holding a Purple Gold Eight-Trigram Mirror. Although it was only a painting, there were still powerful

forces coming out, enough to inspire awe.

Xiang Chunan tied the five saint kings up on a string, walked to Zhang Ruochen and asked, “What are you looking at, Brother Ruochen?”

Zhang Ruochen whispered, then he smiled. “I get it now.”

He pointed at the Purple Gold Eight-Trigram Mirror in the hands of the old man.

A whirlpool gushed out of the Eight-Trigram Mirror. It got stronger and stronger, swallowing both Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan.

Whoosh!

In the next moment, Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan came to a dark space, surrounded by black ancient trees. It was dark and humid, and in front of them was a godly platform that was seventy feet tall.

There was an old man sitting on the godly platform.

Nobody knew how long the old man had been dead, but his body hadn't decomposed at all, which terrified Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan.

Their saint Qi and blood Qi couldn't even flow smoothly because of the old man's forces.

Xiang Chunan held his breath and mumbled, “What is this place? I feel like this old man is more powerful than that half body of the supreme saint.”

“Um... We should be inside the wall world now. As for this old man, he might be an ancient great being, but he's dead already, so there's no need to fear him.”

Zhang Ruochen then looked at the old man's right hand, and he was holding a Purple Gold Eight-Trigram Mirror with his blood-red fingers, which looked exactly like the one on the wall, giving out purple light.

Zhang Ruochen walked toward him out of curiosity.

Whoosh!

Suddenly, the old man on the godly platform glowed with golden light, shining upon the entire dark space.

A vast godly voice came out of the old man's body as if it came from ancient times. "I'm Lord Luo Tianzhen, the leader of Amazing Temple. How dare you two brats trespass upon the mini world I made?"

"Didn't you say he's dead? How can he talk after death?"

Xiang Chunan's dark face paled as his legs were shaking.

Nobody knew how tragic a situation would end after messing with an ancient powerful being.

"I heard that the fragmented soul of a God will still remain in the universe after death, and it can perform all sorts of great techniques. Was the leader of Amazing Temple a God?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Even dead Gods were extremely powerful. A trace of one's soul could easily annihilate them.

"How dare you not kneel in front of a God?" the old man said angrily.

"Damn it. Let's kneel before him!"

Xiang Chunan kneeled before him and said, "I'm sorry, senior. I'm Xiang Chunan, and I didn't mean to offend you. There're many ancient ferocious corpses outside trying to get us, so we came here to save ourselves."

Xiang Chunan was afraid that Zhang Ruochen would anger the God with a fragmented soul as he still hadn't kneeled down. He pulled at his clothes and whispered, "There's nothing shameful about kneeling before a God."

Zhang Ruochen kept observing the old man on the godly platform, and then, he found out something, smiling.

Whoosh!

He performed spatial move and showed up behind the godly platform. He saw the Psychic Sage hiding behind the old man, and the Psychic Sage also noticed Zhang Ruochen. He turned

around and gave Zhang Ruochen a look. “Amazing, amazing. I got caught!”

The Psychic Sage stepped on the ground and jumped off the godly platform like a trace of purple light, rushing toward the exit of the mini world.

Xiang Chunan immediately knew that he’d been tricked by that old man again. He yelled, furious, “Damn it. It’s you, you damn old guy. Don’t you dare run. I’ll kill you.”

Xiang Chunan raised his iron hammer and wielded it toward the Psychic Sage.

The Psychic Sage was dazed. He raised his arms, and two purple clouds gushed out of his sleeves. Lots of saintly way rules struck toward Xiang Chunan.

Zhang Ruochen could see that there were tens of thousands of saintly way rules in the mid-class saint spell performed by that old Taoist man. He obviously had tremendous cultivation.

“Careful.”

Xiang Chunan was knocked away right after Zhang Ruochen said that. He was dizzy, lying on the ground.

The Psychic Sage looked at his hands, as he was surprised. He whispered to himself, “Amazing, Amazing. Can’t believe I’m so powerful...then why should I be intimidated by you two?”

Psychic Sage suddenly became overbearing, looking arrogant.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Use your supreme saint weapon to suppress it.”

Xiang Chunan had been played by that Psychic Sage several times, so he couldn’t be more furious. He wielded his iron demonic crown, trying to trigger a trace of supreme power with Zhang Ruochen.

The Psychic Sage could feel the supreme power coming out of the demonic crown. He paled and stepped back while mobilizing more saintly way rules, gathering them in his arms.

Whoosh!

There were tens of thousands of rule inscriptions in that mini world.

“Ocean-Sealing Stamp.”

The Psychic Sage pressed toward the space, and then, a phantom of a purple ancient ocean showed up, clashing with the iron demonic crown, making a rumbling sound.

Chapter 1659 - Poor Psychic Sage

Chapter 1659: Poor Psychic Sage

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Under the suppression of the supreme power, the Psychic Sage's print technique didn't survive long before cracking apart. The divine purple sea above its head turned into strands of purple smoke.

"You actually used a weapon... Not fair..."

The metal hat fell down suddenly, trapping the Psychic Sage that had wanted to escape.

"Old thing, where are you running to?"

Xiang Chunan laughed loudly. He rushed over and smashed the metal hat on the Psychic Sage crazily, even cracking the ground.

The Psychic Sage kept screaming, "Amazing, amazing."

"Amazing? You really aren't afraid of pain."

Xiang Chunan's muscles all swelled. He grabbed the hat with both hands and slammed it down.

"Amazing, amazing... Help, you're killing me! Help..."

Seeing that asking for help was no use, the Psychic Sage pretended to be pitiful. "We have nothing to do with each other. Junior, why are you bullying an elder?"

"Nothing to do with each other? Then why did you attack me, your Lord Xiang? Do you dare say that you didn't kick me in

the butt?” Xiang Chunan shrunk the hat and put it on the Psychic Sage’s head so it couldn’t move.

Zhang Ruochen studied the Psychic Sage from the side and was very impressed. It had been hit by an Absolute Saint weapon so hard, but it wasn’t hurt at all.

He didn’t know if Xiang Chunan was holding back or if the Psychic Sage’s defensive abilities were really so good.

After beating it up again, Xiang Chunan clapped his hands and stood up. “Brother Ruochen, this saint medicine actually turned human after 100,000 years and has a mind. It’ll be weird to eat it. How about you eat it?”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “If you eat it like this, it’ll indeed be uncomfortable. It’ll also be full of resentment. If it builds in your body, it’ll be bad for your cultivation.”

The Psychic Sage squatted in the corner and yelled, “Yes! I have great resentment! You don’t know how to respect elders at all. If you eat me, you’ll be punished!”

“Looking at its proud face, I’ll feel disgusted if I eat it,” Xiang Chunan said. “How about we turn it into a pill and eat it?”

“Actually, we can negotiate with it and cut off two legs for us to eat.” A strange smile appeared on Zhang Ruochen’s face.

Xiang Chunan grew excited. “Yeah! Cut off two of its legs. When it grows new legs, we’ll cut them again. This is so much better than directly turning it into a pill.”

The Psychic Sage had been eavesdropping on their conversation with perked ears. Its face instantly paled.

“Amazing, amazing... My legs have resentment too. Great resentment.”

“It said ‘amazing.’ It agrees!”

Xiang Chunan borrowed the Third Yao heavy sword from Zhang Ruochen and pressed down the Psychic Sage’s neck to cut off its legs.

“Wait, I have something to say!” it screamed.

“Stop wasting time,” Xiang Chunan said. “It’s useless.”

Zhang Ruochen grabbed him. “Let it speak.”

The Psychic Sage sprawled itself on the ground and said in panic, “I can help you pick two Amazing Saint Fruits. You must’ve seen it outside the pavilion. The fruits are definitely much more precious than my two legs.”

“The purple fruits on that ancient tree?”

“Indeed.”

Zhang Ruochen exchanged glances with Xiang Chunan. They were very tempted.

But Zhang Ruochen quickly put on a careful expression.

“There are ancient monsters everywhere outside and half of an ancient Supreme Saint. No matter how strong you are, you probably can’t get the fruits from under their eyes. You’re not trying to take advantage of this and escape, right?”

“How can I?” the Psychic Sage explained. “I swear on my soul that I sincerely want to help you two heroes pick saint fruits. Nothing else. As for the ancient monsters, you need not worry. I grew up here since childhood and I have the same Yin Qi as them. They won’t attack me even if I go past them.”

Unfortunately, Zhang Ruochen didn’t believe it at all. “I’ll trust you if you give me half of your saint soul.”

“Why do you want half of my saint soul?” it asked in confusion.

“If you dare to escape, I’ll destroy that half,” Zhang Ruochen said. “Then, your mind will be messed up and all of your cultivation will be wiped clean.”

The Psychic Sage’s teeth chattered, either in fury or fear.

“Amazing, amazing. You’re so evil!”

“Since you’ve cultivated a human form, then you should already have the Way,” Zhang Ruochen said. “We won’t eat you unless you attack us first. But you purposely led us into this dangerous place and almost got us killed. You trapped us in here too, so you have to make up for it, right?”

“Pick all the fruits on the ancient tree for us and everything will be forgiven. When we leave this forbidden zone, I’ll

return the saint soul to you and give you freedom. How about it?”

The Psychic Sage grew thoughtful. Clearly, it was considering whether Zhang Ruochen was lying.

Xiang Chunan slapped its head, saying, “What are you hesitating for? We already forgave you and you still seem so unwilling.”

The Psychic Sage was annoyed. These people clearly broke into its cultivation land and destroyed its temple, but now they acted like they were the victims. As the true victim, it had nowhere to complain to.

But what could it do?

Under their control, it had to lower its head.

“Okay, I’ll hand over half of my soul temporarily,” the Psychic Sage said. “But I’ll only pick two Amazing Saint Fruits for you.”

“No, no, you must take it all.” Xiang Chunan shook his head.

The Psychic Sage chuckled. “If I really pick all of them, I’ll lose my value. I’m afraid you’ll turn around and turn me into a pill.”

“F*ck, you’re just a plant. Where do you get all these thoughts? You really think we’re lowly like that?” Xiang Chunan had a hot temper. He picked up the heavy sword again to chop off the Psychic Sage’s legs.

Zhang Ruochen held down Xiang Chunan’s shoulder and said, “Three fruits. Pick three fruits for us.”

“Okay, it’s set!”

The Psychic Sage took out half of its saint soul. It was condensed into a ball of light and handed it to Zhang Ruochen.

After walking out of the tiny world in the wall, Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan waited into the temple. The Psychic Sage changed its form into a purple-gold sage tree. It rushed out of the temple, sometimes moving, sometimes freezing.

Clearly, it was afraid of those monsters too, but it indeed had ancient Yin Qi, so it could become one with the surroundings. The monsters automatically overlooked it.

“That old guy has ancient Yin Qi in it. Even if we turn it into a pill, it’ll be a poisonous pill and inedible.” Xiang Chunan was annoyed.

Seeing that the Psychic Sage didn’t escape and really went toward the saint tree, Zhang Ruochen grew relieved. “How strong is the spirit of your Absolute Saint weapon?”

Xiang Chunan took out the metal hat and played with it. “Spirit?” he asked in confusion.

“Absolute Saint weapons all have strong weapon spirits,” Zhang Ruochen said. “It might even be stronger than that half Supreme Saint.”

Xiang Chunan shook his head. “I don’t think it has some strong weapon spirit,” he mumbled. “Could it be because the hat’s gem fell off?”

“Can you let me look at it?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Xiang Chunan handed the metal hat over directly. “Of course. Look however you want.”

Zhang Ruochen held the extremely heavy hat and felt a burst of demonic Qi inside. It was as if he was holding a mountain instead of a hat.

The material used was very unique too. Zhang Ruochen had never seen it before. It was definitely top refining material, like Godly Steel.

“There’s only a shred of spirit consciousness.”

Zhang Ruochen furrowed his brows and checked carefully. There was a finger-sized dent at the top. It must have had the gem that Xiang Chunan mentioned before.

“What a pity! It’s an incomplete Absolute Saint weapon. Otherwise, we could use it to make our way out.”

Zhang Ruochen returned the hat to Xiang Chunan. He held his chin and brainstormed another way to escape.

“Hey, look! That old guy does have some skills!” Xiang Chunan said excitedly while licking his lips. “He already picked three Amazing Saint Fruits.”

Zhang Ruochen looked at the Psychic Sage on the saint tree and also smiled.

After picking the three fruits, the Psychic Sage rushed back to the temple. It gave Zhang Ruochen the fruits and asked, “Junior, you should fulfil your promise and return my soul now, right?”

“No hurry. I’ll return it after I leave this forbidden zone.”

Zhang Ruochen handed one Amazing Saint Fruit to Xiang Chunan. He kept one and put the other one away for Mu Lingxi.

Xiang Chunan held the Amazing Saint Fruit and took a deep breath. He immediately started drooling. Showing his white teeth, he was about to swallow the fruit at once.

“Wait,” Zhang Ruochen said seriously. “The Amazing Saint Fruit grows in this place. It might be tainted by ancient Yin Qi.”

“Oh, right!” Xiang Chunan was shocked and glared at the Psychic Sage. “You helped us pick the fruits so happily. Is it because you knew we can’t eat it and wanted to kill us?”

“Please, how could I do something so lowly?” The Psychic Sage quickly explained, “Do you see the purple smoke surging out of the pavilion cluster? That smoke can purify Yin Qi. The Amazing Saint Fruit is shrouded in the Qi, so Yin Qi can’t approach it. Trust me, you can eat it with no fear.”

Zhang Ruochen had to be careful. Instead of trusting the Psychic Sage completely, he took out the Emperor Yi Bone Staff and used the Buddha’s sharira power.

Whoosh!

Golden Buddhist light flooded out, shining on the Amazing Saint Fruit.

Seeing this, the Psychic Sage immediately changed its words. “A few days ago, the purple Qi shrouding the tree scattered for

two hours, so Yin Qi might've seeped into the fruit.”

Sizzle.

Under the Buddha light's purification, strands of Yin Qi came out of the Amazing Saint Fruit.

Xiang Chunan's expression changed drastically. He slammed the metal hat onto the Psychic Sage and started pummeling it. “You old thing, still trying to trick us. If my brother wasn't careful, we would've gotten tricked!”

Chapter 1660 - Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror

Chapter 1660: Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror

“Amazing, Amazing... Stop, stop! I was just trying to survive. You can’t bully a good guy like this...” The Psychic Sage kept yelling.

“You dare call yourself a good guy?”

Xiang Chunan was pissed off again upon hearing that, and he hit the Psychic Sage harder.

Under the purification of the Buddha sarira, the Yin Qi from Amazing Saint Fruit started to permeate slowly. After spinning around the Emperor Yi Bone Staff twice, it was swallowed by the evil spirit in the bone staff, which shocked Zhang Ruochen.

“The Yin Qi in this place is incredible, probably dating back to the ancient times. I can’t believe the evil spirit managed to swallow it. Will it mutate?”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. The evil spirit only inhaled a little ancient Yin Qi, so it was almost impossible for the spirit to mutate.

After a short while, the Yin Qi in the Amazing Saint Fruit was completely swallowed. Zhang Ruochen then yelled at Xiang Chunan, “Never mind. The Yin Qi in the fruit is very thin, so it’s not fatal even if we eat it. If it really wanted us killed, it would’ve infused lots of Yin Qi into the saint fruit when we were picking it.”

After hearing that, the Psychic Sage immediately said, “That’s right. I’m not like you. I just want to get the other half of my saint soul back instead of killing you.”

“What do you mean you’re not like us? What did you think of us? We’re the good guys.”

Xiang Chunan trampled on the Psychic Sage twice before walking toward Zhang Ruochen.

The Psychic Sage wallowed on the ground, wrapping its arms around its knees and whispering, “If you’re good guys, then everyone in the world is a good guy.”

Zhang Ruochen gave the purified Amazing Saint Fruit to Xiang Chunan and triggered the Buddha Emperor sarira to purify the second Amazing Saint Fruit.

After eating the Amazing Saint Fruit, Xiang Chunan gleamed with purple light. He then sat down in the Taoist temple and started to refine it.

Zhang Ruochen then purified the remaining two Amazing Saint Fruits. He didn’t swallow the fruits immediately, as he didn’t want the Psychic Sage to attack him and Xiang Chunan when they were refining the saint fruits, although it was highly unlikely.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen recalled something and walked to the Psychic Sage.

The Psychic Sage was scared, as it had been beaten too many times. It said, “What... What do you want?”

“Don’t be so scared. I just have some questions for you.”

Zhang Ruochen sat down on the ground and asked, “What’s your name?”

The Psychic Sage was still very anxious. It said, “Name? What do you mean by ‘name’?”

“You know the language in Heaven World well. Don’t you know ‘name’ stands for the identity of a creature?” asked Zhang Ruochen.

The Psychic Sage said, “There were monks like you who entered here, so I learned the language by eavesdropping on them. As for my name... Is that even important?”

“Haha, not really. Since you like to scream the word ‘Amazing’ so much, I’ll call you ‘Amazing’ from now on!” said Zhang Ruochen.

The Psychic Sage said, “Isn’t that some sort of yelling?”

“Yelling?” Zhang Ruochen was dazed, then he started laughing.

The Psychic Sage stayed silent for a while and said, “I heard that word a lot when I first got my consciousness, so it was the first word I learned.”

Zhang Ruochen got what it was saying. He then switched back to the original topic and said, “You should know this place well since you were born and have refined here.”

“I don’t know,” said the Psychic Sage.

Zhang Ruochen shot it a glare.

The Psychic Sage was very anxious. It then said, “I really don’t know. Ever since I gained consciousness, I’ve been in this small place, which is only the border of this whole place. There’re more dangerous things deep in this area, more terrifying than that half ancient supreme saint. I have to stay as far away as possible.”

Zhang Ruochen kept observing the Psychic Sage’s face, and he didn’t find it to be lying. He then took out the fragment of the turtle shell he’d dug out from the bottom of the Taoist temple and asked, “What is this?”

The Psychic Sage immediately rushed to the fragment of the turtle shell, trying to get it back.

Zhang Ruochen took out the other half of the Psychic Sage’s saint soul and held it in his hand, which horrified the Psychic Sage and made it freeze.

“Just tell me the truth, otherwise, I can just easily inspect your saint soul to find the answer I want, but it’ll cause some serious damage to your saint soul.”

Zhang Ruochen then touched the light ball with his finger.

The Psychic Sage said, “Okay! I’ll tell you! Follow me!”

The Psychic Sage led Zhang Ruochen into the miniature world in the wall. They came to the godly platform and saluted the elder. “Do you see the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror? The fragment in your hand is one of the inlays on the mirror.”

Although the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror was a mirror, there was an oval area at the center of the mirror that was coarse, seeming to have something inlaid on it.

Zhang Ruochen pinched the fragment of the turtle shell and compared it with the mirror.

The corner of the turtle-shell fragment matched with the edge of the center of Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror, and it would make up one eighths of the area if he put the fragment on it.

Zhang Ruochen showed up on the godly platform and tried to grab the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror, but he pulled his hand back halfway through.

The Psychic Sage looked disappointed.

Zhang Ruochen turned around and stared at it. “How about you do it?”

“Me? No, No. I’m not interested in that damn mirror.” The Psychic Sage shook his head.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Well, I am. Help me fetch it.”

The Psychic Sage looked at the cluster of light in Zhang Ruochen’s hand, and it didn’t dare go against his will. It moved slowly to the godly platform. After it got onto the godly platform, it had to come clean with Zhang Ruochen. “We can’t touch the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror, man.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “Then why didn’t you tell me before?”

“I just remembered that.”

The Psychic Sage said, “The leader of Amazing Temple, Lord Luotianzhen, was an ancient powerful being. Even if he’s been dead for a long time, his corpse still contains immense power. You saw how his power is suppressing the ancient corpses outside. If we try to get the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror, we’ll piss him off.”

Zhang Ruochen frowned and stopped pushing the Psychic Sage. He took out the Emperor Yi Bone Staff and stuck it into the ground.

He then infused his mind power into the bone staff.

Following a sizzling sound, the bone staff turned into a giant black skeleton, stepping toward the godly platform and reaching its hand out to grab the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror.

Boom!

The Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror gleamed with purple light, cracking the body of the black skeleton, which turned into a white bone staff and bounced away.

The purple light permeated the mini world.

Fortunately, Zhang Ruochen was prepared for this. He grabbed the Psychic Sage and hid in the Mercury Gourd to dodge that power.

After half an hour, Zhang Ruochen walked out of the Mercury Gourd.

The mini world was tranquil again, and the old Taoist man with a rugged body was still sitting on the platform, and he looked peaceful.

Zhang Ruochen picked up the Emperor Yi Bone Staff.

It was a staff made of the bone of a supreme saint, so it wasn't damaged at all even after such a shock wave. However, the evil spirit in the bone staff was seriously injured and had fallen into a slumber.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't use the Emperor Yi Bone Staff for a long time.

“Thank God I tried it with the Emperor Yi Bone Staff. If I wasn't that careful and tried to pick the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror myself...” Zhang Ruochen couldn't even fathom the consequence.

The Psychic Sage threw up its hands and said, “I told you not to touch it. Why didn't you believe me?”

Zhang Ruochen thought that the Psychic Sage was very sneaky and wicked, and that it didn't look like a divine medicinal pill who'd been away from the real world its entire life. It was likely that the Psychic Sage had led Zhang Ruochen here on purpose and almost killed him.

Zhang Ruochen stopped thinking about getting the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror and said, “Tell me, where did you learn the techniques and saint spells.”

The Psychic Sage said without hesitation, “I comprehended them from the fragment of the turtle shell in your hand. You can also do it from the pictures on the fragment. Each character on the fragment stands for a different saint spell. You can try it if you don’t believe it’s true.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t believe what it said easily anymore. Techniques and saint spells were the last thing he needed, so he didn’t need to go try to comprehend the fragment of the turtle shell.

Xiang Chunan had refined the Amazing Saint Fruit completely, and there were purple-gold inscriptions flowing on his skin.

Zhang Ruochen walked out of the wall and asked, “How was the Amazing Saint Fruit?”

“Impressive. My body constitution has improved a lot, and I have twelve thousand more saintly way rules in my body. My saint soul and mind power were also improved. The most amazing thing is that my meridians, saint meridians and veins were all expanded and strengthened,” said Xiang Chunan gleefully.

Xiang Chunan specialized in refining his body constitution, but he also practiced techniques of martial way. The saintly way rules he formed were only there to assist him, as he mostly relied on his body strength to fight his enemies.

Chunan’s body was already very powerful, yet the Amazing Saint Fruit still managed to enhance his body drastically. How impressive that Amazing Saint Fruit is on improving one’s body? Not to mention it increased his saintly way rules by twelve thousand. Zhang Ruochen was thrilled.

There were only eighty-two hundred saintly way rules in Zhang Ruochen’s body.

Unfortunately, Zhang Ruochen was still injured, so he had to wait before he could eat a saint fruit that was so strong.

Xiang Chunan asked, “Have you figured out a way to get out of here, Brother Ruochen? If not, then let’s fight our way out of here.”

Xiang Chunan couldn’t wait to have a huge battle now that his body strength had been boosted.

“Don’t be so impulsive. Are you sure you can fight the half body of the ancient supreme saint?” Zhang Ruochen stroked his chin and said. “I can set up a space transportation formation here. We might be able to get out of here using that.”

“Haha. I know I can always count on you! I might be killed instantly if I go fight that ancient supreme saint.” Xiang Chunan smiled.

It didn’t take Zhang Ruochen much time to make a small space transportation formation given his cultivation and mind power, so he finished that very soon in the Taoist temple.

However, he didn’t activate the formation immediately. Instead, he sat down beside the formation to recover.

This place was very special, and he might run into some obstacles in the transportation formation. Only after he healed his injuries could Zhang Ruochen have better control of the whole transportation process.

Chapter 1661 - A Divine Hand

Chapter 1661: A Divine Hand

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

When he was completely healed, Zhang Ruochen took out the Amazing Saint Fruit and swallowed it.

Boom!

The power of the Amazing Saint Fruit was countless times stronger than the Heartmoon Saint Fruit. As soon as it entered his throat, the wild power surged within him. Like a tide, it flooded into his meridians and organs.

Zhang Ruochen's meridians and Saintly Meridians swelled. Like a dozen dragons hiding under his skin, they shone with purple light.

The specks of light in the Amazing Saint Fruit transformed into worm-like Rules of Saintly Way. They flooded into his Sea of Qi and melted into the Heaven Pass River, broadening it.

Another purple Qi current entered his saint origin and started refining the saint soul.

At the same time, two more bursts of energy melted into his physical body and saint heart.

Zhang Ruochen's Spiritual Power improved at every moment. It was like exercising in fire, becoming even stronger and more resilient.

He sat cross-legged on the ground. As his technique operated, even the Unmovable Emperor Ming Figure came out. It was

hundreds of feet tall. With its powerful figure, it even scared the corpses outside the temple into silence.

Gradually, Zhang Ruochen absorbed all of the fruit's power.

In my Heaven Pass River, there are 20,372 Rules of Saintly Way. My meridians and Saintly Meridians have expanded by one-fourth; my Spiritual Power and saintly soul have been strengthened too.

Zhang Ruochen's skin was purple-gold with a metallic sheen.

He raised his arm slightly and his bones cracked with a thunderous boom. He punched without using any spells and a corpse outside the temple flew countless feet away, cracking into multiple pieces.

Xiang Chunan's dark face arrived over, asking, "How are you?"

"Not bad." Zhang Ruochen smiled. Collecting his purple-gold sheen, he stood up and said, "Come. Let's go try activating the transfer formation."

The two rose and entered the formation.

Zhang Ruochen's face was serious and cautious. He released his spatial domain to cover the entire formation so accidents wouldn't happen during the transfer.

Then he activated his Holy Qi, sending it into every joint in the formation.

This place was possibly a zone that was both real and intangible, so they might not be able to teleport away. If anything happened during the transfer, it would be terrifying.

They must take every precaution.

Whoosh!

A blinding glow shot out of the spatial formation. Zhang Ruochen's group disappeared from the temple.

Cultivators couldn't sense anything outside the formation during the transfer. But, as a space manipulator, Zhang Ruochen knew that they entered a void during the transfer.

There was a point in the void that connected to another spatial coordinate.

This time, it was a one-way transfer. The coordinate that Zhang Ruochen had chosen was the exit of the cave that they'd entered the forbidden zone in. When he'd come, he'd calculated the orientation and distance between the two, so he had some confidence.

Boom!

Suddenly, the formation patterns under their feet shook violently.

A bit nervous, Xiang Chunan asked, "What just happened?"

Zhang Ruochen's expression was serious. "I think we crashed into an obstacle, but how could this be? This shouldn't happen in a void."

The Psychic Sage was terrified. "This is a forbidden zone. You can't go at will even with spatial power. Let's hurry back. We can stay alive even if we're trapped there. If the formation patterns under our feet shatter, we'll fall into the void and die with no burial spot."

Boom!

The formation patterns shook violently again.

A boundless aura also appeared above their heads, making Xiang Chunan and the Psychic Sage change their expressions.

Xiang Chunan looked up. Two beams of light flew out of his eyes. He seemed to see something terrifying and said with a trembling voice, "A hand-shaped mountain...is hovering over our heads... So scary..."

"How is that possible? There's nothing tangible in the void."

Zhang Ruochen didn't believe it. He reached his hands out and pushed aside the light curtain. He looked up and gasped.

"That's..."

It wasn't a huge mountain above their heads. It was a broken hand the size of a mountain that hovered in the void without perishing.

“That’s a god’s hand.” Zhang Ruochen held his breath. He could only hear his racing heart.

He was sure that it was a god’s aura.

The god’s hand was so huge that it was countless times larger than the average mountain. It hovered a thousand miles above their heads and was terrifying. The aura radiating from it was much scarier than the aura of the god’s corpse that Zhang Ruochen had seen before.

Strands of Qi currents flowed out of the hand. Each current fell down like a waterfall, forming terrifying “waterfalls” of Qi.

The formation patterns were blocked by one of the vapor waterfalls, so it couldn’t continue.

The Psychic Sage clenched its jaw while its tongue moved. “Can we retreat?” it asked timidly.

Xiang Chunan looked around with a look of despair. “I’m afraid not. There’s a vapor waterfall all around us. It blocked our path forward and also our way out.”

Boom!

The formation pattern underfoot was broken by a beam of Qi.

“Ah...we’re dead... Junior sister...”

“Amazing, amazing, I don’t want to die...”

Xiang Chunan and the Psychic Sage both closed their eyes and screamed.

They thought that they’d get torn apart by the void instantly and turn into nothingness.

A beat later, they opened their eyes one after another and discovered with a shock that they didn’t die. Instead, they hovered in the void.

The Psychic Sage looked at its hands and laughed maniacally. “Haha, my cultivation is amazing. I can move easily even in the void. Who can kill me now?”

“The void isn’t as scary as rumors say.” Xiang Chunan started laughing too.

Zhang Ruochen’s voice traveled into their ears. “You’re inside my spatial domain now. It’s best to not move around. If you move out of the spatial domain, even I won’t be able to save you.”

The Psychic Sage and Xiang Chunan were both terrified. They hurried to Zhang Ruochen’s side and hugged him tightly.

The spatial domain was like a mini space that could hover in the void. Of course, with Zhang Ruochen’s current cultivation, his spatial domain was still very weak. It could collapse with the smallest collision.

Zhang Ruochen’s Spiritual Power was pulled taut. He controlled the spatial domain and continuously used Spatial Moves to hurry toward the set coordinate.

When they met the vapor waterfalls, Xiang Chunan and the Psychic Sage activated the metal hat to tear a crack open with the Absolute Saint power.

The longer they stayed in the void, the more that Zhang Ruochen felt the void eat away at his spatial domain.

It shrunk more and more.

“Hurry, hurry, hurry.”

Zhang Ruochen hurried forward with all his might. Sweat poured down like rain. Finally, a speck of light appeared in the pitch-black void.

In the last moment, just as the void was about to swallow up Zhang Ruochen’s spatial domain, he crashed toward the speck of light.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen, Xiang Chunan, and the Psychic Sage disappeared from the void. The world spun topsy-turvy and they appeared in another pitch-black world. They were plummeting.

Boom, boom.

They landed on the ground one after another, dizzy from the fall.

The Psychic Sage was crushed on the bottom, but instead of crying out, it laughed loudly. “Amazing, amazing. We finally escaped from the void. It feels great to fall heavily.”

Zhang Ruochen stood up. Stepping on the firm ground, he also smiled.

“Isn’t it too early for you to be happy?”

A cold voice sounded in the darkness.

Crackle, crackle.

A pair of red wings appeared. It hovered a dozen meters away and was moving over gradually.

Zhang Ruochen looked around. This was the exit of the cave in the forbidden zone. In the distance, the red wings set off strong Sainly Way ripples. Light footsteps sounded too.

“Very strong cultivation.”

Zhang Ruochen put his smile away. He put his right arm behind his back and formed a spatial crack in his palm.

Xiang Chunan had the Thousand-Mile Vision, so he saw more clearly than Zhang Ruochen. “It’s you, bird person!” he yelled. “Pretty strong, huh. You actually escaped from the palace cluster.”

Gradually, Nie Zhan, the four-winged red angel, appeared in Zhang Ruochen’s vision.

Nie Zhan and Xiang Chunan had fought in the palace cluster, so he knew that this Dark Fool was very strong.

However, Nie Zhan hadn’t used his hidden card yet. He was confident that he could repress Xiang Chunan, so he walked over calmly.

Nie Zhan saw the Psychic Sage standing beside Zhang Ruochen. Joy and greed appeared in his red eyes. “Give me the Psychic Sage,” he ordered.

His strong saintly might didn’t intimidate Zhang Ruochen.

“Go!” Zhang Ruochen said to the Psychic Sage. “Do what you must. Do I have to teach you?”

Half of its soul was in Zhang Ruochen’s hands, so the Psychic Sage had no right to fight back. It sighed before standing up straight and walking toward Nie Zhan.

Seeing this strange scene, Nie Zhan actually felt unsettled. “Halt.”

“Why?” the Psychic Sage asked firmly. Its voice was even louder than Nie Zhan’s voice. It continued walking.

It felt stranger and stranger to Nie Zhan. He raised his blood-red sword. Sharp Sword Qi flew out of his sword and he repeated, “Stop immediately.”

The Psychic Sage stopped and said with annoyance, “You wanted me, but now you don’t anymore. Why are you so whimsical?”

Nie Zhan sensed a dangerous aura in the Psychic Sage. After a moment of thought, he took out a Saint-binding Chain. Shaking his wrist, he sent it out, wrapping toward the Psychic Sage.

“Mountain-Moving Print.”

Two gusts of purple Qi flew out of the Psychic Sage’s sleeves and condensed into a purple cloud. Thousands of Rules of Saintly Way flew out of its palm, becoming one with the purple cloud. Then it created a print spell that attacked Nie Zhan.

Nie Zhan’s expression changed. He immediately threw away the Saint-binding Chain. Grabbing his sword with both hands, he brought it down.

Thud!

In that clash, Nie Zhan was sent flying by the Psychic Sage’s print spell. Many red feathers fell down.

Whoosh!

Taking advantage of this, Zhang Ruochen swung his arm. The spatial crack in his hand flew toward Nie Zhan in a beautiful

arc.

Chapter 1662 - Leave the Forbidden Area

Chapter 1662: Leave the Forbidden Area

Nie Zhan was incredibly skillful. As he flew toward the spatial crack, he shrunk his body to a blood-red light spot and flapped the blood-red wings on his back, dodging it.

After flying for hundreds of feet, the blood-red light spot released a halo as it bulged again, turning back into a four-wing crimson angel.

Although he reacted to the spatial crack in time, it still gashed his arm, leaving a long bleeding wound. The Psychic Sage's print also severely injured him, cracking his saint armor and leaving huge marks on his face.

Before Nie Zhan balanced himself, a demonic storm started to sweep toward him.

Inside the storm was an iron hammer the size of a hill, showing up above him. It was so close and fast that he couldn't manage to dodge it.

Xiang Chunan shouted behind the iron hammer. "Take this!"

Nie Zhan glared at him, took out a rune, pinched it with his fingers and pushed it upward. "Purgatory Rune, sending you all to hell!"

Bang!

The rune exploded, forming sixteen blood-red chains thick as buckets that flew everywhere like sixteen giant iron dragons flying in the sky.

Xiang Chunan hit the sixteen chains with his hammer, and after a huge blast, demonic Qi and blood light gushed out.

"Where did the chains come from? How did they ward off my full-strength strike?" Xiang Chunan was terrified.

Whoosh!

The sixteen blood-red chains formed a giant blood-red sphere with a diameter of one thousand feet, covering Xiang Chunan, Zhang Ruochen and the Psychic Sage, and the blood-red sphere kept shrinking.

Nie Zhan stood under the blood-red sphere and glared at them. “The Purgatory Rune was made by a Rune Way Saint Master, and there’s a trace of great supreme saint power inside. You’ll all die in it!”

The Purgatory Rune was more powerful than Hundred Step No Lives Rune, and it couldn’t even be valued by saint stones. Nie Zhan only had it because he was a four-wing crimson angel, and he used that to fight against enemies he wasn’t capable of defeating on his own.

Nie Zhan was forced to use the Purgatory Rune on Zhang Ruochen and the others, although he felt like it was a waste.

The blood-red sphere now only had a diameter of a hundred feet. It suddenly shook, and one of the chains was broken, and a trace of demonic Qi flew out of the crack.

“How is that possible?”

Nie Zhan couldn’t believe his eyes. He immediately took out a delicate bottle and drank up the blood-red liquid within.

Nie Zhan gazed at the blood-red sphere and held his saint sword tightly. He kept infusing the sword with saint Qi. Suddenly, four layers of saint power rippled on the sword, giving out Four-Yao Complete Power.

Boom!

The demonic metal crown blew up the blood-red sphere, after which Zhang Ruochen, Xiang Chunan and the Psychic Sage got out of the sphere.

Nie Zhan immediately wielded the saint sword in his hand, releasing Four-Yao Complete Power, and the sword Qi dived like a long river, making rumbling sounds.

“Do you really think I can’t crush you? How dare you make an attack again?”

Xiang Chunan wielded the demonic metal crown again, and then, Zhang Ruochen and the Psychic Sage wielded a trace of saint Qi light pillar respectively, infusing them into the demonic crown.

A trace of supreme power rushed out of the demonic crown, piercing through the sword Qi and clashing with the saint sword in Nie Zhan's hand.

Bang!

The Four-Yao Ten-Thousand Patterns Saint Weapon exploded, turning into pieces.

“You have a supreme saint weapon...”

Nie Zhan was terrified. He didn't have time to run away, so he had to activate the protection rune on his body.

Bang Bang!

The power from the demonic metal crown destroyed all of the protection reticle on Nie Zhan's body.

The four-wing crimson angel had a sturdy body, yet it was fragile in front of the supreme power. It kept crumbling.

Nie Zhan yelled, lying on the ground, “You can't kill me! You can't! Heaven Field will doom you! Doom you for good if you kill me!”

“Really? I'll give it a try.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “Don't kill him here. Put away the demonic crown.”

Xiang Chunan hesitated for a short while. In the end, he put away the demonic metal crown and asked, “Are you really scared of that nonsense Heaven Field, brother?”

Zhang Ruochen said, “Heaven Field will come for me at all costs even if we don't kill him, but I'll drag you into my issues if we kill him. I know you don't mind it, but as your brother, I do.”

Xiang Chunan kept gazing at Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen squatted and said to Nie Zhan, “There should be another monk getting out of the palaces. Where is he?”

Nie Zhan’s body was rugged. He lay on the ground and chuckled, “He’s left this forbidden area. If you dare kill me, Heaven Field will definitely figure out that it’s you guys. I don’t need to tell you the consequence, do I?”

“You’re really arrogant, aren’t you?” Zhang Ruochen said.

Nie Zhan asked, “Shouldn’t I be like that as a four-wing crimson angel from Heaven Field? Ah!”

Zhang Ruochen stepped on Nie Zhan’s head, making a cracking sound.

After a while, Zhang Ruochen stepped away from Nie Zhan and tied him up. “The underground cave leads straight to the forbidden area, so the monks from Heaven Field must’ve occupied this tunnel already. We must leave as soon as possible so that we won’t be stopped by the great beings from Heaven Field.”

Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan left the forbidden area through the underground cave and got back to the saint spring river at the intersection of the Outer South Yard and Outer East Yard.

They hid in the forest and looked at the entry to the cave.

Lots of monks gathered at the river, and many of them were great beings from the angel race. The two four-wing crimson angels stood out among all the angels as the other monks treated them as their leaders.

Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan left instead of staying for long.

The Psychic Sage coughed, following them, and said, “Shouldn’t you give me back the other half of my saint soul?”

Zhang Ruochen shot it a glance and threw it a light ball.

Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan kept walking forward, not caring about the Psychic Sage.

Xiang Chunan asked, “What are you going to do with the saint kings who are suppressed? We can neither kill them nor let them go. Are you really thinking about handing them back to Heaven Field? Then what’s the point in capturing them?”

Zhang Ruochen stroked his chin and said, “How about selling them?”

“Selling them? How? And to who?” Xiang Chunan asked.

Zhang Ruochen said, “The Free Trade Yard should’ve opened already, and most of the monks in the God-Naming Platform Conference have gathered there already. As long as we put them in our booth and give them a price tag, the seniors from Heaven Field will definitely come buy them. This will definitely infuriate Heaven Field thought, so I suggest that you don’t show up!”

“No way. No way. I have to be a part of something so interesting,” Xiang Chunan smiled and said.

The Psychic Sage smiled. “Amazing. Amazing. I also find it very interesting.”

Xiang Chunan yelled, “You old bastard, we’ve already given you back your saint soul. Why are you still here? Do you want to be crushed again?”

The Psychic Sage chuckled. “Because I think you guys can keep your promise, so I decided to team up with you again.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “How?”

“I’ll pick all the Amazing Saint Fruits for you if you get me out of the God-Naming Platform. How about that?” the Psychic Sage said, looking forward to the answer.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Why do you want to leave the God-Naming Platform? It has such an amazing refining environment. Besides, can’t you leave the God-Naming Platform yourself?”

The Psychic Sage sighed and said, “I’ve hit a bottleneck during my practice, so my cultivation hasn’t been improved for hundreds of years. According to the books I read, I have to

get into the real world so that I can make a breakthrough and become a supreme saint.”

Xiang Chunan said disdainfully, “What a creep, a sage that wants to get into the real world.”

The Psychic Sage didn’t care about Xiang Chunan. It then said, “Truth Godly Palace has sealed the God-Naming Platform, so none of the creatures can get out. The only way I can do that is by teaming up with you.”

Zhang Ruochen thought for a while and said, “Sure. I can consider helping you leave the God-Naming Platform if you go pick all the Amazing Saint Fruits, but the tunnel has been occupied by the great beings from Heaven Field. How are you going to get back there?”

“Rest assured. I can go anywhere I want in the forbidden area.”

The Psychic Sage didn’t leave after saying that. Instead, it smiled and said, “That fragment of the turtle shell is of no use to you already. Can you return it to me?”

“I was the one who picked up the turtle shell fragment. Why should I return it to you?” Zhang Ruochen said.

The Psychic Sage said, “It was in my Taoist temple the whole time.”

“I didn’t trespass in your temple. I found it in a pile of rocks.”

Zhang Ruochen then smiled and said, “Don’t worry, and go pick the Amazing Saint Fruits now. As for the turtle-shell fragment, I’m not saying I won’t return it to you.”

“Okay. I’ll trust you one more time.”

The Psychic Sage looked gentler and rushed underground like a trace of purple light.

Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan kept walking toward the Free Trade Yard. Xiang Chunan was still kind of worried and said, “There should be some top-tier great beings from Heaven Field on our way. What if they try to attack us or rob us forcefully? My senior mother gave me a token before I left,

and she said the token can intimidate our enemies if we can't defeat them. Do you think I should use it?"

Zhang Ruochen didn't expect Xiang Chunan to have a trump card like that. It seemed that his senior father and senior mother were both extraordinary beings, so he could rest assured a bit. He said, "No need. Truth Godly Palace has the rule that no monks are allowed to fight in the Free Trade Yard, and there're ten godly disciples there to enforce the rule. Nobody will do something that reckless.

"Besides, many monks saw that it was the great beings from Heaven Field who attacked us first, which is why we suppressed them. We didn't kill them, but only prepared them for sale. We're already showing enough mercy."

As they talked, they arrived at the door of the Free Trade Yard.

Chapter 1663 - Leader of the Space Divine Pavilion

Chapter 1663: Leader of the Space Divine Pavilion

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Free Trade Yard was very vast. Looking out, it was filled with lights like a busy city. Many powerful figures zipped in and out. Saint Kings were everywhere.

This was a convention that was rare even in Heaven World. The beings in the mortal world would never be able to imagine this scale.

Many strong beings set up shop on the ground.

Some placed treasures on their mats and cultivated on the side. They would only stop to talk when there were customers. Others were very proactive and hawked on the side.

The treasures that they sold weren't only from the God-Naming Platform. Most were rare treasures, Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons, pills, scrolls, and others that they'd brought over.

“An ice crystal crow just gotten from the Outer East Yard. Who has saint fruit that can improve cultivation? Come exchange for it.”

“Saint jade essence from the mines of the Outer West Yard. You can exchange for it with saint fruit, medicine, or earth grade pills.”

...

Most of the cultivators who were selling didn't accept saint stones, because the treasures dug out of the God-Naming

Platform couldn't even be bought in the outside world. They wouldn't consider selling it unless a cultivator was willing to pay double the amount.

Many good things were being sold. Some of the treasures tempted Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan too.

For example, there was Crimson Grass that could improve a cultivator's physical strength. It was already 40,000 years old and really tempted Xiang Chunan.

The seller wanted to receive a Fourth Yao Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon. Zhang Ruochen happened to have it, so he took it out and gave it to Xiang Chunan.

Saintly medicine that could strengthen physical power was the most tempting to someone who cultivated the physical body.

Just as Xiang Chunan was about to reach out, a voice rang out behind them. "Wait."

The eight-armed spider king that they'd met while picking the Heartmoon Saint Fruit glared at the seller and said, "Brothers, please don't get tricked. Using a Fourth Yao Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon to exchange for Crimson Grass is such a scam!"

Zhang Ruochen knew it wasn't a good deal, but Xiang Chunan wanted it.

Xiang Chunan was willing to risk his life for Zhang Ruochen, so he couldn't be stingy about a Fourth Yao Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon.

Zhang Ruochen put his hands together in greeting. "Spider King, we meet again! Thank you for the reminder, but my friend cultivates the physical body. The Crimson Grass is very useful for him. It's okay to be at a disadvantage if I can buy it."

The Spider King shook his head. "If the Crimson Grass was picked from the God-Naming Platform, then it can definitely help exercise your friend's body and strengthen him.

"But the one that he's selling is from outside. Even though it's 40,000 years old, the medicinal power is greatly reduced. You

also need to spend a lot of time to refine and absorb it all.

“There are all sorts of people in the Free Trade Yard. Many of them exaggerate their products and they’re not from the God-Naming Platform. Brother, you must be careful so you don’t get lied to!”

Earlier, only Xiang Chunan wanted to buy it. Zhang Ruochen had been thinking about where to set up, so he didn’t look carefully.

Hearing the eight-armed spider king’s words, Zhang Ruochen used his Heavenly Eye to study the Crimson Grass. Indeed, he found some places that weren’t right.

Xiang Chunan also used the Thousand-Mile Vision to check and fire immediately rose up in his eyes. He grabbed the first step Saint King seller from afar.

The seller tried to dodge, but he seemed to be anchored. He couldn’t move at all and his expression grew panicked.

Xiang Chunan’s hand grew to the size of a millstone. He grabbed the man and roared, “You dare to lie to me! You want to die!”

The seller felt his body get squeezed tighter and tighter. He couldn’t use Holy Qi either. Knowing that Xiang Chunan was using a top capturing spell, he quickly said, “This is the Free Trade Yard. No cultivator can fight here, or else you’ll get repressed by a godly disciple...ah... Are you crazy? You really want to kill me...”

The seller’s bones cracked and broke.

Xiang Chunan was impulsive, but he wasn’t bloodthirsty. The other had lied to him, but he didn’t deserve death.

Thud!

He let go and tossed the seller onto the ground. Clapping, he said coldly, “Don’t let me see you again.”

The seller landed on the ground. Having regained freedom, his eyes grew poisonous. “I’m from Heaven Track Field and you dare to humiliate me?”

The seller was a Saint King after all and his identity in the mortal world was special. He naturally felt embarrassed after getting beat up by Xiang Chunan. How could he not feel hatred?

“Humiliate you? I didn’t spare you because I’m afraid of the Truth Godly Palace’s rules. If you’re unsatisfied, then let’s have a fair fight and see if I’ll kill you or not.”

Xiang Chunan was very loud and his spit wet the seller’s face.

The seller could see that Xiang Chunan was a barbarian who wasn’t afraid of anything, so he really was a bit afraid. While retreating, he said, “If you have the guts, then stay here and see who’s unlucky later.”

“Ha, go. I’ll wait for you here.” Xiang Chunan crossed his arms and laughed. “This coward escaped without even taking his treasures. Hitting him really dirtied my hands.”

The spider king’s expression was uncomfortable. “Brothers, you best leave quickly. Since that man is from Heaven Track Field, you can’t offend him at all.”

Zhang Ruochen was curious. “Heaven Track Field isn’t in the top 100 worlds. Why can’t we offend him?”

“You two might not know,” the spider king said hurriedly. “Heaven Track Field has a strong supporter that none of the worlds can offend.”

“Could it be one of the ruling worlds?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“You guessed correctly! The supporter of Heaven Track Field is one of the four ruling worlds—Heaven Field.”

Enemies keep meeting, Zhang Ruochen thought.

He would perform a big thing later, so why was he afraid of offending Heaven Track Field?

Zhang Ruochen laughed and said to Xiang Chunan, “I don’t think we need to find another place. This spot is nice. Let’s sell here!”

“Hehe, I think this place is nice too,” Xiang Chunan said, nodding.

The spider king felt that Zhang Ruochen's duo was too young and reckless. He wanted to continue dissuading them, but then a commotion came from the entrance of the Free Trade Yard.

A group of cultivators entered.

The centermost figure was a white-robed man. He looked very extraordinary and shimmered with saint light. He was handsome, with a noble temperament. He seemed to have an extraordinary status.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes fell on his waist. There was a Time and Space Agate hanging there.

A beautiful young girl went over and said gently, "Greetings, Lord. My teacher sent me to send you an invitation. She wishes to meet you tonight."

The young girl's skin was as delicate as snow and her eyes shone with saintly light. Her curvy body had no flaws.

Many cultivators with advanced mindsets all stared at her and it was like they were attracted magnetically. They couldn't look away.

The white-robed man didn't accept the invitation. Instead, he asked, "Miss, who is your teacher?"

"Fairy Tianchu of Tianchu Civilization," the girl said.

Boom!

It was like a storm had come and everyone was in an uproar.

Fairy Tianchu was one of the nine beauties in the Nine Angels Beauty Scroll. Not only was she beautiful, she was also the divine woman of an ancient civilization. Her cultivation was very strong and she had countless pursuers.

The famous Deity Shiqing wanted to pursue her, so he once gave her a heaven saint pill just to meet with her for half a day and discuss cultivation.

But Fairy Tianchu rejected him.

It was evident how difficult it was to meet with her.

But today, she actually sent her disciple to invite a man to meet. This was incredible! One could imagine how much of a storm it would cause if news spread.

Right now, many people were crazy with jealousy. They wished they could kill this man and take his place.

Fairy Tianchu's disciple wasn't a common person either. Her name was Li Miaohan and was once 19th on the Saints Merits Rank.

If Fairy Tianchu sent Li Miaohan to send the invitation, then the importance of the white-robed man went without saying.

The spider king grew envious. "As expected of the Space Godly Palace's leader. Only someone like Gong Ziyang can receive Fairy Tianchu's invitation."

Zhang Ruochen didn't care about this, but hearing his words, he was moved. "Space Godly Palace's leader?"

"Brother, you don't even know Gong Ziyang?" the spider king said, surprised.

Zhang Ruochen chuckled. "I didn't learn about this."

The spider king had a respectful expression. "This person is a space manipulator. He's extremely talented and the only son of a god from the Space Godly Palace. We can't even imagine his future accomplishments. It's even possible for him to become the next leader of the Space Godly Palace."

"Space manipulator... Interesting..."

Zhang Ruochen touched his chin. He was finally interested in the white-robed man, Gong Ziyang.

"Fairy Tianchu is probably inviting Gong Ziyang about the ancient palace in the Wind Atrium of the Inner South Yard."

"What ancient palace?" Zhang Ruochen asked curiously.

"This has already stirred up a storm in the entire God-Naming Platform. After news spread, all of the cultivators were surprised. Even many godly disciples went to check themselves. Do you remember the Kirin Absolute Complete

Fruit that the Gold-armored Guard mentioned when we were picking the Heartmoon Saint Fruit?”

“Of course.”

“Back then, the Gold-armored Guard claimed that Crown Prince Dizu was picking the Kirin Absolute Complete Fruit. The location is in an ancient palace in the Wind Atrium of the Inner South Yard.

“Apparently, Crown Prince Dizu spent a lot of effort and even lost a strong Saint King without being able to pick the Kirin Absolute Complete Fruit. Instead, he went deeper and deeper into the ancient palace. More and more palaces appeared in that area. It’s like an endless palace cluster.

“Many top figures were attracted. There, they discovered that many rare fruits and medicines grew in the palace cluster. Some could even tempt gods.

“Just as they became ecstatic, a large group of ancient monsters appeared out of nowhere. Many cultivators died in there. Only the truly strong figures could escape.”

Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan exchanged glances.

The palace that the spider king mentioned was too similar to the palace cluster in the forbidden zone. Could it be the same place?

The spider king continued, “News spread that there’s a divine spring in the palace cluster. Ha, now, it seems that no matter how dangerous it is, the top figures of each world will still try to venture in. I wonder how many more cultivators will die in this year’s God-Naming Platform Conference.”

Chapter 1664 - Despicable Person

Chapter 1664: Despicable Person

Aside from Li Miaohan, there were dozens more monks giving invitations to Gong Ziyang, and each of them had a solid background.

A Gold-armored Guard handed a black box to Gong Ziyang and said, "Crown Prince Dizu, his highness, has prepared a banquet for you. This is a gift for the first meeting. Please do take it."

Gong Ziyang didn't reach for the black box. Instead, he smiled and said, "I've admired Crown Prince Dizu for a long time. There's no need for any gift, and I'll definitely go visit him in the future."

There were then other talents from top-tier powerful fields who tried to give him invitations, but they were all rejected by Gong Ziyang politely.

As all the monks thought Gong Ziyang would accept the invitation from Li Miaohan, they were all thrilled as Wang Xu and Blue Fang showed up.

Wang Xu laughed in the distance and said, "What took you so long, brother Yan? Ziyang has been waiting for you for a long time."

Blue Fang smiled and said, "You're too late this time, brother Yan. Wang Tian and Qiong Ling arrived before you did, and even Queen Daxi, who's always late, is already in the banquet. The food will get cold if you don't come soon!"

Seeing Wang Xu and Blue Fang, Gong Ziyang gave Li Miaohan and the others a slight bow and turned around. "I was rushing here as fast as possible when I got the news, but I ran into some trouble on my way here, which is why I'm late. Let's go,

otherwise Shang Ziyan and Wang Tian will ask me to have three drinks beforehand at least.”

Fairy Tianchu sent one of her best disciples to invite Gong Ziyan, yet even she got turned down. Seeing Gong Ziyan leave, many monks found it unbelievable.

However, thinking that it was Shang Ziyan, Wang Tian, Qiong Ling and Queen Daxi who invited Gong Ziyan, they found it acceptable.

Zhang Ruochen stood in the distance and looked at Wang Xu and Blue Fang. He found that their forces were so powerful and stronger than his, which meant they'd probably become third-step saint kings already.

How did they improve so quickly? Zhang Ruochen felt pressured.

He had to keep moving forward as he was competing with the best talents, otherwise, he would fall behind.

As they were both improving their power, if Zhang Ruochen couldn't make progress faster, the others would surpass him.

After all, Wang Xu and Blue Fang were both qualified to enter the inner four yards, which had more precious and better saint fruits and divine medicinal pills, which boosted their cultivation. Besides, they were likely to have others to help them pick up the saint fruits and divine medicinal pills to improve their cultivation.

There were many opportunities in the God-Naming Platform, and the lower someone's cultivation was, the better chance they had to improve themselves.

On the contrary, those with already great cultivation would find it harder to make a breakthrough.

For example, fifth-step saint kings usually had hundreds of thousands of saintly way rules in their bodies, so even after eating Heartmoon Saint Fruits, they could only increase their saintly way rules by hundreds, which was almost nothing to their cultivation.

Only the divine medicinal pills that were more than fifty thousand years old could attract them.

The eight-armed Spider King said, “Now you know how powerful Heaven Field is. Even the leader of Space Divine Pavilion needs to befriend them. Although Heaven Track Field is only one of the weakest fields in Heaven Field’s sect, they’ll still fight for them.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “No need to try talking us out of it, Spider King. I know how powerful the Heaven Field sect is, but they’re not in total control. This is the God-Naming Platform, and everyone needs to follow the rules of Truth Godly Palace.”

The eight-armed Spider King knew that the Heaven Field sect wasn’t his to mess with, so he sighed, leaving without trying to persuade them.

Zhang Ruochen would never fight a battle he couldn’t be guaranteed to win. He needed to make some preparations for selling the saint-king captives from the Heaven Field sect.

Firstly, Zhang Ruochen used spatial twist and set up a small spatial maze around the booth, and then, he carved some spatial inscriptions at certain locations to set up one spatial trap after another.

He had studied how to make spatial traps before, but he wasn’t able to do it because his cultivation wasn’t profound enough.

After making the necessary preparations, Zhang Ruochen set up a mini space transportation formation under the booth so that they could leave any time they wanted.

They had to find the saint fruits and divine medicinal pills they needed before selling the saint-king captives.

Xiang Chunan counted the valuables left by the seller from Heaven Track Field and sighed. “What a bunch of trash. Nothing’s valuable except that Jiangliang Herb that’s forty thousand years old.”

He then put away the mat.

Xiang Chunan then picked up the valuables he'd picked from the God-Naming Platform and put them on the booth, and he wrote a sign beside it that said, "In exchange for saint fruits and divine medicinal pills to refine bodies."

Zhang Ruochen gave one third of the divine medicinal pills he found in the underground cave to Xiang Chunan.

And then, he put a mat beside Xiang Chunan and put a part of the divine medicinal pills and saint fruits he had.

Xiang Chunan took a look and was thrilled. "How did you get so many saint fruits, brother Ruochen?"

Actually, these only amounted to one fifth of the saint fruits Zhang Ruochen owned.

If he took them all out, Xiang Chunan might fall into despair.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, "I have a couple of saint fruits that can help you refine your bodies. Do you want them?"

Xiang Chunan was tempted, but he wanted to be the big brother, so he had to show some backbone. He said, "No need. The number of treasures we earn in the God-Naming Platform will determine the ranking of us brothers. You'll use it as an excuse if you lose. Let's keep it fair; I have some divine medicinal pills that can improve your cultivation."

After exchanging saint fruits and divine medicinal pills with each other, Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan sat down, trying to absorb them while waiting for the monks to come for exchange.

Yang Xu, the seller from Heaven Trace Field, came back.

A bunch of powerful young monks were following Yang Xu. They all looked hostile, which terrified the monks in the booths around them.

"They were the ones who broke the rules set by Truth Godly Palace. They injured me seriously and robbed me of my valuables."

Yang Xu pointed at the mat beside Xiang Chunan's left leg and said, "Inside the mat are all the valuables I had."

One of the top-tier great beings from Heaven Sun Field, Fang Lingqian, was obviously here for Yang Xu. He said coldly, “How dare you disobey the rules set by Truth Godly Palace? Do you know the repercussions?”

Zhang Ruochen was still sitting on the ground, refining the power from the divine medicinal pills.

Xiang Chunan was very upfront. He stared at Yang Xu and yelled at him, “What nonsense were you talking? You were the one who put the trash on the ground. I didn’t rob you of anything. Besides, I don’t give a damn about the useless trash.”

Yang Xu wasn’t afraid of Xiang Chunan this time as there was a group of great beings from the Heaven Field sect behind him. He said, “Didn’t expect you to be a coward. You robbed me yet now you refuse to admit it.”

“Coward?”

Xiang Chunan was infuriated. He clenched his fist tightly, making cracking sounds.

Behind Yang Xu and Fang Lingqian was a saint king with four white wings from the angel race. Seeing the divine medicinal pills and the saint fruits in Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan’s booth, he was very tempted. He then said, “This is a Free Trade Yard after all. We’d better settle this privately! We’re not unreasonable people, and we’ll give you a chance to live. How about this: give us the saint fruits and divine medicinal pills and say sorry to Yang Xu, kneeling, then we’ll let it pass!”

Yang Xu was very emotional. He said, “We can’t let them off the hook so easily!”

The saint king of the angel race said, “We don’t need to be so petty.”

Fang Lingqian tried to calm Yang Xu down by saying, “This is the God-Naming Platform, which belongs to Truth Godly Palace. Let’s not do something so reckless.”

Yang Xu had to suppress his anger and hatred given what Fang Lingqian and the saint king of the angel race said. He said,

“Come and kowtow in front of me.”

“How arrogant are you? How dare you ask us to kowtow and apologize to you? You’ve pissed me off, do you know?”

Xiang Chunan stepped on the safety spot of the spatial maze, walking toward Yang Xu and trying to seize him with his hand.

He wouldn’t let him go easily like last time, as Yang Xu was so treacherous that Xiang Chunan was disgusted by him.

Besides, the behavior of the members from the Heaven Field sect grossed Xiang Chunan out as they actually thought of asking someone to kowtow as being merciless. One could only imagine how overbearing they usually were.

This was the pride they were always carrying, allowing them to look down upon the creatures from other large fields as if they were nothing.

“How dare you make an attack?”

Fang Lingxi yelled, and scales emerged on his arm, and his fingers turned into five ferocious saint beasts, forming a saint power storm.

Among the monks from Heaven Track Field who were in Truth Heavenly Domain, Fang Lingqian was one of the three most powerful ones. Only the leader of Heaven Track Field could overpower him.

He was a fifth-step saint king, so he didn’t think of a Dark Fool as a challenge.

However, Fang Lingxi was shocked after seeing Xiang Chunan’s hand slapping toward him. He immediately waved his other hand, and five more giant beasts flew out of his fingers.

Howl!

There were ten saint beasts floating in the sky, and each of them was as powerful as a fifth-step saint king, and their saint might seemed to be able to have the entire area under its control.

Which showed how strong Fang Lingqian was. Although he was a fifth-step saint king, he was quite able to defend himself against ten fifth-step saint kings.

He was capable of fighting a group of creatures who were at the same level.

Just as Yang Xu thought that Xiang Chunan would be suppressed, the ten saint beasts floating in the sky were all crushed by Xiang Chunan, who then grabbed Fang Lingqian and dragged him into the spatial maze.

Xiang Chunan squeezed Fang Lingqian's body and said contemptuously, "What a joke. Do you really think you can fight for him with such cultivation?"

Chapter 1665 - Come Hit Me if You Dare

Chapter 1665: Come Hit Me if You Dare

Fang Lingqian shook in anger. Light poured out of his apertures as he tried to break free from Xiang Chunan's palm.

Xiang Chunan's palm was the size of a house. It shone with heavy demonic light. He grabbed simply and made it impossible for Fang Lingqian's Holy Qi to circulate. His Rules of Saintly Way were restricted and he couldn't break free no matter what.

Crack, crack.

Fang Lingqian's bones exploded and he couldn't help but scream in pain.

Yang Xu shook in fear, knees weakening.

Fang Lingxian was a famous war god in Heaven Track Field. Many of the old guys who'd lived for thousands of years feared him, but someone like him was still captured easily by the Dark Fool. Killing him was as easy as butchering a chicken.

The dozen beings who'd come with Yang Xu finally realized that these two people were uncommon. They definitely weren't nameless figures and might've come from a top world.

However, as members of the Heaven Field sect, they had no fears.

The four-winged angel from Heaven Field had a cold and furious expression. "What field are you two from?"

Xiang Chunan stuck his chest out. "Your Lord Xiang isn't from any field."

In the angel's opinion, Xiang Chunan didn't dare to report his status. "No matter where you're from, I advise you to let go of

Fang Lingqian, kneel down to apologize, and give up half of your saint soul. That's the only way you can survive today!"

Fang Lingqian's entire body hurt and his thoughts grew blurry. With a trembling voice, he said, "Brother Nanjin... Don't... waste time, just turn this dark trash...into a saint slave...ah!"

The four-winged angel named King Nanjin sensed that Fang Lingqian couldn't withstand it for much longer. If they continued delaying things, he might really get killed by the Dark Fool.

King Nanjin wasn't confident in defeating Xiang Chunan, so he said, "Let's work together and kill the Dark Fool first. I'll shoulder all consequences."

The members of the Heaven Field sect who'd come to help Yang Xu were all Saint Kings. They took out Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons and activated the complete strength, but they didn't dare to strike for fear of accidentally killing Fang Lingqian.

King Nanjin took out a gold saint whip and instantly activated the Third Yao complete power.

Xiang Chunan grabbed with his other hand. Before King Nanjin's whip could attack, it was covered by a hand with strong demonic Qi.

King Nanjin was shocked. He hurriedly activated all his rune scrolls to fend off the demon hand and avoid turning into Fang Lingqian.

Boom, boom.

The rune scrolls kept exploding but couldn't stop the demon hand at all.

"Hurry and attack him!" King Nanjin yelled.

He put all his hope on the other Saint Kings. If they attacked, they'd definitely be able to restrict the Dark Fool. Only then would he have hope of breaking free.

Zhang Ruochen stopped cultivating. He stuck the 18 formation flags onto the ground.

The flags fluttered in the wind and shone with brilliant firelight. Like 18 divine fire torches, they blocked all the Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons from the dozen Saint Kings.

Then Zhang Ruochen walked calmly into the spatial maze. He used Spatial Distortion to take all the Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons and used Divine Fire Jingmie to refine the auras.

“Oh no, my Phoenix Burial Bell has lost perception.”

“My Tianji Disc... He took it!”

The dozen Saint Kings all stared at the human scholar in shock and back at their empty hands. They retreated hurriedly.

Because of the 18 formation flags, they didn't sense the spatial ripples. They only thought that Zhang Ruochen's saint spell had been too eerie and no one dared to strike with weapons again.

Clang!

As if they were scrap metal, Zhang Ruochen tossed the dozen Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons onto the ground in a small pile.

On the other hand, Xiang Chunan captured Fang Lingqian in one hand and King Nanjin in the other. They turned bloody in his grip and kept screaming. Bones protruded out of their flesh.

After tossing them down, Xiang Chunan patted his bloody hands, but his anger hadn't died down yet. “You're like shit and still dare to make me bow down and apologize? Bah!”

In the distance, the Saint Kings of the Heaven Field sect were all furious.

If Fang Lingqian and King Nanjin were trash, then what were they? This Dark Fool was too offensive!

Xiang Chunan glared at them. “What are you looking at? I'm not only talking about them. I'm saying all of you. Shit, you're all shit. Yeah, come hit me if you dare!”

No one dared. The Dark Fool was crazily strong. He could beat up Fang Lingqian and King Nanjin so easily. It would be even easier to take care of them.

Cultivators from other worlds were all watching. In the beginning, they thought that Xiang Chunan and Zhang Ruochen would be at a loss.

In the end, they were dumbfounded and too surprised to speak.

“That Dark Fool is honestly too strong. Not even the leaders of some worlds can be his match.”

“That human scholar is strong too. He instantly took away a dozen Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons. His skills are extraordinary.”

“Someone really dares to go up against Heaven Field. This is incredible. Could they be from the group of one ruling world?”

“Even if they’re not, they’re probably from a top 100 world. Otherwise, it’s suicide.”

...

A godly disciple in crane blue robes. He hurried over with first class disciples wearing kirin cloud robes.

This godly disciple was thin and tall. Eight gold snakes wrapped around his waist. His aura was much stronger than Fang Lingqian and King Nanjin.

This was Yuwen Jing.

Back then, when Zhang Ruochen had conquered the Moon Goddess Dojo and captured a large group of Evil Way figures from the Yin and Yang Palace, Yuwen Jing had threatened and warned Zhang Ruochen as a cultivator from Yin and Yang Field.

This was why Zhang Ruochen had a deep impression of this man.

Seeing Yuwen Jing come, Yang Xu and the Heaven Field sect cultivators were overjoyed. A third step female Saint King walked over and spoke to Yuwen Jing quietly.

Yuwen Jing’s eyes darkened and he nodded.

Then he spoke to Yang Xu, asking about some things.

The cultivators on all sides saw that godly disciple Yuwen Jing had come. They instantly understood that the Dark Fool and human scholar would suffer today.

Yin and Yang Field wasn't part of the Heaven Field sect, but they had a friendly relationship. How could they not take sides?

As expected, Yuwen Jing only listened to Heaven Field's words and immediately ordered, "Arrest these two troublemakers in the Free Trade Yard. If they dare to fight back, kill them without warning."

Two first disciples rushed over with Saint-binding Chains.

"Your Lord Xiang did nothing wrong. I'll kill whoever dares to arrest me!"

Xiang Chunan grew even more furious. He clenched his fists and was about to smash them all with punches.

Zhang Ruochen stopped him. He knew that if Xiang Chunan really killed a disciple of the Truth Godly Palace, the consequences would be serious. They couldn't be impulsive at times like this.

Feng Yan also brought many first disciples over. From afar, he yelled out, "Step back."

The two first disciples who were walking toward Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan heard Feng Yan's voice and immediately stopped. They suddenly didn't dare to go forward and looked back at Yuwen Jing.

Yuwen Jing frowned. Feng Yan was a first disciple, but his status was higher than some godly disciples too. He wasn't someone that could be offended.

"Junior Brother Feng, what are you doing?" Yuwen Jing asked.

Faced with such a powerful Yuwen Jing, Feng Yan was still calm and composed. "Senior Brother Yuwen, why are you arresting them?"

Yuwen Jing huffed coldly. “They first hurt Yang Xu of Heaven Track Field and stole his treasures. Just then, they attacked and hurt Fang Lingqian and King Nanjin. They disrupted the order of the Free Trade Yard and are extremely arrogant. They don’t care about the rules from the Truth Godly Palace at all. Do they not deserve to be arrested?”

Feng Yan chuckled. “But that’s not what I heard. Apparently, Yang Xu of Heaven Track Field used medicine from the outside world to scam the cultivator with the surname Xiang. Xiang squeezed Yang Xu in anger, but quickly let him go. As for Yang Xu’s treasures, they weren’t stolen. He’d left them here.”

Yu Wenjing could hear what was wrong. Feng Yan was clearly trying to help these two cultivators. Did they have a special relationship with him?

On the side, Yang Xu was furious. “What do you mean ‘squeezed’? You make it sound easy, but he broke three of my bones.”

“Shut up.” Yuwen Jing glared at Yang Xu before saying, “Junior Brother Feng, do you have proof of what you just said?”

“I don’t have proof, but I do have a witness.”

Feng Yan waved his sleeve and a first disciple walked over with the eight-armed spider king.

His expression was extremely uncomfortable. He didn’t want to get involved in this at all and didn’t dare to offend the Heaven Field sect, so he’d stayed far away.

However, he didn’t dare to offend Feng Yan either.

When Feng Yan sent someone to go look for him, he could only come obediently.

Feng Yan clapped his shoulder and chuckled. “Tell everyone what you saw and heard. You must tell the truth. If you dare to say one false word, you’ll get struck by lightning!”

The eight-armed spider king shuddered and began recounting.

After he finished speaking, Yuwen Jing and even the Saint Kings from the Heaven Field sect glared at Yang Xu with clenched teeth. Clearly, they'd been lied to too.

Yang Xu's face paled to the extreme while his vision went black and he fell to the ground, unconscious.

As a Saint King, he definitely wouldn't faint on his own. Yuwen Jing must have used a secret technique to knock him out.

Yang Xu didn't seem like a strong person and definitely wasn't Feng Yan's match. Feng Yan might be able to terrify him with a few words and make him say things that he shouldn't.

Yuwen Jing only felt reassured if he was unconscious.

He knew Feng Yan's background and didn't dare to offend him, so he said, "Since both sides are at fault, how about we have them reconcile?"

"Brother Yuwen's suggestion matches mine," Feng Yan said, chuckling.

Chapter 1666 - You've Gone Too Far

Chapter 1666: You've Gone Too Far

With the help of Feng Yan and Yu Wenjing, they reached an agreement without too much trouble.

Xiang Chunan held Fang Lingqian in one hand and King Nanjing in the other. He threw them out, back to the saint kings from Heaven Field Sect.

As for Zhang Ruochen, he took out a storage bag which carried three million saint stones and threw it toward a saint king from Heaven Field Sect.

“Take it and buy some medicine to heal them.”

The saint king from Heaven Field Sect caught the storage bag, which shocked him.

The storage bag was incredibly heavy, as if it was carrying a giant mountain, which made him take dozens of steps back before he could manage that weight. Before he stabilized the tumbling blood Qi in his body, his chest was hit by a pack, which knocked him on the ground.

The pack was made of a mat, which carried the ‘trash’ that belonged to Yang Xu.

Zhang Ruochen used an invisible power to throw both the storage bag and the mat bag, so the saint power ripples couldn't be seen, which was why a storage bag and a pack managed to knock a saint king onto the ground, which humored the monks around him.

The saint king who was made fun of couldn't be more furious. He struggled to stand back on his feet again as he could imagine that he would become a joke to all the monks in Truth Heavenly Domain.

Xiang Chunan squeezed his words out. “What a bummer! We didn’t do anything wrong, yet we had to pay them three million saint stones. I can’t let this pass, brother Ruochen! I’m a monk from the demonic way, and I’m supposed to do whatever I want without giving a damn about those rules.”

“It’s fine. Spending three million saint stones on crushing every bone of these three saint kings and their images is worthwhile.”

And then, Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, “Besides, the three million saint stones will only be kept by them temporarily. They’ll have to pay us much more very soon.”

Hearing that, Xiang Chunan squinted his eyes and laughed.

The saint kings from Heaven Field Sect across from him felt more wronged and upset than Xiang Chunan. They vowed deep down that they would make the two of them pay after the God-Naming Platform Conference was over by slaughtering their races.

Just as they were about to leave...

“Wait a sec.”

Zhang Ruochen waved at them and said, “Don’t leave so soon. I have a couple other valuables which might interest you.”

A second-step saint king wearing a blue saint blouse sneered and said, “Do you really think you can settle the hatred using these valuables? Let me tell you, this will never end!”

“That’s right. Even if you kowtow and apologize to us, it won’t work.”

“It’s too late for you to regret what you did! We have to reconcile with you because we need to follow the rules set by Truth Godly Palace in the God-Naming Platform. Once you leave Truth Heavenly Domain, all that’s waiting for you is your agony and the destruction of your race. You’ll wish that you could die.”

The saint kings from Heaven Field Sect said everything they wanted without hesitating as they wanted Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan to live in fear forever.

Xiang Chunan couldn't look more upset.

Zhang Ruochen said, while still smiling, "You've misunderstood me. I'm not giving you the valuables, instead, I'm selling them, but rest assured, I'll make the price fair."

"Selling?"

The saint kings from Heaven Field Sect were all dazed as they found that human man to be a total idiot.

They had already become mortal enemies, yet the human man still wanted to do business with them?

Some other saint kings were staring at the booth beside Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan, looking eager.

There were quite a few saint fruits and divine medicinal pills in the booth, and all of them came from the God-Naming Platform. If it wasn't for the grudge between them, some of them really wanted to buy them.

Zhang Ruochen said, "It seems you've misunderstood again! I'm not talking about the saint fruits and divine medicinal pills on the mat. You wouldn't care too much about the cheap stuff."

Yu Wenjing and Feng Yan were both confused. At this moment, Zhang Ruochen reached his right hand into his sleeve and took a four-wing angel out of the Mercury Gourd.

The beautiful four-wing angel was tied up by the saint-binding chain, and she was thrown onto the ground.

One of the saint kings from Heaven Field Sect yelled, "It's the granddaughter of Divine Wing Sect, Saint King Jiya."

Bang!

Zhang Ruochen took out a second saint king, grabbed the Saint-binding Chain and threw him out.

"The only child of Angel Marody, Saint King Qiulan."

...

One saint-king captive after another was thrown out by Zhang Ruochen.

Nobody dared do business with Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan as they had made themselves enemies of Heaven Field Sect, so they two put away all the saint fruits and divine medicinal pills on the booth.

There were nine saint kings on the booth, and all of them came from terrific backgrounds. The most powerful two were fourth-step saint kings.

The spectacular scene shocked all the monks.

“These two people are... are so reckless. They’re going to shake the world, aren’t they?”

“What kind of grudges are there between them and Heaven Field Sect?”

“Once this business is spread, all of Heaven Field will be shook. There’re emperor sons, emperor daughters and even Gods’ grandchildren who were captured and are being sold. They’re pushing the supreme saints from Heaven Field Sect.”

...

The creatures from Heaven Field Sect were all so astounded that they couldn’t believe their eyes.

They immediately looked indignant after they confirmed that the ‘inventories’ kneeling on the ground were the saint kings from Heaven Field Sect, like Saint King Jiya and Saint King Qiulan. They were so furious that they kept shaking.

Yu Wenjing and Feng Yan were also petrified.

“Oh. There’s an angel as well.”

Zhang Ruochen threw Nie Zhan, the four-wing crimson angel, onto the booth.

Xiang Chunan walked toward him and bent his body, “Act like real inventory.”

The monks in this area of Free Trade Yard were holding their breath as they were horrified. What they saw had completely changed their view.

“There’s a four-wing crimson angel that was captured. How is that possible?” Someone yelled.

Every four-wing crimson angel was a guard in Divine Blood War Palace, and he must've practiced the divine technique 'Blood Martial Scroll' on 'Taiyi Divine Techniques Rank'. Each of them was a top-tier being among those at the same level.

Divine Blood War Palace was a top-tier power in Heaven Field, the ruling field of the western world, and there were only ten four-wing crimson angels every hundred years, and they were supplied with endless resources to refine.

Each generation, half of the four-wing crimson angels could become supreme saints or even emperors.

Which was why a four-wing crimson angel being captured and sold would shock so many monks.

"These two guys... Are they really going to infuriate the leaders of the large fields from Heaven Field Sect?"

Feng Yan knew of the animosity between Zhang Ruochen and those from Heaven Field Sect, and that he was doing so to provoke and humiliate them.

Zhang Ruochen's senior brothers, senior sisters and friends had died all because of Heaven Field. How could he not get his revenge?

Feng Yan transmitted his voice to Zhang Ruochen. "You've gone too far! You should at least tone it down a bit. There're a great many great beings from Heaven Field Sect, and if you piss them all off, the ramification will be disastrous!"

"They've been provoking me the whole time. It's time for me to pay them back."

And then, Zhang Ruochen said, "I have a plan, don't worry."

The current situation was completely out of Feng Yan's control now, so he sent a first disciple to notify Feng Xi.

As for the ten-odd saint kings from Heaven Field Sect, one of them also rushed off, disappearing in the dark.

Bang!

Xiang Chunan put an iron board, a sign that was five feet long, into the ground, in front of the ten saint kings.

On the sign it said, "Selling saint kings for saint fruits, divine medicinal pills and saint stones. Prices are negotiable."

Xiang Chunan started to yell, "Please come take a look! You won't suffer from any losses! You can buy them back to guard your house or even sleep with you. This godly disciple here, do you want to buy a four-wing beautiful angel? The second-step saint king. She only costs forty million saint stones."

Yu Wenjing sensed a storm coming tonight, and he didn't want to meddle in it, so he stepped away.

Xiang Chunan kept shouting, yet no monk had the guts to step forward.

There were some ancient buildings scattered in the Free Trade Yard aside from the booth area, including some weapon-refining pavilions.

Only the leaders of the large fields ranked in the top thousand could own ancient buildings or build weapon-refining pavilions.

The news that ten saint kings were being sold was spread to all the ancient buildings and the weapon-refining pavilions, which astonished the leaders from all the top-tier large fields.

The leaders of the top-tier large fields and ancient civilizations like Thousand Pistil Field, Yin and Yang Field and Thousand Star Civilization all went to the top and looked down at the entire Free Trade Yard. They wanted to see how the great beings from Heaven Field Sect would react.

Inside an ancient spectacular saint palace, there was a huge banquet being held. The light was shining, and the monks inside were talking and laughing. On the tables were all sorts of saint fruits that tempted countless saint kings, and inside the wine cups was five-color water from saint springs.

Those on top were Zhou Yu, the leader of Heaven Field and Shang Ziyan, the leader of Merits Godly Palace. There were also leaders from different large fields and some children of Gods. They were talking about how to conquer the group of

palaces in the Inner South Yard to seize the legendary divine spring.

A saint king rushed in hurriedly and said bluntly, “Something... Something awful happened...”

The leader of Heaven Trace Field, Feng Jian, frowned and said, “You’re already a saint king, Cang Qing. Why couldn’t you just be calm? You can at least talk slowly no matter what happened. Don’t bring shame to us monks from Heaven Track Field.”

The saint king named Cang Qing was so concerned that his face blushed. He said, “Ten saint kings, including Saint King Jiya, Saint King Qiulan and Lord Nie Zhan, the four-wing crimson angel, have been suppressed by two unknown monks, and they’re being sold like slaves. The news has already spread across the entire Free Trade Yard.”

Feng Jian, who was originally calm, was immediately petrified.

Even the children of Gods and the leaders were shocked. They looked at each other as they couldn’t believe what happened.

Few of them were able to remain calm.

Shang Ziyan smiled and said, “Come here, Cang Qing. Tell us what happened exactly. No need to panic.”

Chapter 1667 - Heads Rolling

Chapter 1667: Heads Rolling

The banquet continued, but the leader of Heaven Track Field, leader of Black Demon Field Qiong Lin, and the four four-winged red angels led a large group of the Heaven Field sect through the Free Trade Yard.

The six were all powerful existences in their own right. When they walked together, the saintly might that spread out made the cultivators from weaker worlds all retreat into the distance.

“I knew that the Heaven Field clique would do something big. Two world leaders and four four-winged red angels will definitely crush those two troublemakers.”

“If you offend the Heaven Field sect, you’ll suffer bad consequences.”

...

There was also a faceless monk with the six powerful figures.

The faceless monk wasn’t any weaker than a four-winged red angel. His name was Faceless and he had broken into the forbidden zone with Xiang Chunan and Nie Zhan. He escaped in the end.

Because he’d escaped, Zhang Ruochen hadn’t killed Nie Zhan’s group directly.

Cang Qing was a bit worried. “Those two seem to have a deep relationship with Feng Yan. If Feng Xi gets involved, this will be difficult.”

“What are you worried about?” Feng Jian asked. “Lord Ziyan already ordered that our main goal this time is to figure out the identities of those two and get back the dozen Saint Kings. We still have to respect the top ten godly disciples of the Truth Godly Palace. We won’t attack if we don’t have to. When the

two leave the God-Naming Platform, it'll be up to us. As for Feng Xi, Lord Ziyang has his own plans. She can't stop us."

While speaking, they already reached the booth spot in the yard. The surrounding cultivators all moved aside automatically.

"Greetings, Lord Qiong Lin, Lord Feng Jian."

The cultivators of the Heaven Field sect all came over and bowed to the two field leaders.

Qiong Lin's eyes were sharp. "What's the situation?"

One of the Saint Kings pointed at Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan. Jaw clenched, he said, "Those two crazy people are too offensive. They keep hawking there. Lords, you must tear them apart and turn them into ashes."

It was empty within 20 feet of where Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan were hawking. No one dared to get close.

Seeing Nie Zhan kneeling on the ground, the four four-winged red angels all unleashed murderous Qi. They formed thick red clouds above their heads.

"Don't be impulsive. Did you forget what Lord Ziyang said?"

Feng Jian stopped them. Then he went over with Qiong Lin, appearing before Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan.

Xiang Chunan's eyes brightened. Chuckling, he said, "Finally, someone has come to buy, haha. Who do you have your eyes on? This is our trademark—a four-winged red angel. His price is 100 million saint stones. Not bad, right?"

Xiang Chunan pointed at Nie Zhan.

Nie Zhan knelt on the ground and couldn't move. He was about to throw up in anger. "Brother Feng Jian, Brother Qiong Lin, kill these two bastards immediately and I'll owe my life to you."

The so-called "owe my life to you" meant that he would even risk his life to make up for this.

Another beautiful four-winged angel kneeling on the ground seemed to see hope when she saw Qiong Lin and Feng Jian.

Her pretty face twisted. “K-kill them! I will rip their saint souls out and whip them day and night so they wish they were dead!”

Crack!

Crack!

Xiang Chunan walked over and slapped them both so they finally quieted down. But their eyes grew more murderous.

Seeing how fearless Xiang Chunan was, Qiong Lin clenched his fists. “Aren’t you two being too offensive? The Truth Godly Palace holds the God-Naming Platform Conference to help give everyone some opportunities. Cultivators of different fields can communicate and learn together as well. But you keep fighting here and clearly don’t respect the Truth Godly Palace.”

Zhang Ruochen, sitting cross-legged on the ground, opened his eyes. “Many cultivators saw that they attacked first to steal my gourd treasure and tried to kill me, so they were repressed. Why did it become our fault? I’m following the Truth Godly Palace’s rules by not killing them.”

“Yeah,” Xiang Chunan followed. “We’re following the rules. Why do we keep getting framed?”

Qiong Lin stood in place without speaking. Anyone could tell that anger was brewing inside of him.

Feng Jian sent a message to Qiong Lin. “Why get mad at two dead people? Save the ten Saint Kings first. When the God-Naming Platform ends, it’ll be time for them to cry.”

Feng Jian took a few steps forward and bowed to Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan. Chuckling, he said, “I am Feng Jian of Heaven Track Field. May I know your names?”

“Your Lord Xiang doesn’t fear giving his name. Xiang Chunan.” He reported his name straightforwardly.

Without his expression changing, Zhang Ruochen said, “Xiang Chubei.”

Feng Jian frowned. These two names were very unfamiliar, so he asked, “Which world are you two Xiang brothers from?”

“Your Lord Xiang doesn’t come from any world,” Xiang Chunan said. “You’re so weird. Why are you asking so many things? Will you buy him or not?”

“Yes.” Feng Jian was very composed. He put away his emotions and continued forward while speaking, “But I didn’t bring so many saint stones. I can exchange saint fruit and medicine, right?”

“Of course,” Xiang Chunan said.

Feng Jian took out a jade casket and held it in his hand.

There was a red fruit in the casket. It was shaped like a strawberry but was countless times larger. It had ten layers of saintly light.

“This is a Ten-heart Red Fruit. It can improve one’s Spiritual Power and strengthen your saint soul. You can sell it for at least 20 million saint stones outside. I want to use it to trade for Saint King Qiulan.”

While speaking, Feng Jian had already reached the edge of the spatial maze. He was less than 30 feet from Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan.

In the distance, Feng Yan was about to warn Zhang Ruochen, but Zhang Ruochen spoke before him. “Brother Feng, stop. Do not continue forward.”

“Why should I stop? Aren’t we going to trade?”

Feng Jian smiled. He held the jade casket with one hand. The other was pressed into a sword technique behind his back. A layer of frightening Sword Way Xuangang was ready to be unleashed.

“Do not continue forward,” Zhang Ruochen said again.

“You’ll be in danger.”

“Since it’s a trade, we must get closer to discuss it.”

Feng Jian didn’t realize that he was inside the spatial maze at all. He thought everything was in his control.

When he was only five steps from Saint King Qiulan, Feng Jian attacked like lightning. His arm was like a dragon. He

produced a 20-foot-long Sword Way Xuangang at his fingertip and cut down at the ten Saint-binding Chains.

It was not the time to kill people. He had to first rescue the ten Saint Kings.

Whoosh!

The Sword Way Xuangang fell down. Rather than cutting the Saint-binding Chains, they fell above the ten Saint Kings' heads.

Poof!

Poof!

...

Instantly, heads rolled and blood sprayed out, dyeing the cloth mat.

The ten unharmed Saint Kings were now all beheaded.

They had strong vitalities, so they didn't die immediately. However, the ten pairs of eyes on the ten heads all stared at Feng Jian, not knowing why he wanted to kill them.

Everyone around trembled violently. Feng Jian's strike had shocked them.

"Feng Jian, what are you doing!" Qiong Lin roared.

Clap, clap.

Zhang Ruochen clapped while saying, "Great sword technique. No hesitation at all and very smooth. You could actually make the Sword Way Xuangang 20 feet long. I can see that you've completed Sword Eight and should be studying Sword Nine already? Brother Feng's strike really surprised me."

Xiang Chunan laughed loudly. "Everyone saw that it had nothing to do with us. This brother here killed the ten Saint Kings. Don't blame it on us later."

Feng Jian was dumbfounded. He snapped back to reality after a pause and his eyes were filled with capillaries. "Spatial

ripples!” he yelled. “Who used spatial power to change my sword’s path?”

“Thousands of eyes saw that you killed them!” Xiang Chunan roared. “You still want to blame us?”

“Brother Feng Jian,” Zhang Ruochen said. “We just wanted to trade with you for those Ten-heart Red Fruits. We didn’t want to get into a fight at all. We didn’t have you compensate for our items, but you tried to frame us instead... Is this the plan that you all arranged earlier?”

“You’re looking for death!”

No matter how composed Feng Jian had been, he was crazy with fury now. His hair stood up and he let out a long yell. Dense Sword Qi formed. Hundreds of beams transformed into a sword rain that went for Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan.

“All godly and first disciples present, do you see?” Xiang Chunan asked. “He’s attacking first to kill us. If we attack, it’s in self-defense.”

Then Xiang Chunan took out his metal hammer and smashed along the way, breaking the Sword Qi and approaching Feng Jian.

Zhang Ruochen remained sitting cross-legged on the ground, but the Sword Qi that flew toward him automatically reversed itself. It instead turned into a flood of Sword Qi and attacked Feng Jian.

“Spatial power, it’s spatial power again. You are definitely a spatial cultivator...”

Feng Jian reached out a hand and formed a huge whirlpool to collect the Sword Qi that flew back. Then he waved his hand and hundreds of beams of Sword Qi flew out of his hand again. It clashed with Xiang Chunan’s metal hammer.

Boom, boom!

The metal hammer seemed to be millions of pounds heavy. It shattered all the Sword Qi.

Feng Jian was able to be the leader of a major world, so he was naturally very powerful. However, Xiang Chunan’s

hammer created stress for him.

This meant that he was at least at the same level as him.

Feng Jian didn't dare to underestimate this Dark Fool anymore. He put his hands together and blinding Sword Way Xuangang appeared on his arms. He was prepared to use his complete Sword Eight.

Zhang Ruochen flicked his finger subtly. A time print flew out, landing on Feng Jian.

An unprecedented weakness attacked. Feng Jian's knees went weak and he couldn't maintain the Sword Way Xuangang on his arms. They broke into beams of Sword Qi.

Boom!

Xiang Chunan's hammer broke both of Feng Jian's arms. They dropped down bloodily.

Fortunately, Feng Jian had defensive runes, so he survived. Otherwise, this leader of Heaven Track Field would've been turned into ground meat right there.

"How dare you? What are you doing? Are you really going to kill the leader of a world?"

Qiong Lin, Faceless, and the four four-winged red angels changed their expressions dramatically. They rushed over to Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan. They thought that these two were so fearless and could do anything, so they must be stopped.

Zhang Ruochen's lips curved into an undetectable smile.

"Everyone, please be our witness. They attacked first and we were forced to protect ourselves."

The six strong figures charged into the spatial maze and Zhang Ruochen immediately attacked with the 18 formation flags. He stuck them in 18 places, prepared to take down all of these people at once.

Chapter 1668 - We Were Forced To Defend Ourselves

Chapter 1668: We Were Forced To Defend Ourselves

Although the ten saint kings lost their heads, they didn't die.

As long as they could be untied and helped to reattach their heads to their bodies, they would recover given their strong self-healing power.

Qiong Ling, Wu Xiang and the four four-wing crimson angels didn't want to see the ten saint kings bleed to death, which was why they tried to attack them. The four four-wing crimson angels were each holding a blood-red saint sword, dashing toward Xiang Chunan.

“Perfect. Let me crush you all today.”

A layer of demonic light emerged on Xiang Chunan's body, and he spun the iron hammer in his hand like a wheel, fighting against four four-wing crimson angels by himself.

Bang!

He made a four-wing crimson angel that was a fifth-step saint king bleed and knocked him away.

The four four-wing crimson angels were all horrified by how strong the dark fool was. He acted like a human dinosaur, so it wasn't strange that Feng Jian was defeated by him.

The four four-wing crimson angels teamed up and formed a powerful sword formation, which barely gave them enough strength to rival Xiang Chunan.

Qiong Ling standing on the other side could tell that the human man was more of a threat than the dark fool even though he looked weak and innocent.

If the human male was indeed a space monk like Feng Jian said, he must be eliminated first.

Qiong Ling had more profound cultivation than those four-wing crimson angels, as he was a sixth-step saint king. He could easily fight those who were at a higher level, and if he used all his strength, he could even fight an eighth-step saint king.

The leaders of the top-one-thousand large fields were all great talents.

“Heavenly Demon Eye.”

Qiong Ling’s eighteen pupils seemed to turn into eighteen abysses, and eighteen blood-red demonic pillars were shot out of his pupils as he mobilized the demonic Qi inside his body.

Although it was only a look, it was a terrific saint spell infused with many saintly way rules. Even a seventh-step saint king would find it difficult to deal with.

If it was a direct confrontation, Zhang Ruochen wouldn’t be able to fight against it.

However, Zhang Ruochen wasn’t scared of him as he had set up a spatial maze.

Before the eighteen blood-red light pillars hit Zhang Ruochen, they were suddenly turned around and they dashed toward Qiong Ling.

Bang! Bang!

The eighteen blood-red pillars hit Qiong Ling’s body, turning into clusters of mist.

“It’s indeed space power.”

Qiong Ling was just giving it a try.

And then, he took out the Blood-Refining Demonic Mace, on which layers of saint power ripples emerged, giving out terrific power ripples that terrified even saint kings.

“I’ll break your spatial formation first, then I’ll capture you and make you a saint slave.” Qiong Ling yelled.

Zhang Ruochen looked a bit intimidated as he didn’t expect Qiong Ling to be this strong after showing all his strength.

Zhang Ruochen only set up a mini spatial maze here, so if his enemy was strong enough, he could break the maze.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen put his hand into his sleeve and quickly drew with his finger.

A time print was crafted.

Four layers of saint power ripples emerged in Blood-Refining Demon Mace, and its Four Yao Complete Power was triggered, turning into an apocalyptic weapon.

If it were in the universe, Blood-Refining Demon Mace's Four Yao Complete Power could easily kill all the creatures on a small planet. In Heaven Field, especially in the God-Naming Platform, however, the space was stable and materials were solid, so the destructive power was greatly suppressed.

Qiong Ling raised his Blood-Refining Demon Mace like an unrivaled demonic God, shaking the space around him. Unfortunately, the time print hit him at the next moment, and the familiar weakness spread across his entire body.

"Damn it. Why did it happen again?" Qiong Ling couldn't be more bummed.

When he was fighting Zhang Ruochen in Moon Goddess's dojo, Qiong Ling kept feeling weak, and after checking himself, he found that he had lost more than one hundred years of life.

This terrified Qiong Ling.

The most top-tier refining techniques from Black Demon Field all originated from the monotype papers of 'Heavenly Devil Stone Inscription', the supreme technique from Kunlun's Field, so they weren't complete.

Which was why Qiong Ling always felt that there was something off about the technique he practiced.

It was worth mentioning that both Black Demon Field and Guanghai Field were both large fields of the Kunlun's Field Sect.

Qiong Ling's original plan was to get back to Black Demon Field as soon as possible as he wanted to ask his master to help him solve the problems he had about techniques. He stayed because he didn't miss the opportunity that the God-Naming Platform Conference offered.

Zhang Ruochen seized this chance to wield dozens of space cracks toward Qiong Ling.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

Qiong Ling was able to dodge them if he was somewhere else, however, he was in the spatial maze with a feeble body, so he was still hit by several spatial cracks even though he tried.

Slack! Slack!

Several huge wounds showed up on Qiong Ling's body.

None of the protection runes he used were able to ward off the spatial cracks. One of the largest wounds pierced through his chest, knocking his blood, flesh and organs out. It also tore Qiong Ling in half.

The powerful leader of a large field being seriously injured shocked a great many monks.

Zhang Ruochen looked to his side, and he saw a faceless monk flying toward the ten headless saint kings, trying to rescue them. The faceless monk had profound cultivation, and his face rivaled that of a four-wing crimson angel.

“Die!”

Zhang Ruochen pressed on the ground.

The area surrounded by eighteen formation flags gleamed with saint light.

Wu Xiang was about to reach the ten headless saint kings. When he stepped down, he didn't feel the ground. Instead, he felt that he'd stepped into a trap.

He immediately mobilized the saint Qi in his body, and his body gleamed with golden light.

Whoosh!

A whirlpool showed up under Wu Xiang, dragging him in.

The space in the whirlpool cracked, turning into a space storm, immediately tearing his body apart.

It was the spatial trap set up by Zhang Ruochen before, and once it was activated, it could kill someone like Qiong Ling, not to mention Wu Xiang.

It was a thrilling scene as a fifth-step saint king was annihilated instantly.

At this moment, everyone realized that the dark fool and the human man were both terrifically powerful. It was natural that they could befriend someone like Feng Yan.

Where did they even come from?

Ji Fanxin was standing on the top of a white weapon-refining pavilion, wearing a veil. She looked like an angel descending into the mortal realm, yet there was a small surprise in her eyes. "It's him."

The pollen Ji Fanxin left in Zhang Ruochen's body had been absorbed and refined by the Carnivorous Holy Flower. She deduced his identity from his behavior.

There were some sects who dared challenge Heaven Field Sect, however, only Zhang Ruochen dared kill so many saint kings from Heaven Field Sect.

Inside another spectacular weapon-refining pavilion stood many powerful beings who came from a different sect that could rival Heaven Field Sect.

Thousand Star Maiden and Fairy Tianchu were standing among them.

A golden giant that was more than one hundred and fifty feet tall was sitting on the ground, breathing out golden clouds, and laughing, "Haha! Can't believe someone has the guts to provoke Heaven Field Sect like that. How satisfying! These two really have some strong character!"

Fairy Tianchu looked like a deity in the picture, standing in the mist and showing her perfect body. She said, "They're friends

with Feng Yan. Is it possible that they're the new talents from Pangu Field, the ruling field of the eastern world?"

"Even if Pangu Field wants to compete with Heaven Field, there's no need for there to be so much bloodshed. If all the ten saint kings and Wu Xiang die, supreme saints will be alerted."

"This person is very proficient in space techniques. If we can get him to help us attack the group of palaces in the Inner South Yard, we might have a much higher chance of succeeding."

"How are we going to do that? If they're so close with Feng Yan, they must be working for Pangu Field Sect."

...

Thousand Star Maiden suddenly smiled vaguely.

She'd just used a special technique to see through who that human man was.

"I knew that it was you."

Thousand Star Maiden thought for a while, then she waved her hand and walked out of the weapon-refining pavilion with two great beings from Thousand Star Civilization.

Another killing occurred on the booth.

Zhang Ruochen activated the spatial trap again, killing another four-wing crimson angel, leaving only feathers tainted with blood on the ground.

The sword formation formed by the four four-wing crimson angels was broken, so the rest of the three crimson angels couldn't fight against Xiang Chunan at all. Xiang Chunan seemed to have unlimited power. He wielded his iron hammer dozens of times, seriously injuring all three of them.

Zhang Ruochen pointed his finger to the front, and a trace of Sword Way Xuangang flew out, piercing through the forehead of a crimson angel.

Seeing the four-wing crimson angels continuing to die, the creatures from Heaven Field Sect were all shocked and

angered, cursing Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan.

Meanwhile, they wielded one ten-thousand-patterns saint weapon after another toward the eighteen formation flags and the spatial maze.

Boom!

The ground shook and cracked as if the space was about to crumble.

The eighteen formation flags kept shaking, and after a while, the formation flags were knocked away by those ten-thousand-patterns saint weapons, and even the spatial maze was being broken bit by bit.

Zhang Ruochen stood up and said, “Everyone has seen it. They were the ones who attacked us first. We were just forced to defend ourselves.”

The creatures from Heaven Field Sect who were attacking him were all shocked as it meant those two people were about to slaughter them.

Zhang Ruochen raised his hand and mobilized the space rule, exerting the complete space power, changing the space structure with the help of the spatial maze.

Boom!

The ten-thousand-patterns saint weapons wielded by the creatures from Heaven Field Sect rushed into the spatial maze and kept diving.

However, those ten-thousand-patterns saint weapons were not attacking Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan. Instead, they were aiming for Qiong Ling, Feng Jian and the remaining two four-wing crimson angels.

Bang! Bang!

The ten headless saint kings lying on the ground all exploded, turning into a cluster of blood mist.

Chapter 1669 - Duel of Two Spatial Manipulators

Chapter 1669: Duel of Two Spatial Manipulators

A dozen Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons burst with complete power and the two red angels who were already hurt spat out blood from the attacks. The four wings that they used as defense were battered and bloody.

After the recovery period earlier, Feng Jian's broken arms were reconnected, but he was attacked by his side again. He felt very annoyed and yelled, "Cang Qing, what are you doing?"

The dozen Heaven Field beings outside the spatial maze were covered in sweat. They tried their hardest to control the Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons, but they were still late. The ten beheaded Saint Kings had already gotten killed because of them and they'd committed a horrible crime.

The Saint King named Cang Qing hurriedly explained, "This area is very strange. The space is distorted. We can't control how our weapons fly."

"A spatial formation. It definitely is a spatial formation."

"Everyone, attack with all your might to shatter the formation."

...

The dozen Heaven Field Saint Kings tried their hardest to stimulate the Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons. Swords, pagodas, tripods... They all crashed toward the formation. A large mass of complete power burst forth at every moment.

But most of this power landed on Qiong Lin, Feng Jian, and the others.

One four-winged red angel was extremely pale. "Save me," he begged Qiong Lin. "I...can't keep going..."

A shimmering white rune hovered above Qiong Lin's head. The white light was like a lotus that blocked all attacks for him. Hearing the cry for help, Qiong Lin walked toward that four-winged red angel and dragged him into the proximity of the white lotus.

"You two hurry over too," Qiong Lin said. "If the four of us are together, then we can protect ourselves even in this chaotic space."

Feng Jian was about to walk toward the white lotus when a pained cry sounded beside him.

Around ten steps away from him, another four-winged red angel stepped into a spatial trap and was torn apart instantly, dying on the spot.

Feng Jian trembled, growing hesitant.

"It's best not to walk around. What if I step into a spatial whirlpool too?"

Feng Jian stared at the human scholar with fear deep in his eyes.

Before, he only knew that the Ancient Ways were irresistible, but he rarely encountered cultivators of the same generation that could cultivate an Ancient Way to this level. This clash hurt him psychologically.

After mistakenly killing ten Saint Kings, Feng Jian didn't dare to step forward.

His arms and legs were all restricted. No matter how strong his cultivation was, what use was it?

In the future, I must prepare one or two trump cards that can counter spatial power." As the leader of a large world, Feng Jian felt very annoyed.

Growing cautious, he looked forward.

He saw that there was a broad sword in the human scholar's hands now. A layer of Sword Way Xuangang appeared on the blade. The sword was brought down and a beam of Xuangang flew toward him.

Sword Way Xuangang was known to have indestructible attack power and could even penetrate mid-level spells.

“You’re finally attacking me. Unfortunately, your attainment in the Sword Way isn’t bad, but your own cultivation is still really low.” Feng Jian himself was a top Sword Way genius, so he didn’t fear any sword attacks.

The Sword Way Xuangang was only three feet long. It couldn’t be compared to the length of his own. From this, it was evident that the other’s cultivation wasn’t very high.

They both had complete Sword Eights. The higher your cultivation was, the longer the Sword Way Xuangang.

When that short Sword Way Xuangang was ten steps from Feng Jian, it suddenly disappeared from the spot. When it reappeared, it was already one step away.

Feng Jian didn’t panic. He’d already guessed that something like this would happen. He pointed forward quickly.

Whoosh!

Light shot out of his fingertip and shattered the Sword Way Xuangang precisely.

Feng Jian also used Sword Way Xuangang.

Suddenly, his expression faltered. He raised his head and looked up.

A millstone-sized metal hat appeared above his head, forming a powerful demonic cloud. The might that radiated from the cloud even made his saint soul tremble. It felt like a Supreme Saint was standing above him.

He finally realized that the human scholar had sent out the Sword Way Xuangang to distract him. This metal hat was their true fatal kill.

“Oh no... Am I going to die here... I can’t take this. With my talent, I can become a powerful Supreme Saint even if I can’t become a god...”

Crackle.

The space trembled, forming rings of ripples.

Then two handsome figures walked out of thin air. One of them wore a pure white robe and was tall and attractive. It was Gong Ziyuan, the leader of the Space Godly Palace.

The other person had tricolored armor and silver-white hair. He was beautiful, like a god of the mortal world. It was Shang Ziyuan, the leader of the Merits Godly Palace.

The two palace leaders' arrival caused a storm. It meant that this case would reach a new level.

Shang Ziyuan looked at the blood and corpses in the spatial maze. Despite his upbringing, a dark look still flashed past his eyes. Then his gaze fell on the human scholar in the maze.

Seeing Shang Ziyuan and Gong Ziyuan arrive, Feng Jian was overjoyed. He hurriedly activated all his hidden cards. Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons, protective runes, protective patterns... All of this was unleashed to block the metal hat.

If he could block the hat for a moment, Shang Ziyuan and Gong Ziyuan would definitely be able to crush these two mysterious beasts.

“Twisted this space and set up a spatial formation. Ha, interesting. Unfortunately, your attainment in space is still too shallow.”

Gong Ziyuan put his hands forward and spatial rules poured out. “Return,” he uttered.

The interchanged space instantly smoothed and went back to normal.

Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan released Holy Qi with all their might, activating a beam of Absolute Saint power of the hat. There were booms instantly. The weapons and defensive runes above Feng Jian's head kept exploding. Only the defensive patterns still shone with divine light and were holding up.

“Oh god, an Absolute Saint Weapon... Lord Ziyuan, save me...”

Sensing the Absolute Saint power, even Feng Jian couldn't remain composed anymore. His face had horror written all

over it.

Countless beings present were stunned. They never thought that this scholar and martial artist could be so terrifying. They even had an Absolute Saint weapon. No wonder they were fearless.

“Who gave you this courage? Are you trying to kill a world’s leader?”

Gong Ziyang reached out again and held a loose fist. The space trembled instantly. He wanted to use Spatial Move to save Feng Jian.

Zhang Ruochen narrowed his eyes. Spatial rules flowed out of his Sea of Qi and gathered at his fingertip.

Poof.

He stabbed his finger forward and a huge spatial crack flew out. It precisely cut the spatial connection between Gong Ziyang and Feng Jian.

“You can do this? I underestimated you.” Gong Ziyang spoke calmly, but he was shocked inside.

What he was shocked about wasn’t that Zhang Ruochen could cut off his Spatial Move. After all, Gong Ziyang wasn’t completely skilled at the technique yet.

What shocked him was that this human scholar could precisely calculate the spatial connection path between him and Feng Jian. This was very powerful.

Poof!

Following a pained cry, the power from the metal hat tore apart Feng Jian’s divine patterns and broke him into pieces.

A world’s leader had died. His saint bones were pulverized and his blood spattered everywhere.

Boom!

The ground under Feng Jian caved in. Absolute Saint power spread out, making all the cultivators retreat in fright.

Only Gong Ziyan and Shang Ziyan unleashed strong abilities and actually broke through the Absolute Saint power. They streaked toward Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan.

Since they dared to kill a leader of the Heaven Field clique before their eyes, then they'd insulted them before everyone.

"Let's go."

Zhang Ruochen pulled Xiang Chunan into the spatial transfer formation that he'd set up beforehand.

"It's not that easy to escape."

Shang Ziyan's eyes were cold. Murderous intent spilled out. He took off a red feather from his head with two slender fingers and sent it out.

Squawk!

The feather burned up and transformed into a huge bird monster, bursting with terrifying power ripples. Those ripples were even mightier than Qiong Lin's battle might and were probably comparable to a ninth step saint King.

"That weird fire bird can probably rip us apart with one claw. Who is that guy? So scary."

Even Xiang Chunan's expression changed drastically.

Zhang Ruochen didn't expect Shang Ziyan to be so frighteningly strong either. He didn't fight personally. He just sent out a feather and was like a pinnacle eight step or a ninth step Saint King. This wasn't a level he could counter.

Zhang Ruochen was worried that the spatial transfer formation would get broken by the strange fire bird before it could run completely, so he sent out a dozen Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons at the bird.

At the same time, he lifted his hands and released spatial rules.

Kaboom!

The remaining five spatial traps underground were all activated. They formed five spatial crack whirlpools that grouped together into a huge whirlpool. It swept through the sky and crashed toward Shang Ziyan and Gong Ziyan.

The fire bird's feathers shook and sent Zhang Ruochen's weapons all flying out.

On the other end, Gong Ziyang said softly, "Condense."

Spatial condensation power burst out. Then the terrifying spatial crack whirlpool started shrinking. By the time it reached Gong Ziyang, it had disappeared completely.

Whoosh!

Taking advantage of this instant, the spatial transfer formation shone with blinding white light. Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan vanished.

Gong Ziyang walked to the formation's edge and said with some disdain, "Ignorant. You want to escape with a spatial transfer formation? Let me see where you transferred to."

Crack!

Just as Gong Ziyang was about to investigate, a crack sounded.

The small formation before him actually cracked apart and collapsed. Soon, there was a huge ditch.

"He actually...set up a one-time formation. How dare he? Don't let me see you again." Gong Ziyang clenched his fists and his eyes darkened.

It was his first time meeting such a troublesome spatial cultivator of the same generation. As a spatial manipulator, he didn't have any advantage in this fight.

Chapter 1670 - Origin

Chapter 1670: Origin

The battle in the Free Trade Yard immediately became known to the monks in the God-Naming Platform, and they were all shocked.

Two strange men that came out of nowhere had killed more than ten saint kings from Heaven Field Sect, including the leader of a large field and four four-wing crimson angels.

“Where did they come from? Shang Ziyan and Gong Ziyan fought them at the same time, yet they still managed to escape them.”

“Didn’t you see that they used a supreme saint weapon? They must have a solid background.”

“How do you think Truth Godly Palace will deal with the two strange men?”

“Not even Truth Godly Palace can do anything to those two strange men. It was the monks from Heaven Field Sect who made the first attack, and besides, Feng Yan is close friends with those two strange men. With Feng Yan’s influence in Truth Godly Palace, he’ll easily wash away all the ‘crimes’ they two committed.”

...

The two strange men everyone was talking about were Zhang Ruochen and Xiang Chunan. After getting out, they immediately hid at the edge of the forbidden area above the white bone slope in the Outer South Yard.

If Shang Ziyan and Gong Ziyan caught up with them, they’d run into the forbidden area.

“Those two people have terrific cultivation, especially the man with three red feathers on his head. Who is he?” Xiang Chunan asked.

Zhang Ruochen said, “He’s the leader of Merits Godly Palace, Shang Ziyan, also my mortal enemy. Sorry, I shouldn’t have dragged you into this.”

Xiang Chunan said earnestly, “What are you talking about? Do you think I’m the cowardly type?”

“Don’t talk!”

Zhang Ruochen put his index finger on his lip, and a layer of Sword Way Xuangang emerged on his sword. He stared at the white bone slope and said, “Who’s there? Show yourself!”

“Huh.”

A melodious laugh came, and a cluster of starry mist showed up on the white bone slope.

Thousand Star Maiden stood in the starry mist, wearing a purple blouse. Her long black hair dripped like willow catkins, and she was wearing a red hat that was a foot tall.

Thousand Star Maiden said elegantly, “You’re very vigilant, Zhang Ruochen. You noticed me so fast!”

Zhang Ruochen looked more solemn seeing Thousand Star Maiden, preparing to get into the forbidden area at any time.

“Zhang Ruochen? You’ve mistaken me for someone else,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Thousand Star Maiden said, “You can’t deceive me like others, and there’s no need to be careful around me. I’m not necessarily your enemy, and perhaps we can even become temporary friends.”

Zhang Ruochen was shocked, as his Traceless 36 Changes didn’t work in front of her. If she were a supreme saint, he could understand, as he hadn’t perfected the technique yet. However, her cultivation was much stronger than his.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Friends? Are you kidding, your highness? How can two people with Mysteries of Truth become friends?”

By saying that, he had affirmed his identity.

Thousand Star Maiden smiled and said, “You’re right. Two people both with Mysteries of Truth are indeed natural enemies, which is why I said ‘temporary friends.’”

“How long is temporary for you?” asked Zhang Ruochen.

Thousand Star Maiden said, “Why do you stand so far from me? Why can’t we just sit down and have a chat?”

She was likely to refine Way of the Void and kill him to get his Mysteries of Truth. There was no way Zhang Ruochen would let her get close to him.

“My cultivation is only slightly better than yours. You’re a Time and Space Manipulator. Are you really afraid of me? Where is the heroic spirit from when you killed all those saint kings?”

Zhang Ruochen looked around and said, “If you really mean me no harm, why did you arrange two monks to hide near us?”

It was Thousand Star Maiden who was surprised this time.

She did have something very important to do, and she wanted to team up with Zhang Ruochen. However, she was also concerned that Zhang Ruochen might try to kill her, so she came prepared.

The two people Thousand Star Maiden asked to stay near were the two most powerful beings from Thousand Star Civilization staying in Truth Godly Palace.

However, even they couldn’t hide from Zhang Ruochen, which was beyond her expectations.

Thousand Star Maiden thought for a while, then she waved her hand and said, “Stay away.”

The two monks showed up on both sides of the white bone slope and stepped back until they looked like two small black spots to Zhang Ruochen, standing in the distance to guard the area of the white bone slope.

“Is this sincere enough?” Thousand Star Maiden asked.

Zhang Ruochen wasn’t really afraid of Thousand Star Maiden, but he also didn’t want to play with his own life. Now that

Thousand Star Maiden didn't attack him and had sent the two powerful beings away, it was obvious that she really had something to negotiate with him.

Actually, Zhang Ruochen was also curious.

“Okay. Let's talk,” said Zhang Ruochen.

It was all dark around the forbidden area.

Thousand Star Maiden took out a delicate long jade desk and put it on the ground, and then, she took out a sarira lamp and put it on the desk before she sat down on the side of the long desk.

The Buddha light emanating from the sarira lamp shone upon her face, which made her skin look glittering and transcendent.

Zhang Ruochen sat on the other side of the white jade desk and said, “We both have Mysteries of Truth, yet we can literally sit down and talk calmly. It's such a miracle.”

Thousand Star Maiden asked, “How many Mysteries of Truth did you get?”

There was nothing to hide at this point, so Zhang Ruochen said, “Five out of ten thousand.”

“Six out of ten thousand for me.”

Thousand Star Maiden then said, “Do you know why you're still alive?”

“Why?” Zhang Ruochen said.

Thousand Star Maiden said, “Because you're only a second-step saint king, like an immature saint fruit. Even if I kill you, I can only get five ten thousandths of the Mysteries of Truth.

“When your cultivation is improved, you can definitely get more Mysteries of Truth if you pass more levels of the Ocean of Truth, so I decided to seize it when you become a ninth-step saint king.”

“You're treating me like a saint fruit, aren't you?” Zhang Ruochen squinted his eyes.

Thousand Star Maiden was at ease and said, “You should’ve known the law of nature when you started refining. You only have yourself to blame, as you exposed the secret that you have Mysteries of Truth.

“Do you know that a monk will become a Messenger of Truth once he or she gets one hundredth of the Mysteries of Truth? Do you know what that means? It means the monk can use the power that can rival a God.”

Zhang Ruochen sneered. “Are you really that confident that you can kill me when I’m a ninth-step saint king?”

Thousand Star Maiden’s eyes glinted, and she said, “When you become a ninth-step saint king, there’ll be supreme saints from Thousand Star Civilization coming for you life. Even if supreme saints can’t kill you, there’ll be Gods coming for you. Gods can definitely kill you.”

Zhang Ruochen was silent.

It was totally possible that Gods would try kill him for Mysteries of Truth and the identity of the Messenger of Truth.

He shouldn’t have exposed that he had Mysteries of Truth to Thousand Star Maiden when he was crossing the Ocean of Truth.

And he should’ve killed Thousand Star Maiden with that Shining Sun Arrow.

Even if he killed Thousand Star Maiden, it would be of no use. Some of the creatures from Thousand Star Civilization must’ve learned about it already.

Thousand Star Maiden took out the Shining Sun Arrow and put it on the desk, pushing it to Zhang Ruochen. She said, “I don’t know why you shot this arrow, but since I plan to become temporary friends with you, this is the gift.”

Zhang Ruochen took back the Shining Sun Arrow and smiled. “It seems you need my help for something.”

“Help? Not exactly. It’s more of a cooperation,” said Thousand Star Maiden.

“No way.”

Zhang Ruochen rejected her offer and said, “I’ve already learned I’m going to be killed by Thousand Star Civilization in the end. Why would I cooperate with you in any way?”

Thousand Star Maiden smiled vaguely. “Actually, we don’t necessarily have to kill you to get your Mysteries of Truth. If you surrender to Thousand Star Civilization and give your Mystery of Truth to me every time after you get some, I’ll not only spare your life, but also give you an important role in the civilization. You might even become the son-in-law of the entire Thousand Star Civilization. How does that sound? You don’t need to answer now. I’ll give you enough time to think about it.”

Zhang Ruochen pondered what she said as he was curious how Thousand Star Maiden could be so confident that she could handle him.

Even if she practiced Way of the Void, Zhang Ruochen practiced two ancient ways at the same time.

Did she really think the identity of ‘son-in-law of Thousand Star Civilization’ was that attractive?

Zhang Ruochen didn’t show what he was thinking. Instead, he said, “Not only could I have Thousand Star Civilization to help me, but also I’d get lots of refining resources and get a beautiful girl. There’s no reason to reject your offer, your highness.”

Thousand Star Maiden’s eyes glinted, and she said, “I only said you have a chance of becoming the son-in-law. You need to perform well enough to seize that chance.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, “I’m curious. How did you see through my cover, and how did you get here?”

Thousand Star Maiden thought that she had everything under control, so she didn’t hide anything from Zhang Ruochen. “Because I’m the manipulator of the Way of Origin, one of the nine ancient ways.”

“Way of Origin?” Zhang Ruochen was dazed.

Shouldn’t it be Way of the Void?

Thousand Star Maiden pointed her finger forward and tapped on the desk. The desk exploded and turned into a void.

But no...

It wasn't a void. Instead, the desk turned into billions of tiny particles. They weren't detectable to ordinary eyes. Only Heavenly Eyes and mind power could sense them.

Zhang Ruochen had been far away when Thousand Star Maiden defeated the guard in the Ocean of Truth, so he thought that she'd turned the guard into the void.

"The origin of everything."

Thousand Star Maiden raised her hand again.

Whoosh!

The billions of particles immediately integrated and formed an object that was invisible to normal eyes.

It wasn't a white jade desk anymore. Instead, it was an iron sword that was five feet long.

And then, she pointed at the iron sword, which then exploded and turned into a red saint tree that was hundreds of feet tall. There were flowers blossoming in the tree, which looked magnificent.

The pedals drifted and fell slowly on Thousand Star Maiden's and Zhang Ruochen's heads like red snow.

Chapter 1671 - Saint Monk Xumi's Relic

Chapter 1671: Saint Monk Xumi's Relic

Zhang Ruochen raised his head. He looked at the saint tree covered in red flowers and found it incredible.

“How is it compared to your Way of Space and Time?” The Thousand Star Maiden stood under the tree with her hands behind her back. Her slender frame sketched a beautiful curve.

She was prettier than the flowers.

“Not bad,” Zhang Ruochen said.

The Thousand Star Maiden wanted to compete with him, but seeing Zhang Ruochen was so calm, she didn't continue wasting time. Instead, she revealed her true intention. “You know what happened in the Wind Atrium of the Inner South Yard, right?”

“Yes.”

“Are you interested in going with me to the palace cluster and searching for extreme opportunity?” the Thousand Star Maiden asked.

“It's too dangerous,” Zhang Ruochen rejected directly. “I won't go.”

If a palace cluster suddenly appeared in the Wind Atrium and was connected with the cluster deep in the forbidden zone, then one should never venture there.

Even Supreme Saint monsters appeared there. These cultivators going there was no different than suicide.

The Thousand Star Maiden furrowed her slender brows. “From the information I received, Zhang Ruochen shouldn't be a cowardly person. These rumors are false!”

“This has nothing to do with how brave I am,” Zhang Ruochen said. “I just don’t want to go die.”

“I have the Way of Origin and you have time and space. If we work together, we’ll be able to come and go as we please no matter how dangerous that palace cluster is.”

“Come and go as we please?”

An image appeared in Zhang Ruochen’s mind. A huge divine hand hovered in that icy and pitch-black void. Its aura hung in the air like a waterfall.

It was that hand that made it impossible to use spatial transfers in the palace cluster. Even if he insisted on using it, it would be extremely dangerous.

Come and go as they pleased? It wasn’t that easy.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes grew determined and he waved his hand. “This isn’t up for discussion. Your Highness, please go back.”

The Thousand Star Maiden didn’t give up. “What if I know where Saint Monk Xumi died?”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes gleamed and he asked, “Where?”

The Thousand Star Maiden smiled. “I’ll naturally tell you if you go to the Wind Atrium with me. From what I know, Saint Monk Xumi left an unprecedented inheritance where he died. For 100,000 years, the Time and Space Godly Palaces put in so much effort and money to find that place, but they only found some traces. They can’t pinpoint the exact location.”

Zhang Ruochen gradually recovered. He wondered how truthful the Thousand Star Maiden’s words were. “Why should I believe that you know where Saint Monk Xumi died?”

The Thousand Star Maiden seemed to expect that he would ask that. “One hundred thousand years ago, Saint Monk Xumi had a deep relationship with a god ancestor of the Thousand Star Civilization. They exchanged a strand of hair with each other.

“When that extreme change happened to Kunlun’s Field, a divine intent came out of Saint Monk Xumi’s hair that the god

ancestor had. The god knew that something happened to Saint Monk Xumi and hurried over to help, but...he was too late. The tragedy had already occurred.”

As she spoke, she took out a glittery metal box and handed it to Zhang Ruochen.

The box was square, ancient, and heavy. Starry lights kept flying out. One could see immediately that it wasn't made out of regular metal.

Zhang Ruochen opened the box slowly. Suddenly, extremely pure Buddhist light spread out, accompanied by loud Sanskrit chanting.

If one looked through the Buddhist light, one would see a long strand of white hair in the bottom of the box.

This mere strand contained such massive Buddhist power. It kept purifying the darkness and extreme Yin Qi of the forbidden zone and was very miraculous.

The next moment, the Time and Space Secret Guide on Zhang Ruochen's body shone with faint silver light and resonated with the white hair.

Whoosh!

Strange patterns emerged on the silver paper. Each page was like a dazzling starry sky and seemed to be able to become limitless.

Zhang Ruochen didn't notice the strangeness of the Time and Space Secret Guide. His attention was focused on the white hair.

“That is...”

Zhang Ruochen opened his Heavenly Eye and stared at the white whisker. He realized that it was all white inside. He couldn't see it clearly, but it seemed to...have a vast space.

Saint Monk Xumi's cultivation couldn't be comprehended by regular cultivators. Even if one whisker could be turned into a world, it wasn't anything strange.

Zhang Ruochen sensed a strange aura in the hair. A voice deep down seemed to be telling him that Saint Monk Xumi left something for him in the hair.

The Thousand Star Maiden's eyes were very bright and she found it miraculous. As expected of the Time and Space Descendant. Before him, the whisker has a commotion that's never been had before. Could it be like what the ancestor said and Saint Monk Xumi left a world in the whisker?

Zhang Ruochen extended a finger to pick up the whisker and check the space behind the white fog.

Snap!

The Thousand Star Maiden closed the lid and took the box back. "This is a strand of hair that Saint Monk Xumi left to my ancestor. It belongs to the Thousand Star Civilization."

Zhang Ruochen stared at the box. Instead of snatching it back, he said calmly, "Even if you have a strand of hair from Saint Monk Xumi, it doesn't mean that you know where he died."

"I am the fairy of the Thousand Star Civilization and will become the leader one day," Thousand Star Maiden said with disdain. "Why would I lie to you?"

Zhang Ruochen had been lied to multiple times. Even a god would lie, let alone a fairy.

"The Wind Atrium is an extremely dangerous place in that palace," Zhang Ruochen said. "I heard that many cultivators died there. Going with you would be a great risk and I might even die in there. I would never take the risk just because of your words, unless..."

"Unless what?" the Thousand Star Maiden asked quickly.

"Unless you give me that hair," Zhang Ruochen said. "Then I can go with you."

Unexpectedly, the Thousand Star Maiden agreed quickly.

Zhang Ruochen furrowed his brows, finding it unusual. Even if the Thousand Star Maiden couldn't see what was strange with the hair, there were so many strong figures in the civilization. Could they not see it either?

Didn't she agree too quickly?

What Zhang Ruochen didn't know was that the god ancestor of the Thousand Star Civilization had told the maiden that if she ever met the Time and Space Descendant, she had to give him the whisker.

"I have another condition," Zhang Ruochen said. "Before entering the Wind Atrium, I must reach the third step Saint King Realm and 57th level for Spiritual Power. You have to supply the saint fruits and medicine for that."

"Okay, I agree."

The Thousand Star Maiden didn't think this was too much. After all, the Wind Atrium was very dangerous. You had to risk your life. If not for the fact that an elder of her clan was dying soon and needed the divine spring to replenish his longevity, she wouldn't take the risk either.

As for fruit and medicine that improved cultivation and Spiritual Power, it was even easier for her.

There were many strong figures in the civilization. They picked many fruits and medicine from the inner and outer four yards. The Thousand Star Maiden didn't have to pick anything herself after entering the God-Naming Platform. She could just take the fruit and medicine given by other cultivators to improve.

This was why she could walk before Zhang Ruochen and reach the third step Saint King Realm first.

After the Thousand Star Maiden left, Xiang Chunan walked out of the darkness with a strange expression. "Brother Ruochen, are the Mysteries of Truth really as precious as you said?"

"Do you trust me?" Zhang Ruochen asked in return.

"Yes, of course."

"No matter how precious they are, I will never take a single bit from you," Zhang Ruochen said.

"I, Xiang Chunan, would never either. Plus, no matter how precious the Mysteries of Truth are, could they be more

precious than brotherhood? Brother Ruochen, how about I give all of them to you now?" Xiang Chunan said emotionally. He was afraid that the Mysteries of Truth would get between them.

"No, don't. If you do that, we won't be able to be brothers anymore!"

After a pause, Zhang Ruochen grew much more serious. "I have to go to the Wind Atrium. I'm afraid we'll have to separate for a period."

"I'm going with you. We'll go through thick and thin together." Xiang Chunan patted his broad chest.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. "My rivalry with the Heaven Field clique has already affected you. This time, I can't let you take risks, no matter what."

Xiang Chunan was about to speak, but Zhang Ruochen immediately said, "I'm not letting you go, because I have something more important that I need your help with."

After handing Mu Lingxi over to Xiang Chunan, Zhang Ruochen entered the Free Trade Yard again.

Of course, he'd turned back into that appearance. He looked to be around 20 years old and wore a cloth robe. He looked very ordinary.

The Free Trade Yard had recovered its peace, but along the way, Zhang Ruochen heard many people discussing the battle that had just happened. They said that he and Xiang Chunan were mysterious monsters with extremely terrifying abilities.

Some guessed that they were the rising stars of Pangu Field, leader of the east.

Others guessed that they were godly disciples secretly trained by the Truth Godly Palace.

Their guesses weren't entirely without proof.

Up until now, none of the ten major godly disciples in the God-Naming Platform Conference had issued an order to arrest them, so it was clear that some extremely powerful figure had pushed this down.

If the Heaven Field clique suffered a loss but didn't go after them, then their backgrounds were truly terrifying. It was normal that they guessed Pangu Field and the Truth Godly Palace.

After a while, Zhang Ruochen finally reached the majestic Weapon-Refining Pavilion. He looked up but couldn't see the top of the pavilion. He could only feel the strong auras coming from inside.

Such a large and tall Weapon-Refining Pavilion was rare and stood up in the Free Trade Yard.

Kaboom!

At the same time, a carriage wrapped in white saint light came from the distance. Eight white peacocks pulled the carriage.

There were many small and intricate treasures on the carriage, including Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon windchimes, natural green-patterned gourds, snow grass, saint jade marrow etc.

As the carriage flew forward, the windchimes swayed, the gourd tapped softly, jade marrow flowed... It was actually interwoven into a moving melody.

There was a beautiful woman inside the carriage. She stood on the head of one white peacock and shone with brilliant light. This was the disciple of Fairy Tianchu, Li Hanmiao, once number 19 on the Saints Merits Rank.

Chapter 1672 - Kaleidoscope

Chapter 1672: Kaleidoscope

Zhang Ruochen kept looking at the delicate saint carriage, and he was amazed. “Eight Yao Ten Thousand Patterns Saint Weapon.”

No wonder it was a maiden. The saint carriage was an incredible weapon itself, and it was only slightly weaker than the Golden Dragon Carriage.

Is that Fairy Tianchu from ‘Nine Angels Beauty Scroll’ sitting in the carriage? Zhang Ruochen thought.

Only the owner was qualified to ride in such a precious saint carriage.

Everyone wanted to meet a beauty, especially the renowned Fairy Tianchu.

Zhang Ruochen was also very tempted.

To his disappointment, it was a man who walked out of the saint carriage, and it was a hideous man as well. His head was twice as large as normal people’s, and he had severe buck teeth that his lips couldn’t cover.

He wasn’t a human being.

If Fairy Tianchu’s pursuers saw this, they’d have been incredibly jealous.

How could such an ugly guy ride in the fairy’s carriage?

The ugly man with a giant head had profound cultivation. Although Zhang Ruochen was curious who he was, he didn’t use his heavenly eyes to observe him as he might bring trouble to himself.

After walking out of the saint carriage, the giant-headed ugly man kept staring at Li Miaohan with desire. He smiled and asked, “Where is the fairy, sister Miaohan?”

“My master is in this weapon-refining pavilion.”

Li Miaohan looked disdainful and her back was facing him.

If she had managed to invite Gong Ziyan, she wouldn't have had to invite this guy who had a horrible reputation.

He had both a terrible reputation and a repulsive face, yet he had very profound cultivation and achieved greatly in the Space Way.

They needed space monks to attack that palace.

He had an outrageous condition when Li Miaohan went to invite him as he wanted Fairy Tianchu to pick him up herself.

If Fairy Tianchu really rode the same carriage with him, it would have an awful impact on her reputation.

He changed his mind after Li Miaohan rejected his requirement, and went along to ask her to pick him up using Fairy Tianchu's White Feather Peacock Carriage.

It was still unreasonable to Li Miaohan, yet Fairy Tianchu agreed with what she was told.

Li Miaohan then had to control her disgust and pick him up, riding the White Feather Peacock Carriage.

The giant-headed ugly man was called Gu Feng. He was grinning, and said, "Can't believe I got to ride in Fairy Tianchu's White Feather Peacock Carriage. I can boast about it for three years after getting back. Honestly, the fairy smells so great, different from other girls."

Li Miaohan saw Gu Feng's facial expression, and she could easily tell that he was thinking of something despicable.

She got much more scornful and kept clenching her smooth fist as she felt that her holy master was being blasphemed by him.

Gu Feng noticed Zhang Ruochen who was standing nearby, looking smug. He said, "See this, kid? I'm riding in Fairy Tianchu's carriage, and it was Li Miaohan riding in the carriage as well, and she's ranked in the top twenty on 'Saints Merits Rank'. Jealous?"

Zhang Ruochen didn't want any trouble, so he only smiled vaguely at him.

Gu Feng wasn't satisfied with Zhang Ruochen's reaction. He frowned and said, "Do you know who I am? People call me a kaleidoscope. Gu Feng. I can walk through a flowering shrub of girls and get all of them. Every man in the world is jealous of me. Do you want to be my sidekick, kid? You won't get the good girls, but the mediocre ones can be yours."

Zhang Ruochen was still smiling. "No."

Li Miaohan didn't notice this ordinary-looking man at first, but now, she was impressed by him.

Even Li Miaohan felt stressed standing in front of Gu Feng given his cultivation, not to mention his reputation.

However, that ordinary-looking man could remain calm and smiley while being stared at by Gu Feng.

Which showed he was extraordinary.

Just as Gu Feng wanted to teach him a lesson as he thought Zhang Ruochen was tactless, Li Miaohan said, "Senior Gu, let's get in. Don't make my master wait too long."

Gu Feng had already activated the space seal on his palm, but then, he clenched his fist and smiled. "Sounds great. We can't have the fairy wait for too long. I'm a man, so I need to get in quick, otherwise, the fairy will be impatient."

Li Miaohan's face blushed, and she got more contemptuous, yet she had to control her disgust.

Zhang Ruochen whispered to himself after Li Miaohan and Gu Feng walked into the weapon-refining pavilion. "Can't believe a disgusting guy like him also practices Space Way."

Zhang Ruochen stopped thinking and walked forward.

Two giant saint kings were guarding the weapon-refining pavilion. Zhang Ruochen handed them the Thousand Star Maiden's invitation and walked in.

The weapon-refining pavilion had ten levels, and each level was more than two hundred feet tall, looking spectacular. Even

a giant that was a hundred feet tall could walk inside with no problem,

As for Zhang Ruochen, a human monk, he looked like a tiny dwarf in the tunnel.

A man with a giant beard walked toward him and said, “Mr. Zhang, her highness heard that you’ve arrived, so she asked me to receive you here.”

This was the third time he saw this giant-bearded man.

He saw him the first time in the Ocean of Truth when he rode the carriage for the Thousand Star Maiden.

The second time he saw him was in the white bone slope where he talked to the Thousand Star Maiden. There were two great beings around, and the giant-bearded man was one of them.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t notice how exceptional the giant-bearded man was until he got close to him.

Zhang Ruochen was able to estimate the cultivation of almost all creatures under supreme saints, even if not accurately. However, he couldn’t figure out how powerful this giant-bearded man was at all.

A great talent like the Thousand Star Maiden must have a supreme being to protect her, Zhang Ruochen thought.

The giant-bearded man led Zhang Ruochen all the way to the top of the weapon-refining pavilion.

The top of the weapon-refining pavilion looked like both an observatory and a square where there were more than a hundred creatures gathered. Each of them had great Saintly Way force.

The golden giant stood out among them. Even if he was smiling, he looked forceful.

Gu Feng was standing at the center while Li Miaohan walked behind a woman wearing a veil.

There were circles of saint light around the woman wearing a veil. People could only vaguely see her shape and her three

eyes.

Although there was a third eye on her glowing forehead, it didn't affect her extraordinary charm. Instead, it made her look all the more distinguished, startling and divine.

She must be the legendary Fairy Tianchu.

Gu Feng was talking to Fairy Tianchu with his arms in front of his chest. "If you agree to my condition, I'll strive to help you get the divine spring with my life."

The male monks around Fairy Tianchu all looked pissed.

A man wearing a white cape with dragons on it said, "How dare you propose something reckless to Fairy Tianchu, Gu Feng?"

Gu Feng looked fearless and said, "This has nothing to do with you, Crown Prince Dizu. Better shut up."

Crown Prince Dizu looked angry and said, "Nobody in Truth Godly Palace dares talk to me like this."

Gu Feng sneered and said, "You were trying to butter Fairy Tianchu up, weren't you? Unfortunately for you, all your efforts are in vain now. Have you ridden the fairy's White Feather Peacock Carriage? Because I just did, haha!"

Crown Prince Dizu looked more and more upset, and a dragon sound came out of his body.

Zhang Ruochen walked to the Thousand Star Maiden, led by the giant-bearded man.

The Thousand Star Maiden smiled and pointed at a seat beside her, transmitting her voice. "Come sit. You're here for a good show."

Zhang Ruochen asked her after sitting down, "What good show?"

"That disgusting Gu Feng asked Fairy Tianchu to marry him, otherwise he won't go to the Wind Atrium with us. He's insane, isn't he?" Thousand Star Maiden smiled.

Zhang Ruochen asked, "Did Fairy Tianchu agree?"

The Thousand Star Maiden shot Zhang Ruochen a glare and said, “Gu Feng is despicable compared to Fairy Tianchu. If Fairy Tianchu complies with him, it’ll cause a storm in the entire Heaven Field. It’s definitely impossible!”

Zhang Ruochen said, “Everyone who goes to the Wind Atrium is risking their lives. I don’t find it too outrageous.”

The Thousand Star Maiden stared at Zhang Ruochen, smiled and said, “Do you think your requirement is too little and regret it now?”

“No. I only hope that you can keep you promise after everything’s finished,” said Zhang Ruochen calmly.

Gu Feng looked very confident, looking at Fairy Tianchu. “Please do consider it, fairy. I heard that the Elder Heaven Master from Tianchu Civilization was seriously injured when he fought a supreme being from the Asura race, and he still hasn’t recovered yet.

“If he can’t collect enough water from the divine spring, he won’t be able to pass the Yuanhui Calamity this time, which means he’ll die. If he dies, and given the crippling situation facing Tianchu Civilization now... I can’t imagine the consequences.”

Chapter 1673 - Fairy Makes a Vow

Chapter 1673: Fairy Makes a Vow

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

In any major world, there would be both big and small challenges. Some came from Hell World, some from the interests and conflicts of neighboring worlds, or some were rivalries left over from ancient times.

This was so for the Tianchu Civilization.

The Tianchu Civilization was at the edge of Heaven World's universe. It neighbored the Asura Race of Hell World. For 100,000 years, the fights between these two had never stopped.

The old leader of the Tianchu Civilization was an ancient strong figure. With him there, neither the enemies of the civilization nor the Asura Race dared to offend them due to fear.

But 3,000 years ago, the leader had a shockingly strong battle with another figure of the Asura Race. Even though he defeated the Asura, he'd also become seriously injured.

For the past 3,000 years, the Tianchu Civilization had been searching for divine medicine everywhere to cure the old leader.

But divine medicine was such a treasure and rarely seen in the four leading worlds. How could they easily find one?

Six hundred years ago, the Tianchu Civilization finally found a divine medicine in an ancient secret territory of the universe.

Unfortunately, the medicine wasn't mature yet. It needed a large amount of Holy Spring to quicken the ripening of the medicine.

The Tianchu Civilization used practically all their connections and wealth to buy Holy Springs, but the medicine still didn't ripen.

If the old leader couldn't be treated with divine medicine, he would be unable to pass through the Yuanhui Calamity that occurred once every 129,600 years. Once he died, the tempted enemies would take the chance to carve up the Tianchu Civilization.

There wasn't much time before the leader's Yuanhui Calamity. Gu Feng had received this information, so that's why he made such an impolite request.

He believed that Fairy Tianchu knew how serious the problem was and would cave.

If he could marry someone so beautiful and amazing as Fairy Tianchu, just thinking about lying in the same bed as her made fire burn in his stomach. He shook with excitement.

All the cultivators present belonged to the same sect—the Ancient Civilization Sect.

The leaders of the sect were either fairies or deities and goddesses. They had extremely high cultivations and statuses.

Seeing how arrogant Gu Feng was, they all grew upset.

Crown Prince Dizu was the most furious. He shot to his feet. "Gu Feng, don't think that we have to use your spatial power to go into the Wind Atrium. To be honest, I've also invited a spatial cultivator and his attainments aren't any lower than yours."

There were many treasures in the Wind Atrium. It wasn't only the Holy Spring. All the large forces were rubbing their hands, eager to do something big.

Thus, they'd all invited some spatial cultivators.

Crown Prince Dizu wasn't from the Ancient Civilization Sect, but he was one of Fairy Tianchu's top pursuers. When he'd entered the God-Naming Platform, he'd claimed to want to follow her everywhere.

He knew how important the Holy Spring was to Fairy Tianchu, so he worked hard in this aspect.

If he could help Fairy Tianchu get the Holy Spring, then he'd definitely get the beauty.

Hearing this, Gu Feng scoffed. "Not any lower than me? To be honest, no spatial cultivators under the Supreme Saint Realm, other than Gong Ziyan, dare to say they can defeat me. Even if there are, then they're the old guys from the Space Godly Palace. But with their age, they wouldn't come to the Truth Heavenly Domain at all."

A black-robed elder walked out from behind Crown Prince Dizu. "Such confidence. I, Chou Gu, don't believe you."

Tap, tap.

The black-robed man named Chou Gu held a metal staff with a dragon hand and had a hunchback. He walked toward Gu Feng.

Each step that Chou Gu took seemed to be small, but spatial ripples actually spread from his legs. Each step was many feet wide.

This was different from the martial technique "Shrink Land into Inch." Chou Gu used spatial power to shrink the land under his feet ten times.

"Shrink Land into Inch" was a martial technique that combined many hallucinations and physical techniques. It was a ploy.

Chou Gu's skill stunned everyone present, thinking, Crown Prince Dizu's spatial cultivator really isn't bad.

"The spatial structure in the God-Naming Platform is extremely steady, but he can cross a dozen feet with one step. In the mortal world, wouldn't he be able to cross hundreds of miles?"

Eyes shining, the Thousand Star Maiden sent a message to Zhang Ruochen. “Chou Gu’s spatial steps aren’t bad, right? Can you do it?”

Zhang Ruochen stared at Chou Gu’s metal boots and realized that the spatial ripples actually came from the bottom of those.

“Those metal boots must be a nice spatial treasure,” Zhang Ruochen said. “Chou Gu must’ve used the boots to shrink the land and cross a dozen feet.”

The Thousand Star Maiden’s eyes were unusual. She had Origin Divine Eyes. After Zhang Ruochen reminded her, she was able to see it immediately.

If Zhang Ruochen wanted to shrink the land, it was extremely easy. He just had to use Spatial Distortion to do it and didn’t need spatial treasures like those metal boots.

“Chou Gu must be very old,” Zhang Ruochen said. “How is he qualified to come cultivate in the Truth Godly Palace?”

The Thousand Star Maiden shook her head. “This man is only around 200 years old. He’s very young among Saint Kings and is like a teen among common people. However, his technique is special and makes him look old.”

Each major realm represented a different level in life.

Mortals could only live 100 years.

A Saint King’s lifespan was more than 1,000 years, so the definition of “young” was clearly different.

While the Thousand Star Maiden and Zhang Ruochen talked, Chou Gu and Gu Feng somehow started fighting. They actually battled with spatial techniques.

“Gravity Space.”

Chou Gu stuck his dragon-head metal staff into the ground. His Holy Qi and spatial rules poured into it, forming a special spatial domain—Gravity Spatial Domain.

Even Zhang Ruochen, sitting a dozen feet away, could feel that the gravity on him grew by 20 or 30 times. It was getting stronger too.

“Hundred times gravity,” Chou Gu roared softly.

The gravity of Heaven World was already higher than the mortal world. Only Saint Kings could fly short distances. One could imagine that if 100-times gravity weighed on a cultivator, his combat abilities would drop greatly.

“Interesting.”

Zhang Ruochen touched his chin with a finger and grew thoughtful.

Gu Feng retreated quickly and searched for a place with weaker gravity. He laughed loudly. “That’s all you can do? A mere Gravity Spatial Domain can’t restrict me.”

“Palm Explosion.”

Gu Feng raised his right hand. A spatial brand appeared on his palm and it spun quickly.

A moment later, a beam of light shot out of the spatial brand and flew toward Chou Gu.

It was visible to the naked eye that the space trembled in the path of the pillar of light. The Gravity Spatial Domain couldn’t repress it at all.

“Oh, no.”

Chou Gu’s expression changed dramatically. He hurriedly activated the spatial runes on the bottom of his feet to shrink the land and retreat quickly.

Kaboom!

The pillar of light exploded before Chou Gu. It released a great spatial storm and made Chou Gu spit out blood while retreating furiously.

Crown Prince Dizu streaked forward and pressed a hand on Chou Gu’s shoulder. He sent out a palm print with his other hand, stopping the terrible spatial storm.

Gu Feng cackled. “Crown Prince Dizu, is this the powerful spatial figure that you invited? If I hadn’t shown mercy, he would be dead by now.”

Chou Gu grew embarrassed. Putting his hands together, he said, “Your Highness, I am indeed unable to compare with him in spatial knowledge. Gu Feng has a powerful spatial brand. Probably only Spatial Manipulator Gong Ziyang can surpass him.”

“It’s okay, you tried your best!”

Crown Prince Dizu had Chou Gu step down to heal. His eyes turned cold and sharp. He prepared to punish Gu Feng personally.

Suddenly, he heard Fairy Tianchu’s voice in his ears. He stopped immediately and turned around. He gazed at the beauty with confused eyes.

The Holy Qi halo around Fairy Tianchu grew extremely bright, illuminating the sky above the Weapon-Refining Pavilion like it was daylight. A pure voice sounded. “The Holy Spring of the Wind Atrium is indeed very important to the Tianchu Civilization. Today, I, Luo Ji, swear that anyone who can give me 100,000 drops of Holy Spring can marry me. If I go against my word, let the world destroy me.”

Fairy Tianchu’s voice spread far and wide through the entire Free Trade Yard.

Hearing this, the unruly noise of the yard vanished, silencing.

Half a beat later, a tumultuous sound exploded. All the cultivators grew hot-blooded and excited.

“Did I hear correctly? Is that really Fairy Tianchu’s voice?”

“The Holy Spring is too important to the Tianchu Civilization. Even if she has to sacrifice herself, she must get the Holy Spring to help the old leader get past the Yuanhui Calamity.”

“Oh my, if I can marry the fairy, then I’ll definitely shock the Qiyuan Divine Dynasty and become the pride. My father will definitely make me crown prince.”

“Marrying Fairy Tianchu is like getting the support of the entire Tianchu Civilization. Even though they’re in danger now, if the old leader survives the Yuanhui Calamity, then

they'll definitely rise to a higher level. By then, the Tianchu Civilization will become much stronger.”

...

Fairy Tianchu's vow was like a rock thrown into the lake, lifting thousands of waves.

It couldn't be helped. She was beautiful and famous, with countless pursuers. It would make countless people jealous and envious to be able to travel with her. If you could marry her, then you would definitely be a winner at life.

The people who didn't dare to venture into the Wind Atrium were all excited now. They rubbed their hands, wanting to try. It was indeed risky, but what if they somehow succeeded?

Chapter 1674 - Great Senior

Chapter 1674: Great Senior

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

At the top of the weapon-refining pavilion, the princes, maidens and deities from the ancient civilizations were all rendered speechless.

Crown Prince Dizu immediately walked forward and tried to talk her out of it. “Please don’t make a promise like this, fairy. It’s nothing but divine spring. I’ll definitely help you get it.”

Another deity male also said, “We ancient civilizations always help each other out. Your trouble is our trouble. If we can get more water from the divine spring than we need, we’ll definitely share it with you. Please take back what you just said.”

The golden giant that was two hundred feet tall said, “Luo Ji, I’ll annihilate this Gu Feng for you. How dare that jerk threaten you like this. I bet he doesn’t want to be alive!”

Gu Feng, who had been fearless, immediately paled upon hearing that.

The golden giant was the prince of Giant Spirit Civilization, and he was the most powerful being from the ancient civilization sect. His cultivation was profound, and he could easily defeat even ten Gu Fengs.

Fairy Tianchu said with her melodious voice again, “It has nothing to do with him. It’s my own decision.”

Zhang Ruochen stared at Fairy Tianchu as he could feel how hopeless she was.

The creatures here did come from the same sect.

However, it was only a temporary group formed because of mutual interests. There wouldn't be any real loyalty among them.

Would they really give Fairy Tianchu some extra water from the divine spring?

Perhaps there would be someone who was willing to share the water from the divine spring, but not everyone would do the same.

Besides, Fairy Tianchu needed a large amount of divine spring. If there was only a limited amount of water from the divine spring in the Wind Atrium, there was no way people would give her a hundred thousand drops.

It seems that Fairy Tianchu knows she can only rely on herself when it comes to a real danger. The so-called friends she had before might even come ask for some benefits or even set her up, Zhang Ruochen thought.

Only the real confidants would risk their lives to help you when you were in deep trouble.

And a person could only have a few real friends in his entire life.

Actually, there was a bigger reason why Zhang Ruochen agreed to go to the Wind Atrium with the Thousand Star Maiden.

He also wanted the divine spring.

He knew that it was impossible for him to get into the group of palaces in the Wind Atrium by himself. However, if he had the help of the Thousand Star Maiden and the entire ancient civilization sect, he would have a much higher chance to succeed.

He heard that the divine spring was amazingly useful. Creatures under the state of saint who just died could be revived by a drop of divine spring water as long as their souls hadn't dispersed.

As for saints, they needed several drops of divine spring water to be resurrected as they had great body constitution.

If a divine medicinal pill could be combined with a drop of divine spring water, its effect would surge. If he wanted to make divine medicinal pills that were better than heaven grade, he needed to mix them with divine spring water.

It was said that ancient saint pills that were a hundred thousand years old could turn into divine herbs if they were planted in the divine spring and absorbed enough of the water.

The divine spring was incredibly useful, and it would lead to a huge fight every time it came out.

Zhang Ruochen asked, "I'm curious. Why do you guys have to have space monks in the Wind Atrium?"

The Thousand Star Maiden smiled and said, "There'll be Great Senior answering your question soon. One of the great beings who managed to survive the group of palaces is Great Senior."

"Great Senior?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

The Thousand Star Maiden stared at that golden giant that was two hundred feet tall and said, "The prince of the Giant Spirit Civilization, last name Senior, first name Great. He's also the most powerful being in our sect. You've battled with Shang Ziyan many times, haven't you? You should know something about his power. Let me tell you, Great Senior can trump even Shang Ziyan."

"Of course, Great Senior has refined in Truth Godly Palace longer than Shang Ziyan, and he's also older than Shang Ziyan. Shang Ziyan is just as talented as Great Senior, and he might surpass Great Senior in the future."

Someone stronger than Shang Ziyan?

Zhang Ruochen was a bit thrilled, and he looked to the prince of the Giant Spirit Civilization, Great Senior.

The Thousand Star Maiden then said, "There're also a couple other creatures you need to show respect to, other than Great Senior. They all have powerful backgrounds with tremendous power."

After the Thousand Star Maiden finished briefing Zhang Ruochen about the great beings present, Great Senior, who

was sitting barefoot said, “Space monks from all the ancient civilizations, please all stand up and introduce yourselves.”

Other than Gu Feng and Chou Gu, three other creatures stood up and walked out.

One of them was wearing a monk cape, and was named ‘Pu Shan’.

One of them was young and dashing, and was named ‘Li Qinghai’.

The third of them was female, yet she looked like a teenage girl. Her name was ‘Mo Xiaogu’.

None of them were human beings, instead, they refined human bodies. Nobody knew what they really looked like behind the human disguise.

Zhang Ruochen also walked forward and claimed to be ‘Lin Yue’, an alias he had used before.

Gu Feng was surprised to find out that Zhang Ruochen was also a space monk. He then said contemptuously, “Can’t believe everyone dares claim to have refined Space Way before actually achieving something. Isn’t he scared that he’ll get killed in the Wind Atrium?”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t care about him at all, standing there silently.

The Thousand Star Maiden couldn’t let it slide. She sneered and said, “I’m the one who invited Lin Yue here. You’d better treat him nicely, Gu Feng, otherwise, it’ll end very tragically for you.”

Thousand Star Civilization was one of the strongest civilizations in the Ancient Civilization Sect.

Although Gu Feng was powerful and eccentric, he was intimidated by the Thousand Star Maiden, and he stopped showing his emotions. Nobody knew what he was thinking.

The Thousand Star Maiden was a mysterious being to the people from the Ancient Civilization Sect. She was only close with a few monks, including Fairy Tianchu. Others didn’t even get to see her usually.

The Thousand Star Maiden was too young to have her cultivation compare with the likes of Great Senior. However, she was still one of the top-tier beings in the sect.

After all, she came from Thousand Star Civilization.

The space monk invited by the Thousand Star Maiden was valued by everyone, so they couldn't help observing Zhang Ruochen.

However, Zhang Ruochen looked too ordinary, and he was only a second-step saint king. Everyone was upset by how mediocre he looked.

Great Senior said, "We asked you here for two reasons.

"Firstly, the group of palaces on the Wind Atrium are very dangerous, and it's very difficult to get out once you're in. I hope that you can set up a space transportation formation so that we can at least survive it when we're in danger. Our lives are always more important than the divine spring.

"Can any of you set up a space transportation formation?"

Chou Gu immediately said, "The most crucial inscriptions to carve a space transportation formation are under the control of Space Divine Pavilion. Only the disciples from Space Divine Pavilion can set them up."

Pu Shan and Li Qinghai also nodded.

Mo Xiaogu, who was the youngest out of all six of them said, "I'm a disciple from Space Divine Palace, but it's very complex to make a space transportation formation. I haven't mastered it. I need someone to help me set it up."

Gu Feng looked at Mo Xiaogu's breasts, smiled and said, "I've studied how to make a space transportation formation before. I'm not able to make one by myself yet, but I can definitely help you make one."

Mo Xiaogu was a bit scared of Gu Feng, and she took a step back.

Great Senior frowned and said, "You two will be responsible for making space transportation formations. Ming Yi, protect them two and don't let Gu Feng take advantage of the girl."

The silver giant who was slightly shorter cupped his hands while holding a giant axe, “Yes sir.”

Great Senior then said, “As for the second reason, you’ll know when you arrive at the Wind Atrium. Our meeting for tonight ends now, and we’ll gather at the Wind Atrium at midday tomorrow.”

Everyone left the weapon-refining pavilion except Mo Xiaogu and Gu Feng, who stayed to set up space transportation formations.

Zhang Ruochen and the giant-bearded man were following the Thousand Star Maiden. They saw a white and delicate bird as they walked out of the weapon-refining pavilion, dragging an ancient carriage that was glowing with starry light.

A thin blind man bowed and said, “Please board, your highness.”

The Thousand Star Maiden, dressed in purple, walked onto the ancient carriage and lifted the curtain. Then, she stopped, looked to Zhang Ruochen and said, “Do you want to get in?”

“No need,” said Zhang Ruochen.

“Please do. I have a question that I’ve been wanting to ask you.”

Pausing for a while, the Thousand Star Maiden said, “The saint fruits and saint pills you want are already on the carriage!”

The Thousand Star Maiden smiled and walked into the carriage. Every one of her moves looked elegant.

Zhang Ruochen boarded the carriage, and he saw a giant space inside which looked like a spectacular palace which had more than one room.

It was a space treasure.

It was decorated lavishly. There were saint jades of all sorts inlaid on the wall, which looked like stars. At the center of the room was a formation made of hundreds of thousands of saint stones. As the formation operated, saint Qi was released,

which made the ancient carriage become saturated with saint Qi.

There were saint spells of all sorts on the walls, pills, formation inscriptions and rune inscriptions... The characters were tiny, and there seemed to be trillions of characters there.

The Thousand Star Maiden saw Zhang Ruochen observing the characters on the walls, and she smiled beautifully and said, "I'm the manipulator of the Way of Origin, and I can easily master all sorts of strange techniques. Since I can remember, I've been practicing Martial Way and mind power, and I'm also studying formation, pill making, weapon making, Rune Way, beast controlling and witchcraft. I've become accomplished in lots of aspects now."

The Thousand Star Maiden must've achieved greatly if she claimed to have accomplished all this, given how confident she was.

Chapter 1675 - Third Step Saint King

Chapter 1675: Third Step Saint King

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The saint spells on the walls could make martial artists fight to the death for them. The pill recipes on the walls could make pill alchemists go crazy. The rune scroll creation techniques could make rune masters stay up day and night...

Zhang Ruochen wasn't very interested. Looking away, he said, "Where are the saint fruit and medicine that I want?"

"Come with me."

The Thousand Star Maiden walked forward. A mesmerizing fragrance came from her purple dress. Smelling it gave one a gentle and beautiful feeling.

Following her, they went to an extremely cold hidden room. It had many different jade boxes, wooden caskets, and porcelain bottles. Zhang Ruochen didn't enter the room, because he discovered that there were hidden techniques. Formation runes covered it densely.

If he broke into it, he'd definitely get attacked by the formation.

Zhang Ruochen had seen Formation Saint Masters before. The runes drawn here were comparable to Formation Saint Masters in both complexity and connectivity.

With his current cultivation, he might not be able to retreat safely if he entered.

Seeing him stop, the Thousand Star Maiden's red lips curved up. "Are my formation runes enough for you?"

"You're already a Formation Saint Master?"

The Thousand Star Maiden took specific steps and walked to a stone wall. She took out many jade and wooden boxes, saying proudly, "My goal is to become a god. A mere Formation Saint Master isn't some impressive accomplishment. Zhang Ruochen, as a manipulator of an ancient way, we should have a bigger vision."

Formation Saint Masters were even rarer than Supreme Saints. They had extremely high statuses in any world.

Every sect, clan, or city needed a formation's defense. Formation Saint Masters were also required.

A Formation Saint Master was on the same level as Supreme Saints.

However, the Thousand Star Maiden said that it wasn't an impressive accomplishment. Zhang Ruochen felt that there was a certain proud and bragging undertone.

The Thousand Star Maiden carried a tall pile of jade and wooden boxes over. She handed it to Zhang Ruochen without the high and mighty aura of a goddess. Instead, she seemed like a gentle girl. "You already have 2,100 rules inside of you. Your Spiritual Power is also in the middle of level 56. This saint medicine and fruit can help you reach the third step Saint King Realm and level 57 of Spiritual Power."

The Thousand Star Maiden's Origin Divine Eyes gave Zhang Ruochen a headache. He couldn't keep any secrets before her eyes.

Sometimes, he wondered if he was naked when standing before her.

He accepted the jade boxes and wooden caskets and began checking them.

He had to admit that the Thousand Star Maiden was very generous. She gave even more saintly fruit and medicine than

Zhang Ruochen had imagined. If he didn't run into a bottleneck, then he would definitely have a breakthrough.

Suddenly, the Thousand Star Maiden asked, "Zhang Ruochen, do you drink?"

Zhang Ruochen was surprised and quickly shook his head. "Not often."

"How about you drink a bit with me?"

She walked to another hidden room that actually had all sorts of wine and brews. They'd been collected from all over the world. Each one was more than 100 years old and it was difficult to measure their value in saint stones.

Who would've known that the gentle and mysterious Thousand Star Maiden was an alcoholic? "This is Non-Precept Breaking. It was brewed by a Bodhisattva from the Western Buddhist Field. I put in a lot of effort to buy a bottle. All this time, I couldn't find a friend who was qualified to drink this. But as the controller of time and space, you are qualified to taste it."

The Thousand Star Maiden's slender hands opened the wine bottle's seal and a clean fragrance instantly filled the entire space.

Even Zhang Ruochen who cautioned himself against drinking was mesmerized by the fragrance. He couldn't help but sniff. When he reopened his eyes, the Thousand Star Maiden had already filled his cup with wine.

She used her practically perfect jade-like hands to lift her cup and sipped it with her red lips. "Not bad. As expected of Non-Precept Breaking. It didn't disappoint me."

Zhang Ruochen didn't lift his cup. He felt that the atmosphere was very strange and unbelievable.

"Are we friends or enemies?" he asked.

"Friends, of course. Otherwise, why would I invite you onto my carriage and take out Non-Precept Breaking for you to taste?" The Thousand Star Maiden sat primly across from him.

Her dress pooled on the ground like a purple flower and her starry eyes were asphyxiatingly beautiful.

“Then, would you kill your own friends? And steal their Mysteries of Truth?”

“There are many different types of friends. Us two are just wine friends.” The Thousand Star Maiden lifted her cup and made an elegant move while smiling brightly. “Of course, you’re one of the very few men who don’t annoy me. If you treasure this friendship, you can give me the Mysteries of Truth voluntarily. We might even become better friends after that. Drink! Are you afraid that I poisoned it?”

The fragrance of Non-Precept Breaking was like Qing Mo’s food. No being could resist its temptation.

Zhang Ruochen raised his cup and took a sip. Then he drank it all. “Great wine. I know an old guy who loves wine like its his life and is a master at making wine. This Non-Precept Breaking is already comparable with his.”

After drinking a little, the Thousand Star Maiden finally asked the question that was on her mind. “On the riverbank of the Truth Ocean, you and Feng Yan discussed me secretly. At that time, you said, ‘That woman is indeed strong. She knows how to give and take and can make the correct choice. She’s smart, but unfortunately...’ You didn’t continue on. I really want to know what’s unfortunate.”

“So you invited me to drink wine for this?” It dawned on Zhang Ruochen.

Since childhood, the Thousand Star Maiden had always been better than others of her age. She learned everything quickly and was even better than her teachers. She’d received countless praise and compliments.

Everyone thought that she was perfect and flawless. She could definitely become an empress or goddess in the future.

Only Zhang Ruochen used the word “unfortunate” when commenting about her. Naturally, she would remember this and keep wondering what Zhang Ruochen wanted to say.

What Zhang Ruochen said after that annoyed the Thousand Star Maiden.

“Unfortunately, your personality isn’t strong enough. If you run into a true trial, you probably won’t be able to face it head-on. Someone who can become an emperor won’t submit to others. Someone who can become a god can persevere through all challenges. You’re still far from that.”

After speaking, Zhang Ruochen no longer desired the wine. He stood up and left the ancient carriage.

Arriving at the Weapon-Refining Pavilion where the cultivators of the Thousand Star Civilization were gathered, the carriage drove in. Under the lead of the bearded man, Zhang Ruochen was sent to stay at a cultivation residence.

He didn’t see the Thousand Star Maiden this entire time. Clearly, she was staying inside the carriage.

It’s almost daybreak. There are still eight hours before noon. With the help of the Time and Space Crystal, it’s enough time for me to refine all the saint fruit and medicine.

Zhang Ruochen actually had some other fruit and medicine taken from the Saint Kings of the Heaven World Sect. Even if he couldn’t reach the third step, he would be very close.

Asking for fruit and medicine from the Thousand Star Maiden was just to take advantage of her.

Zhang Ruochen entered the Time and Space Crystal. He took out one of each fruit and medicine that could improve his cultivation and Spiritual Power and started refining them.

Countless hours passed. Zhang Ruochen refined all the saint fruit and medicine.

In the Sea of Qi, the Heaven Pass River made out of Rules of Saintly Way broadened and was obviously faster.

There were 40,760 rules in it. The number had almost doubled.

With such a great number, it was sure that he’d reached the third step.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen was still very far from the fourth step. According to many books, he needed at least 100,000 rules to reach the fourth step.

He would only be able to unleash the power of a mid-level saint spell perfectly after reaching the fourth step.

Cultivators below the fourth step could only use a portion of power from the mid-level spell. It was incomparable to the flawless power. It was like the difference between a Saint and a Half-Saint.

This was why third and fourth step Saint Kings had such a difference in combat ability. Even many talented cultivators couldn't fight across realms.

In the Saint King Realm, each step disqualified many untalented figures. None of those who could reach the end were weak.

This was why fighting across realms grew more difficult as you went further.

“After entering the God-Naming Platform, I've already ingested close to 100 saint fruit and medicine,” he muttered to himself. “Even if there are other saint fruits and medicines, it won't let me break into the fourth step. I can only do it quickly if I find more treasures like the Amazing Saint Fruit or 100,000-year-old medicine. There might be such opportunities in the Wind Atrium.”

Since he'd improved greatly and had a breakthrough, Zhang Ruochen was naturally very happy.

However, his Spiritual Power reached a bottleneck. He was stuck at the peak of level 56 and didn't improve at all even after swallowing a dozen types of medicine for raising Spiritual Power.

Zhang Ruochen got a feeling of crisis. He was worried that the peak of level 56 would be the limit of his life.

Countless amazing Spiritual Power cultivators had the talent to become Spiritual Power Supreme Saints when they were young but got stuck at a bottleneck and stayed in place for centuries before finally dying of old age.

These top talents who lacked power later were countless.

Zhang Ruochen quickly calmed down and summarized the reasoning. “It must be because I keep using pills and improved too quickly but lack understanding and practice. That’s why this is happening.”

Compared to those old guys who’d lived for centuries, Zhang Ruochen was still too young and hadn’t experienced enough. The reason why he could reach the peak of level 56 before hitting a bottleneck was thanks to the seven lives he’d experienced in the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map. They increased his experience and exercised his spirit.

Otherwise, with his cultivation speed, how could his bottleneck wait until now?

He suddenly sensed something and walked out of the Time and Space Crystal. He saw a small guy had appeared in the cultivation residence. He wore a Taoist robe and a circular leaf hat on his head.

It was the Psychic Sage, the Amazing Taoist.

Zhang Ruochen surveyed the room and found that the formation runes hadn’t been destroyed. He was quite shocked. “How did you find this place? And there’s a formation in the room. How did you break in?”

Chapter 1676 - True Power of the Time and Space Secret Guide

Chapter 1676: True Power of the Time and Space Secret Guide

“Amazing! Amazing!” the Amazing Little Taoist said a bit proudly. “Did you forget that I’m a Psychic Sage?”

“‘Psychic’ means that I can see through someone’s body to their soul. I can track your soul. No matter what you turn into, I can still find you.

“As for the formation runes here, they’re even less advanced.

“I can even go in and out of the so-called forbidden zone that you talk about, let alone this place.”

Zhang Ruochen knew that the Amazing Little Taoist had an advanced cultivation and studied some special ancient spells. In the past, he and Xiang Chunan wouldn’t have been able to capture him without using the Absolute Saint weapon.

He had new knowledge of this Psychic Sage’s abilities now.

“You can pick the remaining Amazing Saint Fruit, right?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Of course.”

The Amazing Little Taoist stuck his chin up. After a pause, he said, “But I’ll only give it to you after you leave the God-Naming Platform with me.”

The Amazing Saint Fruit was ineffective to Zhang Ruochen now, so he wasn’t in a hurry to get it. “You grew up in the God-Naming Platform, so you must’ve gone to the Inner South Yard before, right? How familiar are you with the Wind Atrium?”

“Wind Atrium!”

The Amazing Little Taoist's expression changed. "Why are you asking? Could it be...you want to break into that temple and steal the treasure inside?"

Zhang Ruochen was overjoyed. "Does that mean you've really been there before?"

"I truly advise against you going," the Amazing Little Taoist said fearfully. "That temple is very strange and it's at least as dangerous as the palace cluster in the center of the forbidden zone."

"There's a reason why I must go," Zhang Ruochen said. "Thus, you should tell me everything that you know. That way, there's a bigger chance for me to survive. I can only bring you away from the God-Naming Platform if I'm alive."

The Amazing Little Taoist knitted his brows. Then he said, "Actually, I don't know much about it either. I just snuck in once."

"There are also ancient monsters there. In fact, they would attack anything with a spirit or mind. I almost died there that time and never stepped a foot in again."

"That's it?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

The Amazing Little Taoist thought a bit more. "Oh, the Wind Atrium looks like an ancient pavilion from the surface, but it actually has a universe inside. If you stand at the top and look into the distance, you can see the shadows of many pavilions. The space there seems to have been folded."

"Folded Space?"

Zhang Ruochen put a finger under his chin and murmured to himself, "This makes sense! No wonder the sects keep trying to invite spatial cultivators. It must be related to the Folded Space."

Folded Space was a very advanced spatial technique that Zhang Ruochen still couldn't do.

If you cultivated Spatial Twist to the highest level, then you could fold space and even fold it multiple times.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Time and Space Secret Guide, ready to study Folded Space.

Even if he couldn't perform it fully, knowing more about it was also a good thing. He might be able to save his life at a critical moment.

“Oh?”

Zhang Ruochen had shock in his eyes.

The Time and Space Secret Guide had become unfamiliar.

Every silver page had strange patterns. Like ripples of water, they moved out if he touched them.

“When did this happen?”

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes and thought carefully about what had happened since the last time he read the Time and Space Secret Guide.

Suddenly, something flashed in his mind. “Saint Monk Xumi's whisker... Could it be related?”

He opened his Divine Eyes and studied one strange pattern on the silver page. He felt that his spirit and mind were being sucked in. It was like a boundless world that was filled with spatial runes.

The supply of information was great. Just a mere glance made Zhang Ruochen feel dizzy, like his head was about to explode.

He quickly turned off his Divine Eyes and pulled back his Spiritual Power. He was covered in sweat. “Could the Time and Space Secret Guide be a spatial treasure?” he murmured to himself.

He cautiously activated his Holy Qi and sent them into the book. The silver pages actually started absorbing Holy Qi and shone with brighter and brighter silver light.

This had never happened before.

Whoosh!

A huge apparition of a silver book appeared in the cultivation room. It opened with Zhang Ruochen as the center. Each page

transformed into a silver screen standing on the ground. They cut the space into a dozen spaces.

Zhang Ruochen was extremely shocked. He slowly walked under one light screen page.

Many time and space prints flowed on the screen. They were as small as specks of light.

“Amazing, amazing. Zhang Ruochen, what happened?”

The Amazing Little Taoist rushed toward Zhang Ruochen, but he crashed into one silver screen. He let out an “ah” and fell to the ground.

“A mere light screen wants to stop me?”

A bit annoyed, he put his hands together and formed a print technique to attack the silver screen.

Boom!

The silver screen shattered into multiple specks of light.

After the Amazing Little Taoist broke through, the light specks flew back and reformed the light screen.

He looked back with shock. Then he looked forward again. There were still seven light screens between him and Zhang Ruochen.

“Amazing. Break!”

He formed another print technique and attacked the second light screen.

Right then, Zhang Ruochen seemed to understand something. With a joyful expression, he extended a finger and pointed at one silver light screen. A large amount of Holy Qi rushed out of his fingertip.

Instantly, all the silver screens in the room grew even brighter.

Boom!

The Amazing Little Taoist’s print hit the light screen. Not only did it not shatter the screen, it also forced him back with strong spatial reverberations.

“What is this? It actually grew stronger and can burst forth with strong spatial attacks.”

The Amazing Little Taoist thought that these sudden light screens were too strange. He didn't dare attack again.

Just then, Zhang Ruochen's laugh rang out in his ears.

The laughter was wispy as if coming from another world.

“Once the Time and Space Secret Guide is opened, a multidimensional world appears. It can evolve into countless worlds.”

Zhang Ruochen passed through the various screens as easily as if they were sheets of water. Then, he smiled and said, “Every silver page has transformed into a spatial wall. The more Holy Qi I add in, the stronger the walls. Plus, in this multidimensional space, I can cast spatial spells more easily.”

“An absolute treasure! So the Time and Space Secret Guide is a true treasure!”

Zhang Ruochen closed the Time and Space Secret Guide. The silver light curtains all disappeared from the cultivation room.

The Amazing Little Taoist's voice rang out from the book.

“Zhang Ruochen, what are you doing? Where did you lock me into?”

Was the Amazing Little Taoist really inside the Time and Space Secret Guide?

Zhang Ruochen hurriedly opened it. He discovered an “image” of the tiny Taoist on one of the silver pages. It seemed to have been drawn on.

However, that picture was talking and seemed scared. “Zhang Ruochen, let me out! I didn't offend you. Do you want me to give you all the Amazing Saint Fruit now?”

Zhang Ruochen was stunned. He found it incredible.

After all, the Amazing Little Taoist's cultivation was higher than Xiang Chunan and far higher than Zhang Ruochen now. However, he was turned straight into a picture in the Time and Space Secret Guide and couldn't break free.

Its restrictive powers were too terrifying.

“We have nothing against each other,” the Taoist image said. “Why do you have to do this to me? As long as you don’t turn me into a divine pill, I can go to the Wind Atrium with you. With my abilities and experience, I can definitely raise your chances of surviving.”

Zhang Ruochen’s expression turned a bit strange. “You said it. I didn’t force you to.”

“Of course,” the Taoist image said. “A cultivator keeps his words. Why would I lie to you?”

Zhang Ruochen added Holy Qi into the Time and Space Secret Guide and freed the Amazing Little Taoist.

‘Amazing, amazing. Zhang Ruochen, you lowly person who goes back on his word. You actually captured me and wanted to eat me. I won’t go on a suicide mission to the Wind Atrium! Let’s end here. As for the Amazing Saint Fruit, don’t even think about it anymore!’

The Amazing Little Taoist was furious. He shone with purple light and flashed toward the exit of the cultivation room.

Whoosh!

Blinding silver light shone in the cultivation room.

The Time and Space Secret Guide was opened again. It turned into a multidimensional space that shrouded the Amazing Little Taoist.

“Sea-Suppression Print.”

The Amazing Little Taoist used more than 10,000 Rules of Palm Way, gathering them at his arms and attacking with full force. He wanted to break through the silver light before him.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t have time to explain, but he had to stop him.

“Spatial Condensation.”

Zhang Ruochen hit the silver curtain with his palm. The space where the Amazing Little Taoist was instantly froze. Even his palm print froze and couldn’t hit the silver curtain.

It was like time was at a standstill.

The Spatial Condensation cast with the Time and Space Secret Guide seemed to be even more powerful. Even a strong figure like the Amazing Little Taoist couldn't break the frozen space.

“Collect.”

Zhang Ruochen closed the Time and Space Secret Guide. The Amazing Little Taoist was turned into an image on the silver page again.

This time, he wasn't quiet. He kept attacking and trying to break free from the Time and Space Secret Guide.

“Zhang Ruochen, I treated you genuinely. Why are you such a two-faced person?”

“How about I cut off a leg for you to eat?”

...

Boom!

As the Amazing Little Taoist kept attacking, the Time and Space Secret Guide was actually trembling.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “Can't you settle down? When did I say I'd eat you?”

“If you don't want to eat me, then why did you capture me?” the Amazing Little Taoist asked.

Zhang Ruochen cleared his throat. “That was an accident.”

“This time isn't an accident, right?”

“This time, I'm not capturing you,” Zhang Ruochen said. “I just wanted to make you stay so I can explain. If I let you run off, I would really be someone who doesn't keep his word, right?”

Then Zhang Ruochen released the Amazing Little Taoist again.

With a whoosh, the Amazing Little Taoist transformed into purple light and shot out of the cultivation room.

The entire time, none of the formations on the wall were activated. Zhang Ruochen was amazed.

This Psychic Sage could actually slip through the formation.

A moment later, a small head popped out from behind the cultivation room's wall. It was the Amazing Little Taoist who'd come back. He looked suspiciously at Zhang Ruochen. "You're really letting me leave?"

"Since I've explained clearly, whether you stay or leave is up to you," Zhang Ruochen said indifferently.

The Amazing Little Taoist thought for a moment and returned to the room. "You do have some nice attributes. I've decided to go to the Wind Atrium with you. Heh, your book seems powerful. Can you lend it to me to read for a few days?"

Chapter 1677 - Barging into the Ancient Pavilion

Chapter 1677: Barging into the Ancient Pavilion

It was approaching noon, and the snow-white birds pulled the saint carriage wrapped in starlight and drove toward the Wind Atrium of the Inner South Yard.

Only seven figures followed the saint carriage. Zhang Ruochen, Big Beard, Blindman, and the four others were all covered by shimmery starry armor. They rode a metal beast that looked like an earthworm and carried a spear with the width of one's wrist.

When the earthworm moved, it would create loud booms.

According to the rules of the Truth Godly Palace, only cultivators from worlds in the top 1,000 of the Saints Merits Rank could enter the Inner Four Yards. However, with the Thousand Star Civilization's power, it wasn't hard to give Zhang Ruochen a suitable identity and take him in.

"I saw that there were many Thousand Star Civilization cultivators in the God-Naming Platform," Zhang Ruochen said. "How come only we are going to the Wind Atrium?"

The thin Blindman on the right didn't like to talk. It was as if he didn't hear Zhang Ruochen.

On his left, Big Beard explained, "Not anyone can go into the Wind Atrium. If a weakling goes in, it's no different from suicide."

The so-called Wind Atrium was really just a barren hill. It was only a few hundred meters tall and didn't look majestic at all.

After coming to the Wind Atrium, one could look up and see a dilapidated ancient pavilion. There was no foliage surrounding it, making it look lonely so that it gave off a sad and worn feeling.

The stone steps from the bottom of the hill to the pavilion were almost buried in dirt. If one looked closely, one would see the traces left by time.

Strong cultivators from various ancient civilizations were mostly gathered below the Wind Atrium.

Other than the Tianchu Civilization's camp, only a few creatures came from the other civilizations. Each one was a top figure, at least at the fourth step Saint King Realm.

Behind Fairy Tianchu's white peacock carriage, countless creatures were gathered. They seemed to be more than the other civilizations put together.

Most of them weren't from the Tianchu Civilization. Nor were they helpers invited by Fairy Tianchu. Instead, they'd come voluntarily from all types of worlds.

These creatures only came to the Wind Atrium because of Fairy Tianchu's vow. Most of them were young people who were blind with love. Of course, there were also true strong figures.

They were willing to risk their lives for her at no cost. Fairy Tianchu obviously wouldn't drive them away.

Other than the many ancient civilizations, Zhang Ruochen also saw some godly disciples. They were either born in the ancient civilizations or had close relationships with them.

When the Great Senior arrived, Zhang Ruochen was grouped with the other spatial cultivators. They stood in the center of the ancient civilization cultivators. Two silver giants with battle axes protected them.

It was obvious that they wouldn't be forced to attack the palace cluster or prehistoric monsters.

They would only have to attack when truly necessary.

There were very few spatial cultivators. It wasn't strange that they were treated like this.

Other than the six spatial cultivators, there were also some formation masters gathered nearby. They were the protected group.

Great Senior's entire body glittered gold. He had the temperament of a sect leader. Chuckling, he said, "The cultivators of the Heaven and Demon God Field cliques already entered two hours ago. Since we're all here, let's go too."

It wasn't true that you could get the divine spring the sooner you went in.

Instead, those who went in first would fight the monsters first. They would definitely be clearing up the path for the later cultivators.

The hill that seemed to only be a few hundred meters tall actually gave off huge pressure when one started climbing it. It felt like an invisible saintly might pressing on them, or rather...divine might.

After entering the pavilion, their horizon broadened. It was cloudy and wispy before them. Holy Qi filled the air.

If not for the saint blood and corpses of prehistoric monsters on the ground, they might think that they'd arrived in a divine land. Clearly, there'd been a huge battle here a while ago. All the monsters had been cleared out.

The Amazing Little Taoist poked his head out of Zhang Ruochen's sleeve. With a shocked gaze, he used Spiritual Power to ask Zhang Ruochen, "The folded space was actually opened?"

"Yes." Zhang Ruochen nodded.

In the distance, there were palaces one after another. They rose up between the tall peaks and unknown lands covered in black Qi.

Deep within the palace cluster, terrifying screams or heavy battle booms would sound occasionally. The land was too vast. One couldn't distinguish where the sounds came from.

A Saint King with flesh wings shot into the air. He wanted to fly to a height and check what had happened deep within the palaces.

"Get down here!" Great Senior yelled. "Do you want to die?"

The Saint King paled in fear. He quickly pulled in his wings to return to the ground.

Suddenly, a black crack appeared above his head. Like a huge demon's mouth, it bit the man's body in half.

Thud!

Only two bloody legs fell from the sky.

Sharp and cold wind blew through the sky when the black crack appeared. It howled and even the Saint Kings got goosebumps at this moment. Their legs couldn't help but tremble.

The area was silent. No one even dared to breathe loudly.

A moment later, the black crack vanished.

Looking at the two bloody legs, many creatures who'd just come to try it out started thinking about retreating. They didn't dare to continue.

Beside Zhang Ruochen, a voice rang out. "What exactly is that black crack? Could it be a spatial crack?"

The speaker was Li Qinghai, one of the six spatial cultivators.

Monk Pushan shook his head. "I don't think so. The other side of a spatial crack is the void, but that black crack was filled with eerie Qi."

Mo Xiaogu, the little girl from the Space Godly Palace, grew fearful. "If we don't fly into the air, the black crack won't appear, right?"

Gu Feng grinned. "Hehe, little girl, what are you afraid of? Come to your Lord Gu's side. I'll protect you."

Mo Xiaogu's fear grew heavier. She scooted toward Li Qinghai and Zhang Ruochen, hiding behind them. She was afraid of getting approached by Gu Feng.

He'd been staring at Mo Xiaogu's chest, but his vision was suddenly blocked by Zhang Ruochen. His eyes suddenly darkened. "Hey, I really couldn't tell that you also cultivate space when we first met. How about you show us your abilities?"

“There’s nothing to show... Oh, Great Senior and Fairy Tianchu already opened up the path. We should be going in deeper now!”

Zhang Ruochen ignored Gu Feng and walked forward.

Li Qinghai followed Zhang Ruochen, warning him, “Brother Lin, Gu Feng seems to have something against you. You have to be careful. This man has a horrible name and he’s very cruel. He can do anything.”

“Thank you for the warning.”

Zhang Ruochen’s impression of Li Qinghai improved. He began conversing shortly after. “Brother Li, since you aren’t a disciple of the Space Godly Palace, how did you step onto this path?”

He rarely met spatial cultivators, so he was very curious.

Li Qinghai chuckled. “I’m not a disciple of the Space Godly Palace, but an ancestor of my family was once a powerful spatial cultivator in the Space Godly Palace.

“He always wanted to find an heir in the family, but the Way of Space is honestly too hard. If you aren’t extremely talented, you won’t be able to comprehend the first rule of space in the Ninth Change of the Fish-Dragon Realm and meld it into your saint soul.

“I was lucky to succeed, so the ancestor named me as his heir.”

“Since your ancestor is a cultivator of the Space Godly Palace, why didn’t you join them?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Li Qinghai shook his head and chuckled. “To be honest, my ancestor said that I’m not talented enough in the Way of Space. It can only be auxiliary help instead of my focus. Otherwise, I’ll never be able to reach the Supreme Saint Realm in my life.”

On the side, Mo Xiaogu piped up, “Yeah, yeah. Focusing on the Way of Space makes it too hard to improve your cultivation. I’m still stuck in the first step of Saint King Realm now.”

Zhang Ruochen turned and glanced at Mo Xiaogu. Her face reddened immediately. Lowering her head, she said pitifully, “That pervert Gu Feng has impolite thoughts about me. I only feel safer if I’m following you two big brothers. Please help me!”

Li Qinghai patted his chest and said confidently, “Xiaogu, don’t worry. With me here, no one will bully you.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t speak. He was thinking about something.

She was a first step Saint King. Could she be so cowardly?

After all, people who were as easily frightened as Qing Mo were very rare.

This woman is probably pretending to be like that, Zhang Ruochen thought. She wants to use Li Qinghai and I against Gu Feng.

It was understandable that Mo Xiaogu did that.

But it did make her seem calculative. Anyway, he couldn’t treat her like she was an innocent little girl. Otherwise, he may be taken advantage of at a critical moment.

After the cultivators of the Ancient Civilization Sect walked a few miles into the palaces, they finally encountered prehistoric monsters. Both sides entered an intense fight.

Before this, all the saint fruit and medicine had been picked from the nearby palaces.

But when Zhang Ruochen looked forward, he saw huge green saint trees growing among the majestic pavilions. The branches were like dragons that spat out Holy Qi. The fruit on the trees emanated a mesmerizing fragrance.

Some cultivators fought with the monsters. Others attacked the formations outside the palaces, wanting to pick the fruit inside.

Zhang Ruochen was tempted. He wanted to pick the fruit too.

He could see that the fruit on the trees was extraordinary. If he could ingest some, he would definitely improve greatly and have a chance to reach the fourth step Saint King Realm here.

Chapter 1678 - Starry General

Chapter 1678: Starry General

However, Zhang Ruochen discovered quickly that the ancient civilizations had all divided the interest. If he went to pick the saint fruit by himself, he might get attacked.

The Thousand Star Civilization was one of the top forces in the sect, so they could attack a pavilion alone.

The ones who'd attacked were the four Starry Generals on metal beasts.

They were each awesomely strong. The spears in their hands were Supreme Saint weapons and could activate a beam of Supreme Saint power.

Kaboom!

They kept striking with their spears, shattering the formation runes outside the pavilion. They pushed forward to attack the pavilion and pick the saint fruit.

Inside the pavilion, there was a very tall purple saint tree. A dozen cherry-sized white fruits grew on the tree. They were very fragrant and delicious-looking.

No cultivator dared to compete with the Thousand Star Civilization. The Starry Generals were all heartless and anyone who approached them would get killed.

Pushan, Li Qinghai, Mo Xiaogu, and Chou Gu stared at the saint fruit in the pavilion with desire. Everyone knew that the saint fruit definitely had shocking medicinal powers. If they ate one, their cultivation would improve vastly.

Gu Feng chuckled. "Hehe, you all just sit and wait. I'll go pick the fruit! If you pass by the treasures here, you'll never encounter them again!"

Gu Feng rushed toward one of the pavilions.

Li Qinghai, Mo Xiaogu, and the others grew tempted.

But what happened next extinguished all their thoughts of picking fruit.

Gu Feng's goal was actually the pavilion that was given to the Thousand Star Pavilion. As soon as he got close, he was attacked by a Starry General. An ancient spear almost penetrated his body.

Kaboom!

“Get out,” the Starry General said coldly. “Or die.”

Gu Feng clenched his jaw. He was furious, but in the end, he chose to retreat. He didn't fight with the Starry General. He went to a second pavilion but had the same result. He was attacked as soon as he got close.

Anyone who could enter this palace cluster was a strong figure.

In the end, Gu Feng slunk back. Feeling embarrassed, he stood with his hands hidden in his sleeves. He was silent and had a dark expression.

They were all aides invited by the Ancient Civilization Sect. They'd already gotten paid before coming, so they naturally weren't qualified to pick saint fruit now.

Zhang Ruochen thought for a moment. Then he stepped toward the four Starry Generals.

Li Qinghai, Mo Xiaogu and the others were surprised. Even the strong Gu Feng had failed, but Lin Yue hadn't given up?

Gu Feng leered, ready to watch Zhang Ruochen fail.

Zhang Ruochen walked to the outside of the pavilion and icy Qi rushed toward him. It was about to freeze him.

Zhang Ruochen looked toward the source of the Qi. He saw a Starry General stare at him with emotionless eyes.

However, the Starry General recognized him as the guest of the Maiden, so he didn't attack directly.

Zhang Ruochen was stunned. The Starry General's aura was even stronger than he imagined. No wonder even someone as arrogant as Gu Feng would be intimidated.

The Thousand Star Maiden sat inside her carriage and could see everything. She sent out a Spiritual Power message. "Don't attack him. I'd like to see if he can steal the saint fruit from you all."

The Starry General looked away. He picked up his spear and continued attacking the formation runes, allowing Zhang Ruochen to stay nearby.

Seeing this, Gu Feng's smile froze. The coldness in his eyes grew.

Li Qinghai and the others felt incredulous, thinking that Lin Yue must have a special relationship with the Thousand Star Civilization. Could he really be a cultivator of the civilization?

Zhang Ruochen didn't want to get rewards without work, so he opened his Divine Eyes and investigated the runes underground and in the air. Then he formed a spatial crack and struck the weakest part of the formation.

Crack, crack.

The spatial crack flew by and the formation runes were cut all the way to the palace walls.

When the spatial crack closed, a safe path had appeared under his feet. Zhang Ruochen walked on the path and actually entered the pavilion before the four Starry Generals. He surveyed his surroundings and darted at the saint fruit.

Kaboom!

The four Starry Generals riding metal beasts jumped over the tall palace walls and chased after him. They quickly caught up.

He suddenly discovered something and stopped. "Careful!" he cried.

The four Starry Generals ignored Zhang Ruochen and continued charging. They wore the Starry Armor, so they didn't fear any danger. However, the Thousand Star Maiden sent a message to order them to stop.

When they were around seven or eight feet from the saint tree, the four Starry Generals stopped in unison.

Many cultivators noticed what was happening inside. They were all surprised at how this mysterious spatial cultivator could order the Starry Generals around. It was incredible!

After all, the Starry Generals could only be stronger than the Four-Winged Red Angels of the Heaven Field, not weaker.

“Retreat,” Zhang Ruochen said.

The four Starry Generals received the Thousand Star Maiden’s order and retreated, not stopping until they reached Zhang Ruochen’s side.

Then he pulled out two Thousand-pattern Saint Weapons. Activating the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns, he sent them out to strike the ground.

Whoosh!

Explosive power poured out of the two spots. The ground split apart, forming two dozen-foot-tall dirt vortexes. Rather than wind, spatial cracks flowed through.

Some powerful figure had once set up a fatal spatial trap-like thing here.

The metal beasts under the four Starry Generals grew fearful. They screamed and retreated.

One could imagine that if Zhang Ruochen hadn’t warned them and the four Starry Generals charged through, even their Starry Armor would be useless. They would definitely die.

When the two vortexes calmed, Zhang Ruochen rushed over with his fastest speed. As soon as he was about to pick a fruit, a spear reached over. It hit his arm, producing a loud boom.

With this move, another Starry General grabbed the fruit.

The general that stopped Zhang Ruochen grew apologetic. “Sorry, the Thousand Star Maiden ordered us to try our best to stop you from picking the fruit.”

Zhang Ruochen’s previous actions made the Starry Generals feel positively toward him. They weren’t as heartless as

before. Otherwise, they definitely wouldn't have explained anything.

“Okay, let's see if you can stop me.”

Zhang Ruochen flashed and disappeared from the Starry General's sight. When he reappeared, a cherry-sized fruit was already in his hands.

The four generals detected that Zhang Ruochen had used spatial power.

Thus, they changed their strategy. One person picked fruit, one attacked Zhang Ruochen, and the other two protected the fruit on the tree.

One must admit that the four generals worked together seamlessly. Zhang Ruochen tried many times but came back empty-handed. Seeing the fruit on the tree disappear piece by piece, Zhang Ruochen could only return to the ground and sigh.

Just as the generals thought he'd given up, he reached out again. He grabbed remotely and picked two pieces of fruit.

Earlier, he'd sighed because he was forced to expose the spatial grab tactic.

Outside the pavilion, some powerful figures noticed him. “He can pick the fruit from countless feet away. He's quite talented.”

The Wizard God Emperor of the Wizard Civilization was one of the strongest figures of the sect. The ground by him was covered in monster corpses. His deep eyes gazed toward the Thousand Star Maiden's carriage. “Grabbing remotely is very useful here. Thousand Star Maiden, you actually invited such a figure. Very tactful!”

“What tact? I just want to pick some fruit,” the Thousand Star Maiden said nonchalantly. “I'm not interested in anything else.”

Fairy Tianchu walked out of the White Feather Peacock Saint Carriage. She was beautiful and attractive. “Since you aren't interested in other things, could you lend him to me?”

“He has a strange personality and is very hard to get along with,” the Thousand Star Maiden said. “I could only invite him because I have something he cares deeply for. If you want him to help you get the divine spring, it’s practically impossible.”

If the Thousand Star Maiden wasn’t interested in the divine spring, why would she risk her life for this fatal land?

It was completely impossible for her to give this spatial cultivator away.

Fairy Tianchu was clear about this, so she just mentioned it and didn’t say anything else.

Zhang Ruochen’s spatial grab ability truly let him pick the fruit from a distance.

Other cultivators who did this had to use Holy Qi as a bridge to grab items from a few feet, a dozen feet, or even further away.

The two were different in essence.

This was why the top figures were all stunned by this move. Even Fairy Tianchu and the Wizard God Emperor wanted to get Zhang Ruochen on their side, but they didn’t do anything for fear of offending the Thousand Star Maiden.

Zhang Ruochen walked out of the palace with three pieces of fruit and smiled at the Thousand Star Maiden’s carriage.

Li Qinghai and the others were all envious but also had respectful expressions.

Zhang Ruochen’s attainment in space was clearly above them. As spatial cultivators, they especially knew how difficult the spatial grab was.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t say anything. He just swallowed a saint fruit and started refining it.

He wanted to know how many Rules of Saintly Way this fruit could help him gain.

Chapter 1679 - Exchange

Chapter 1679: Exchange

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen had the Time Space Agate so the time around him flowed twice as slow. Thus, to outsiders, it seemed that he'd absorbed the entire fruit in only 15 minutes.

He opened his eyes and spat out white mist. "The saint fruits here are indeed extraordinary," he muttered to himself. "Even though it's not like the Amazing Saint Fruit, it's still much better than the fruit from the Outer South Yard."

He gained 3,400 more Rules of Saintly Way. Now, he had more than 44,000 rules inside of him.

Even with the help of the Mysteries of Truth and rules emperor weapon, it would still take a long time to create so many rules. He'd never be able to improve so fast.

By now, the ancient monsters had all been taken care of.

The Ancient Civilization Sect continued forward. An hour later, they reached the foot of a steep mountain.

Instead of going around it, they stopped.

The mountain was steep and pathless. It went straight into the clouds. Some ancient pavilions and pagodas were built in the yellow-brown walls, thousands of meters tall. There were also countless trees and medicine more than 50,000 years old.

Because these fruits and medicine were shockingly valuable and rare, the top civilizations of the sect started dividing them up at the foot of the mountain.

Then each civilization sent a top figure out to climb the mountain and pick the fruit and medicine that had already been divided up.

The strong figure that the Thousand Star Civilization sent out was the silent and thin Blindman.

Like a ghost, he transformed into a vaporous snake. His body stretched to more than 1,000 meters long. With his feet on the ground, he extended a claw and picked a seven-leaf medicine that was growing on the cliff.

Densely packed formation runes appeared around the medicine, forming hundreds of terrifying thunderbolts and loud explosions.

But no matter how terrifying they were, they couldn't harm the Blindman at all.

After picking the medicine, he returned to the starry carriage and gave it to the Thousand Star Maiden.

The Blindman is actually so powerful, Zhang Ruochen thought. No wonder the Thousand Star Maiden dares to cooperate with me. She's not afraid that I'll kill her and take her Mysteries of Truth.

The Blindman and Big Beard stayed close to her like two guardian gods.

The abilities that the Blindman demonstrated so easily were at a terrifying level even in the entire Truth Heavenly Domain.

Li Qinghai looked at Zhang Ruochen and bowed. "Brother Lin, you picked three fruits earlier. You won't have any effect even if you eat the other two. Can I use some fruit and medicine to exchange with you?"

Zhang Ruochen could see that Li Qinghai was more respectful now. He didn't act as casually as before.

"Brother Li, no need to be so polite." Zhang Ruochen chuckled. "As long as you can give me enough fruit and medicine for improving cultivation, I'll definitely be happy to exchange with you."

Li Qinghai grew excited. He hurriedly took out five types of fruit and three types of medicine from his spatial container.

As a spatial cultivator, he'd gotten some great rewards from the God-Naming Platform.

Zhang Ruochen checked the fruit and medicine. Then he frowned and reached out, pointing at one fruit and medicine. "I've eaten everything already, other than those."

Li Qinghai grew nervous. He sent a message to Zhang Ruochen. "Brother Lin, how many Rules of Saintly Way did that fruit help you gain?"

"Around 3,400 rules."

Li Qinghai's heart jumped. Sadness arose in his eyes and he chuckled wryly. "Sorry, that fruit and medicine of mine can only help you gain 1,200 rules in total. It seems like I'm not fated to receive that fruit."

He was very disappointed. After all, if he could've gotten Zhang Ruochen's saint fruit, then he may very well reach the third step.

"Brother Li, no need to be so disappointed. Since we could meet, it's also fate. For this, I'm willing to trade the fruit that I just picked with you."

He took out the cherry-sized white fruit and handed it to Li Qinghai. "Brother Li, you only have to give me enough fruit and medicine to gain 3,400 rules."

Li Qinghai was overjoyed. He gave Zhang Ruochen all the fruit and medicine in his spatial container. "If you add all these fruits and medicines together, you can gain 4,500 rules. All for you, Brother Lin! Please don't refuse. Let's be friends."

Zhang Ruochen smiled and nodded, accepting the container.

In the distance, Gu Feng glanced at Zhang Ruochen's spatial container and greed flashed past his eyes.

Mo Xiaogu, Pushan, and Chou Gu were very tempted. Mo Xiaogu was the most proactive one. She immediately walked toward Zhang Ruochen and took out her fruit and medicine to trade for the last fruit.

Zhang Ruochen wouldn't be so generous all the time. It depended on the person.

Checking what Mo Xiaogu had, he said apologetically, "I'm sorry, Miss Xiaogu. There's only one fruit among all of those that I haven't eaten yet. The quality of that fruit is very far from the one that I just picked."

Mo Xiaogu looked at Zhang Ruochen with teary eyes, seeming very pitiful.

One must admit that she was indeed beautiful with delicate features. She seemed very weak. If another man saw her like this, his heart would probably melt.

But Zhang Ruochen was unmoved. "I have some other fruit and medicine that can improve your cultivation. I can trade them with you too."

Then he took out a dozen saint fruits and medicines. He explained the number of rules that they could help someone gain. Looking at Pushan and Chou Gu, he said, "Gentlemen, if you have fruit and medicine, you can also trade with me."

The two already had this idea, so they walked over and started trading with Zhang Ruochen.

Trading with Li Qinghai, Mo Xiaogu, Pushan and Chou Gu gave Zhang Ruochen three fruits and three medicines that he hadn't eaten before.

After refining them, he gained close to 3,000 rules in his body. His cultivation improved a bit more.

All cultivators who can come here must all be top figures. They'll definitely have treasures to improve cultivation.

This trade gave him another way to improve. Thus, he quietly walked toward the two silver giants that protected them.

After some discussion, Zhang Ruochen received five types of improvement medicine from them.

Next, he started talking to the group of formation masters too.

This time, he took out medicine and fruit that could improve Spiritual Power. The formation masters were instantly tempted

and they took out all their treasures.

The range of trade kept widening. More and more cultivators joined in.

Anyway, the strong figures of the Ancient Civilization Sect would take care of any monsters. The protected group of special cultivators were deep in the trade and it almost turned into a mini market.

Zhang Ruochen got 14 types of fruit and 23 types of medicine in total. It was like a great harvest and he was indescribably happy.

However, it would be even harder to find fruit and medicine that he hadn't eaten before now.

A foxy woman with a black veil bowed slightly. Smiling, she said, "Lord Lin, our highness would like to trade with you too."

Zhang Ruochen quickly put the fruit and medicine that he'd just gotten into his spatial ring before looking up at the beautiful woman.

Even though she wore a veil and covered her face under her eyes, her curvy body, full breasts and slender legs were still very tempting to one's soul.

She had charm. Even if she didn't use the spell, her every laugh and move was able to mesmerize a cultivator.

In the distance, Gu Feng's eyes shone. "Exquisite quality!" he said a bit drunkenly.

But Zhang Ruochen grew cautious. He'd indeed traded a lot of fruit and medicine earlier, but he'd also exposed his wealth.

It was possible that some greedy cultivators had their eyes on him now.

"I only want fruit and medicine that can improve cultivation," Zhang Ruochen said.

The woman with the black veil chuckled. "The highness has many fruits and medicines that can improve cultivation. It's definitely enough to satisfy your needs."

“There aren’t that many different types in the God-Naming Platform and I’ve already had most of them.”

“Have you eaten the ones from this fatal land?” the woman asked.

It would be strange if Zhang Ruochen wasn’t tempted. Every fruit and medicine picked here was extremely precious and valuable. They could improve cultivation greatly.

However, Zhang Ruochen didn’t believe that this woman’s so-called highness was willing to use those fruits for a trade.

“Who is your highness?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

The woman turned and extended a slender arm to point in some direction. There, a handsome man in black robes stood beside a nine-foot-tall ink jade kirin. He dipped his head and smiled at Zhang Ruochen.

A voice traveled into his ears. “Young Lord Lin, I, Shen, genuinely wish to trade with you. Shall we meet?”

“Wizard God Emperor.” Zhang Ruochen was shocked.

The Wizard God Civilization was an extremely ancient civilization. It had a long history and was the origin of the universe’s Wizard Way. The Wizard God Emperor was even more so a strong figure among the Ancient Civilization Sect.

Before, the Thousand Star Maiden had told Zhang Ruochen about some people that he definitely shouldn’t offend. The Wizard God Emperor was one of them.

Chapter 1680 - End Relationship

Chapter 1680: End Relationship

The Wizard God Emperor had an extraordinary temperament. He was like a black hole that could suck all light and heat and no one could see through him.

Whoosh!

With a wave of his sleeve, two pieces of saint fruit flew out, hovering before Zhang Ruochen.

“Lord Lin, these two fruits are from that palace. I’ve already checked. You can gain close to 10,000 Rules of Saintly Way after eating them.”

The Wizard God Emperor smiled. He didn’t ask Zhang Ruochen to trade with medicine or fruit.

He’d been watching Zhang Ruochen for a long while. He saw that Zhang Ruochen had traded many fruit and medicines that could improve cultivation. He probably didn’t have any other treasures to trade.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the fruit. He was naturally interested.

However, why would a strong figure like the Wizard God Emperor use two pieces of fruit to meet with a nameless figure like him?

Ten thousand Rules of Saintly Way was incredible for a lower Saint King. But to those who’d cultivated tens of thousands or millions of rules already, it wasn’t much.

What exactly did the Wizard God Emperor want?

He could see that Zhang Ruochen wanted the two fruit but stopped himself from taking them, so he said, “Lord Lin, if you are interested in the fruit, be my guest. No need to trade

with equal-value treasures. Just treat it as us becoming friends.”

Zhang Ruochen knew that if he took it, he would be at a disadvantage, so he quickly shook his head. “How can I do that? Since it’s a trade, it must be fair.”

Does this man still have other treasures for improving cultivation? The Wizard God Emperor was surprised.

Zhang Ruochen took out an Amazing Saint Fruit and handed it to him.

The alluring woman took it for the Wizard God Emperor. After taking the Amazing Saint Fruit, she checked it with Spiritual Power. Shock appeared in her almond eyes.

She spoke to the Wizard God Emperor with Spiritual Power.

The man’s eyes flashed. “Brother Lin, you are full of secrets and I am very impressed. But your fruit is more valuable than the two saint fruits. Won’t this trade be a loss for you?”

“We’re friends!”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and collected the two hovering pieces of fruit. He prepared to turn and leave.

“Lord Lin, wait.”

The Wizard God Emperor called to him and sent a Spiritual Power message. “Actually, we can do a bigger trade.”

“A bigger trade?” Zhang Ruochen paused.

The Wizard God Emperor indeed had another motive.

“The divine spring is very useful for me,” he said straightforwardly. “If you can help me, I’ll give you double what the Thousand Star Maiden promised you.”

“So it has to do with the divine spring.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t want to offend the Wizard God Emperor, so he smiled and said, “Didn’t you invite Monk Pushan? I don’t think I’m stronger than him in the Spatial Way. I probably can’t help much.”

“You are too humble. Your spatial grab is something that Pushan can’t do.”

He obviously couldn’t agree to the Wizard God Emperor’s proposition.

While Zhang Ruochen was thinking about how to reject him without offending him, Fairy Tianchu’s disciple, Li Miaohan, walked over.

Li Miaohan first bowed to the Wizard God Emperor before saying to Zhang Ruochen, “Lord Lin, my teacher also wishes to do business with you. She wishes to see you.”

Zhang Ruochen chuckled wryly inside. He knew that Fairy Tianchu must want him to help get the divine spring too.

He’d suddenly become a gem that everyone wanted.

This wasn’t a good thing. After all, he couldn’t anger any side.

Zhang Ruochen decided to use this chance to break free from the Wizard God Emperor first. “Your Majesty, I’ve always looked up to Fairy Tianchu. How about I go visit her before we discuss this matter?”

The Wizard God Emperor wasn’t angry at all. Smiling, he said, “Everyone loves a beauty. Go ahead! But don’t forget what I offered.”

Zhang Ruochen was about to visit Fairy Tianchu with Li Miaohan when a cold voice rang out. “Lin Yue, where are you going?”

The Thousand Star Maiden walked over. The thin blind man and big bearded man followed close behind.

Li Miaohan walked up and said, “Greetings, Your Highness. My teacher wishes to trade with Lord Lin for saint fruit and medicine, so she sent me to invite him.”

The Thousand Star Maiden stood primly with her perky breasts. She smiled. “Miaohan, why find him for fruit and medicine? Since Sister Luo Ji wants fruit and medicine for improving cultivation, she should trade with me. How can we let an outsider gain from this? Come, take me to see Brother Luo Ji.”

Then the Thousand Star Maiden glanced at the Wizard God Emperor. “Brother Shen, Lin Yue is mine. Don’t bully him!”

“How could I? I just traded for two pieces of saint fruit with Lord Lin,” the Wizard God Emperor said, expression unfaltering. “It’s pleasant business.”

The Thousand Star Maiden stopped smiling and said to Big Beard, “Bring Lin Yue back.”

The Thousand Star Maiden went to see Fairy Tianchu with Li Miaohan. Zhang Ruochen went back to the Starry Carriage with Big Beard.

This result made Zhang Ruochen feel much more relieved, but he also felt a bit of regret.

After all, Fairy Tianchu was a beauty who moved thousands of worlds. She was like a literal fairy. What kind of man wouldn’t want to see her up close?

After a while, the Thousand Star Maiden returned and stared deeply at Zhang Ruochen. “Get in.”

Under the envious eyes of countless people, the Thousand Star Maiden and Zhang Ruochen entered the carriage one after the other.

“He can be in the same car as the beautiful Thousand Star Maiden. What did Lin Yue do?” Some people grew furious as if their hearts had been eaten.

“He’s advanced in the Spatial Way. Didn’t you see how the Wizard God Emperor and Fairy Tianchu were fighting for him?”

“So jealous. If I knew this, I would’ve cultivated the Spatial Way too. My life would be complete if I get the attention of either the Thousand Star Maiden or Fairy Tianchu.”

...

Many cultivators were envious or jealous. Some even clenched their jaws. Their minds ran wild, thinking that something would definitely happen between Zhang Ruochen and Fairy Tianchu in the car.

Inside the Starry Carriage

The Thousand Star Maiden's expression was serious and her eyes were cold. "What did the Wizard God Emperor offer?"

"This is my business. Why should I tell you?" Zhang Ruochen was annoyed at how authoritative the Thousand Star Maiden was acting. It was as if he really was hers.

"You have to understand something," the Thousand Star Maiden said. "Only I know where Saint Monk Xumi died. They also don't know you're Zhang Ruochen or that you have Mysteries of Truth. Otherwise, they wouldn't be as friendly as they are being now. You have to remember that here, you can only listen to me."

"Are you threatening me?" Zhang Ruochen's eyes darkened.

His temperament changed instantly. Rather than being gentle, he was now like a beast with sharp fangs.

The Thousand Star Maiden was intimidated by his eyes and her heart trembled.

Very few creatures in the same realm had been able to meet her gaze ever since she was a child. Zhang Ruochen's eyes earlier froze her for a moment.

The proud Thousand Star Maiden couldn't help but grow annoyed. Sticking her chest up, she said arrogantly, "So what if I threaten you? If you dare to not listen to me, your identity will immediately be... What are you doing?"

"Killing you."

Zhang Ruochen used Spatial Twist, turning his hands into claws. Instantly, his fingers touched the Thousand Star Maiden's snow-white neck.

Zhang Ruochen could work with her, but he definitely wouldn't take her threats.

Rather than being restricted by her, he'd rather end the relationship completely.

Poof.

The Thousand Star Maiden's pretty eyes glowed with divine light. Next, fluorescent divine patterns appeared on the skin near her neck.

The divine patterns were like jade petals. They lay under her skin, blocking Zhang Ruochen's unexpected attack.

Next, with a boom, the Thousand Star Maiden's delicate frame exploded into specks of light that filled the entire carriage.

A vast voice rang out. "I knew you wouldn't submit. In this case, I'll have to defeat you with my own hands until you're willing to surrender at my feet."

Every word came from a different direction. It gave off an unpredictable feeling.

Zhang Ruochen immediately released his vast Spiritual Power and space domain. Unexpectedly, he couldn't detect the Thousand Star Maiden at all.

Could she have left the Starry Carriage again...?

Suddenly, he felt great danger. He quickly used the Spatial Move to disappear from the spot.

Whoosh!

Thousands upon thousands of starry specks formed a translucent sword where he'd just stood. It halved the shadow that he'd left behind.

One could imagine that if Zhang Ruochen had been slightly slower, he would've been seriously wounded.

The Thousand Star Maiden is still in the carriage, but why can't my space domain detect her?

Staring at the dense specks of light in the carriage, Zhang Ruochen's heart jumped. He thought of something.

Could she have transformed into specks of the origin?

If this was true, then it meant that the Thousand Star Maiden wasn't advanced enough in the Way of the Origin.

True specks of the origin were practically invisible. A Spiritual Power Supreme Saint wouldn't be able to detect it even with

their Divine Eyes.

Zhang Ruochen chuckled. “If you don’t appear, I’ll send all of these starry lights into the void.”

The Thousand Star Maiden didn’t answer. Instead, the specks of light started spinning quickly. Another attack was brewing.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes gleamed. He opened his fingers to rip open a spatial crack and swallow the starry light.

Something unexpected happened...

The space in the carriage was extremely sturdy. He used all his spatial power, but there was no reaction.

“Do you really think my Starry Carriage is just a transportation tool? In here, I’m an undefeatable queen.”

Boom!

A ball of light transformed into a slender hand and hit Zhang Ruochen’s chest. He activated the Hundred Saint Blood Armor and blocked with his arms, but he was still sent flying. He crashed into the carriage wall.

His arms bled inside the armor.

One could imagine just how strong the Thousand Star Maiden’s attack had been. Not even a sixth step Saint King could be that strong, let alone a third step Saint King.

“Amazing, amazing.”

The Amazing Little Taoist’s voice rang out.

“Amazing your ass.” Zhang Ruochen was in a bad mood.

“No, Zhang Ruochen.” The Amazing Little Taoist quickly changed his tone. “I meant to say, do you need my help to suppress that girl?”

“No.”

Zhang Ruochen released blue Divine Fire Jingmie and wrapped it around his body. The fire spread forward to refine all the starry light.

Poof.

Formation runes appeared on the walls and ground. A dozen formations started running at the same time.

One of them was on the ground and released a large amount of Qi of Extreme Pluto Ice. It actually countered the Divine Fire Jingmie and flooded toward Zhang Ruochen.

“Zhang Ruochen, did you forget that I’m a Formation Saint Master?”

The Thousand Star Maiden’s voice rang out again. Nine lightning bolt-like chains flew out of the ball of starry light. They wrapped toward Zhang Ruochen from different directions.

Inside the carriage, the two fought viciously. The Starry Carriage kept shaking more and more intensely.

Blindman and Big Beard wanted to rush in, but they seemed to get a message from the Thousand Star Maiden, so they stopped and continued to guard the carriage.

“No way! This is a fatal place and they’re in the mood to do this? This is too much. Disgusting,” someone who admired the Thousand Star Maiden said through clenched teeth.

“Car sex?”

“Did you have to say that out loud?”

“No way! There are so many people here. How can the Thousand Star Maiden be so open... But it’s possible. After all, one man and one woman are in a car together and the car’s shaking so hard. It’s difficult to explain!”

“Some noble women are willing to do anything for the divine spring.”

...

Many people were guessing with negative intentions. Thinking of the sexual scenes inside the carriage, they either grew excited or furious. That Lin Yue was too lucky and enviable.

Fairy Tianchu, the Wizard God Emperor and others also frowned, wondering what Lin Yue and the Thousand Star Maiden were doing.

First, they decided that the two weren't fighting.

If it was a fight, Big Beard and Blindman would've rushed in long ago. How could they stand so calmly outside?

Plus, Lin Yue was invited by the Thousand Star Maiden. It was impossible for them to fight.

Rustle, rustle.

The saint carriage shook even more powerfully without stopping.

This way, the Wizard God Emperor and other cultivators' expressions grew even stranger.

Chapter 1681 - Who Surrenders?

Chapter 1681: Who Surrenders?

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The nine chains were a very strong saint weapon, containing nine types of power. One was bone-piercing cold, one burned with flames, one radiated Death Qi... All the types of power intertwined to tie down Zhang Ruochen.

He held the Abyss Ancient Sword and activated all his Holy Qi to control a dozen other Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons. His surroundings were impenetrable.

Thud!

A class eight formation started turning on the wall. It formed a blood-red pillar of light that hit a Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Shield. The weapon shattered and the shards scattered in the carriage.

Zhang Ruochen had to attack with four Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons to block the formation's power.

But all four weapons had cracks.

He was shocked. The Thousand Star Maiden's formation was too terrifying. If he was hit, he'd be severely injured even if he didn't die.

One must admit that fighting with a Formation Saint Master was a scary thing.

Poof, poof.

Whoosh!

...

In the carriage, four more class eight formations started turning. It locked onto Zhang Ruochen and would attack destructively at any moment.

Actually, the Thousand Star Maiden had already calmed down. That attack had just been to intimidate Zhang Ruochen. She didn't really want to activate all class eight formations to kill him.

There were two main reasons why she'd lost her temper earlier.

First, she was worried that Zhang Ruochen was bought over by the Wizard God Emperor and Fairy Tianchu.

Second, Zhang Ruochen was above her on the Saints Merits Rank and took some of the glory that should've belonged to her. In addition, when Zhang Ruochen had commented on her, he'd actually said that she had a flaw in her mindset and couldn't become someone powerful. Naturally, she couldn't accept this and thought that Zhang Ruochen was too arrogant and full of himself, so she always wanted to compete with him deep down.

The knot within her could only be undone after defeating Zhang Ruochen personally.

Starry light was like fireflies in the night.

The Thousand Star Maiden's voice rang out in the starry light, floating whimsically. "Zhang Ruochen, give up. You're no match for me. If I activate four class eight formations, you'll definitely be dead."

"Really? I don't believe that."

Zhang Ruochen took out the Time and Space Secret Guide and held it in his hands.

"Don't try to challenge me," the Thousand Star Maiden said. "I have many hidden cards to use in the Starry Saint Carriage. I can defeat you with just the power of the formation."

"If you want to force me to surrender with just these formations," Zhang Ruochen said, "aren't you thinking too

lowly of me?”

The specks of light converged, forming the Thousand Star Maiden’s snow-white figure. Her true figure was revealed.

“Here, your spatial power is cut in half. I have godly patterns for protection and many defensive runes. Your Sword Way, Palm Way, and Fist Way are all useless against me. Are you going to use the power of time against me? Time is even more abstruse than space. With your realm, how much can you know?”

Zhang Ruochen smirked without replying.

A smile appeared on the Thousand Star Maiden’s beautiful face. She changed the subject, saying, “Okay, I know the Time and Space Descendant has an ego. How about this? I don’t need you to submit to me. You just need to surrender.”

“Why should I surrender?” Zhang Ruochen asked. “You didn’t defeat me.”

The Thousand Star Maiden’s brows furrowed. She felt like she’d already made a great compromise and gave the other a way to back down, but he didn’t take it.

“Do we have to get to the point of life or death? To be honest, I really don’t want to kill you right now.”

“We could’ve cooperated nicely,” Zhang Ruochen said. “I didn’t agree with what the Wizard God Emperor offered. It’s your desire to control and win being too strong that led to this result. I am Zhang Ruochen, Time and Space Controller. I’m not like other cultivators. I will not submit to any being, not even a god.”

“Seems like I can only get rid of your arrogance by defeating you completely.”

The Thousand Star Maiden stood in place and released her Spiritual Power. Instantly, the four class eight formations started spinning, releasing stronger and stronger energy waves.

The area inside the carriage was even more frightening than the fatal environment.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen opened the Time and Space Secret Guide. Silver light shot out immediately.

The space inside the carriage was divided into a multi-dimensional space. Layers of silver space walls appeared. They were like book pages but also curtains of light.

Kaboom!

The destructive attack from the four class eight formations hit the silver light, shaking the entire Starry Saint Carriage violently.

Thankfully, the carriage was an Eight Yao Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon and had the Thousand Star Maiden's defensive runes. Otherwise, it would definitely be turned to dust.

The silver light curtain kept breaking and reforming.

There was a stalemate for ten breaths. Finally, the formation attack disappeared.

That was because the Thousand Star Maiden was swept into the multi-dimensional space.

Her spiritual connection with the four formations was cut off by the spatial walls. The formation naturally stopped turning as well.

Earlier, Zhang Ruochen had been controlling the Time and Space Secret Guide with all his might. He'd kept pouring in Holy Qi and couldn't take a breather until now.

This woman is so powerful. She forced me to use my last trump card and even then, I almost failed.

The Thousand Star Maiden was only a third step Saint King, but fighting her was even more headache-inducing than fighting sixth step Saint Kings like Qiong Lin and Feng Jian.

Plus, Qiong Lin and Feng Jian weren't typical sixth step Saint Kings either. They were world leaders.

The Thousand Star Maiden was even more shocked. Staring at Zhang Ruochen's Time and Space Secret Guide, she asked, "Is that a treasure?"

Zhang Ruochen obviously wouldn't tell her. "Admit defeat now! Actually, we can still sit down and have a chat. You should know that even though you have my secret, I also have yours. If I reveal that you have Mysteries of Truth, you'll probably get killed even though you're the maiden of the Thousand Star Civilization."

"Are you threatening me?" she asked coldly.

"You threatened me first," Zhang Ruochen corrected.

"You think a mere book can restrict me? You're thinking too lowly of me."

She activated the power of the origin to her fingertips.

She pointed at the silver light curtain with a slender finger and uttered with red lips, "Return to the origin."

Boom!

The silver light curtain exploded. It transformed into microscopic specks and practically vanished.

Zhang Ruochen flipped through the pages quickly. There'd only been one layer of light before the Thousand Star Maiden. Now, there were five.

The maiden looked at the sudden new light curtains and frowned slightly. She activated the power of the origin to her fingers again.

This time, Zhang Ruochen attacked even more quickly. He drew a time print and flicked it out.

The Thousand Star maiden's eyes narrowed. She quickly used a physical technique to dodge the time print.

"You can see it?" Zhang Ruochen asked, surprised.

"I have the Origin Divine Eyes and can see everything in the world. Even time can't fool my eyes." The Thousand Star Maiden's red lips curled up, a bit proud. She continued to gather the power of the origin.

Zhang Ruochen could restrict opponents each time with his time prints because even top figures like Qiong Lin couldn't see them. It was hard for them to sense the power of time.

This was the basis of his undefeatability! But the world produced a strange creature like the Thousand Star maiden. She had the Origin Divine Eyes and could see time. In some aspects, she could restrict Zhang Ruochen.

More accurately, the nine Ancient Ways could counter and complement each other in some ways.

Boom, boom.

The Thousand Star maiden shattered two more layers of light, but there was no joy on her face. Instead, she grew more serious.

She'd discovered with a shock that the silver light that she'd sent back to the origin had been reformed.

This had never happened before.

Zhang Ruochen finally took a deep breath and closed the Time and Space Secret Guide.

In the carriage, all the silver light and the Thousand Star Maiden disappeared together. Zhang Ruochen collected them into his silver book.

He didn't dare to do this before because he worried that the Thousand Star Maiden's origin power would destroy the Time and Space Secret Guide. But reality proved that with her current attainments in the Origin Way, she couldn't turn the guide back into the origin yet.

When he opened the book again, one of the pages had a picture of a beautiful woman.

This beauty seemed to have been painted by the top artist of the world. She looked realistic and filled with spirit. Even Art Saint Chu Siyuan would be impressed if he saw this.

"Zhang Ruochen, I still have many trump cards that I haven't used," the beauty in the painting said. She sounded very unsatisfied. "Let me out if you dare. I can turn you into ashes with just one hit."

Zhang Ruochen stroked the beauty's face with a finger and smiled warmly. "Use whatever trump cards you have. If you can escape from this book, I'll admit defeat immediately."

He was sure that, as soon as she was released, she would immediately send a message to Blindman and Big Beard.

Their cultivations were immeasurable and Zhang Ruochen wasn't confident in defeating them.

His finger seemed to really be touching the Thousand Star Maiden's face. The beauty in the book trembled. Suddenly, the silver page shook and a crack appeared.

Zhang Ruochen was stunned.

What terrifying power did the Thousand Star Maiden use to crack a page in the Time and Space Secret Guide?

No.

It wasn't a crack. It was a mark.

That mark quickly disappeared too.

Zhang Ruochen calmed down and let out a long breath. It was a false alarm. If she could even break through the secret guide that Saint Monk Xumi had made, then the Thousand Star Maiden would probably be the ruler of the entire Heaven World.

"How is this possible?" The beauty in the painting let out a shocked cry. "Not even the power undefeatable under the Supreme Saint Realm can break your book."

She had power that was undefeatable under the Supreme Saint Realm?

Zhang Ruochen was seriously shocked. This maiden in the same realm as him gave him too many surprises.

Before, Zhang Ruochen could defeat anyone in the same realm easily.

But today, if he didn't have the Time and Space Secret Guide, he probably would've taken a big blow before the Thousand Star Maiden.

"Zhang Ruochen, I surrender." Her voice rang out.

Zhang Ruochen was surprised. How could the proud Thousand Star Maiden surrender so quickly?

Chapter 1682 - Marriage Proposal

Chapter 1682: Marriage Proposal

“Surrendering is a wise choice.”

Zhang Ruochen was very careful, so he continued, “But how do I know that you won’t use a hidden card after I release you, or have Blindman and Big Beard come deal with me?”

The Thousand Star Maiden lowered herself. Her voice wasn’t as harsh as before. “First, you know the secret of me having Mysteries of Truth. If you spread the news, it won’t kill me, but it’ll cause me trouble. I have to be careful when dealing with you.

“Second, I still want to work with you to get the divine spring. I won’t benefit from harming you.

“We were too impulsive just then. It’s best if we calm down and work together.”

The Thousand Star Maiden had never lost in her life. She didn’t believe that anyone in the same generation was qualified to be her match, but today, she failed. She was actually captured by Zhang Ruochen.

Actually, she felt extremely wronged and hated Zhang Ruochen to death.

She’d used her strongest trump card earlier but couldn’t break through the Time and Space Secret Guide. This made her feel horrible. What if Zhang Ruochen really didn’t care about anything, deciding to go all out and taking this chance to kill her and take her Mysteries of Truth?

Naturally, she had to find a chance to steady Zhang Ruochen.

Actually, Zhang Ruochen never thought about killing the Thousand Star Maiden. Even if he wanted to, he wouldn’t do it so obviously. If she’d died in the Starry Carriage, the Truth

Godly Palace would attack Zhang Ruochen and he wouldn't be able to leave the God-Naming Platform.

He'd attacked earlier just to warn the Thousand Star Maiden against being so offensive. If she forced him to an edge, he could do anything and he was able to kill her.

"I still don't trust you."

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and studied the Thousand Star Maiden, continuing, "Didn't you once say that I have a chance to be the prince of the Thousand Star Maiden? How about we confirm that so I can have some more protection?"

"What prince? Zhang Ruochen...what do you want?"

The Thousand Star Maiden's voice had a fearful undertone.

"With your personality, you would definitely hate me after losing to me and getting captured," Zhang Ruochen said. "If our relationship doesn't improve, you may kill or suppress me at any time after I free you. I would have to be careful every second of the day. That's too tiring and reactive."

The Thousand Star Maiden was unsettled. "If you dare to do anything, I will die with you."

"You are smart and value your own life. I'm sure you won't do that."

Zhang Ruochen smiled casually and reached out to touch the image of beauty with a hand. Spatial power poured out and his finger sank into the page.

Rip!

He tore off a part of the Thousand Star Maiden's purple dress. It fell into his hand.

"Zhang Ruochen, you pervert... This is too much... Watch, I'm going to make you die with me..." The Thousand Star Maiden was furious. If she wasn't suppressed by the Time and Space Secret Guide, she would kill Zhang Ruochen even if it meant she had to deactivate her saint source.

What was strange was that Zhang Ruochen didn't do anything after tearing out a piece of her dress.

A moment later, Zhang Ruochen opened the Time and Space Secret Guide and released her.

The Thousand Star Maiden was still wrapped in layers of silver light. She wasn't fully free.

Zhang Ruochen tossed the dress over. "I already wrote the title. Your turn to write the main body."

"Write what?"

The Thousand Star Maiden knew that Zhang Ruochen could trap her inside the book at any time, so she didn't attack brashly. She picked up the dress from the ground. With round almond eyes, she gasped. "Marriage proposal? Whose?"

"Yours and mine, of course." Zhang Ruochen spoke seriously and didn't seem to be joking.

"You mean, about you becoming the prince?" the Thousand Star Maiden asked.

"What else could it be? Do you think that I'm interested in your body?" Zhang Ruochen asked in shock.

The Thousand Star Maiden's hands trembled, thinking that Zhang Ruochen's words were too offensive. Judging by his tone, did he look down on her?

After all, her beauty and talent weren't any worse than the nine on the Nine Angels Beauty Scroll. She was just much younger than them, so she wasn't included on the scroll.

Poof!

Holy Qi poured out of her pale fingers, crumbling her dress. "There are so many elites in the worlds who pursue me," she said in a low voice. "Do you qualify to force me to write a marriage proposal?"

The Thousand Star Maiden's body shone with brilliant light. A white scroll appeared between her fingers suddenly.

She was about to activate it and strike...

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen closed the Time and Space Secret Guide, trapping her again.

Rip!

He dug his fingers into the pages and ripped off a part of her dress. He also took away the scroll in her hands.

“Pervert...bastard...”

The Thousand Star Maiden was frustrated and hurt. She wanted to cry but couldn't.

That white jade was made out of saint jade and was thin as paper. It felt cool in his hands.

There were many complicated patterns drawn with divine blood on them. The aura that they emanated was very different from the Thousand Star Maiden's aura. It was clear that it was made by an even more advanced Rune Way Saint Master.

The Thousand Star Maiden used it as her hidden card, so it meant that the rune scroll was extremely powerful.

Zhang Ruochen didn't study it now. He put it away and used his own blood to write “Marriage proposal” on the dress.

He released the Thousand Star Maiden again.

Almost half of the Thousand Star Maiden's dress was torn off now. Her pretty, wax-like calves were revealed. Like jade and ice, she was mesmerizing. However, her pretty face was like frost. She stared at Zhang Ruochen and revealed her white teeth as if wanting to bite him.

Zhang Ruochen tossed the fabric toward her again. “Write down what I say. Don't destroy your dress anymore, or else I'll have to tear more off. If I keep tearing... Your private parts will be exposed!”

“You...”

She picked up the fabric and repressed the urge to rip it apart. “Zhang Ruochen, do you really think a marriage proposal can restrain me?”

“It's a marriage proposal and also a vow. I want you to include in it that you swear on a god's reputation to never betray or

hurt your husband, Zhang Ruochen.”

Pausing, he continued, “I remember the Thousand Star Civilization has a god called Hundred Battle Star God. Use your blood as ink, your mind as pen, the Hundred Battle Star God’s reputation as your vow, and write this letter.

“First sentence: Zhang Ruochen, Time and Space Descendant, is handsome, talented, and upright. He is the man I look up to genuinely. Today, I, Yu Chenjing of the Thousand Star Civilization, swear on the Hundred Battle Star God’s name, that I voluntarily wish to marry Zhang Ruochen, Time and Space Descendant.”

The Thousand Star Maiden clenched her fists and ground her teeth. “Have you no shame?”

Zhang Ruochen frowned. “Do you really think I want to marry you?” he asked seriously. “I just want this marriage proposal to protect myself. I won’t publicize it if you don’t hurt me. When I become a Supreme Saint, I’ll return it naturally.

“Plus, I’m already treating you graciously. I didn’t have any offensive requirements, like saying you must listen to my orders, enslaving you, et cetera.”

Zhang Ruochen had thought about this. If he bore down on her too much, her proud personality definitely wouldn’t allow her to follow his orders. She might even try to die with him.

Anyway, enough was enough.

“Okay, I’ll write.”

The Thousand Star Maiden controlled herself and followed Zhang Ruochen’s orders while feeling furious. She took one hour to write down all the words of this marriage proposal.

Zhang Ruochen took the fabric and checked the writing twice. He nodded in satisfaction. “This was written with your own blood. It contains your spiritual intent and you swore on a god’s name. Quite sincere.”

Then he used his own blood to write on the bottom, I am willing.

Seeing these three words, the Thousand Star Maiden shuddered. She was so angry that her full chest heaved up and down.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at her. “If you try to hurt me again, you better think carefully about the effect if this marriage proposal is exposed. If you kill me, it’s not as bad, since you’ll just go from a pure maiden to a dowager. But if you failed to kill me, I have hundreds of ways to ruin your name. It must affect you greatly, right?”

“Don’t worry, I won’t keep the proposal with me. I’ll have a trustworthy person safekeep it.

“Actually, I’m curious. This counts as a vow. If you go against your vow, will you be punished by the god?”

“Zhang Ruochen,” the Thousand Star Maiden said. “If you dare to publicize this, not only will I kill you, I’ll also destroy your entire clan.”

She cared heavily about the marriage proposal, because she was the future leader of the Thousand Star Civilization and would rule over the millions of beings. She couldn’t be tainted at all.

Zhang Ruochen stared at her for a long while before murmuring, “Since we have a marriage proposal, we also need a precious betrothal item. Your belt seems like a nice treasure. How about you give it to me?”

“Don’t even think about it,” the Thousand Star Maiden rejected immediately.

First, that belt was a defensive divine relic. Once Holy Qi was added in, it could form a shield of light that carried faint divine power. It was worth more than 100 million saint stones and even Supreme Saints were tempted.

Second, if the Thousand Star Maiden’s belt was in Zhang Ruochen’s hands, then she wouldn’t be able to explain clearly if Zhang Ruochen wanted to use the belt as proof.

“Then I’ll take it with my own hands,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“If you dare do something so offensive, I really will make you die with me.” The girl grew nervous and kept retreating.

Zhang Ruochen trapped her inside the book again and the Thousand Star Maiden’s screams and curses sounded. A beat later, her voice traveled out of the book. “I’ll give it to you... I’ll take it off... Get your dirty hands away...”

A moment later, the Thousand Star Maiden was inside the carriage again. She hugged her chest and pulled her dress tightly around her. She bit her lip as if she’d been greatly wronged.

There was none of the arrogance from before.

Zhang Ruochen played with the belt with a faint fragrance. “I know you’re furious and you’re suppressing your anger, but so what? You don’t dare to make us die together because you treasure your life. You think you’re smart. If you bear it now, you’ll definitely be able to take revenge in the future. This is why you were humiliated and threatened but chose to submit. If I say now that you have a flaw in your mindset and won’t be able to face a true catastrophe head-on and fight even in the face of death, do you admit it?”

Chapter 1683 - Spatial Barrier

Chapter 1683: Spatial Barrier

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen walked out of the Starry Saint Carriage, leaving the Thousand Star Maiden there alone.

Miraculously, she didn't attack after Zhang Ruochen released her from the Time and Space Secret Guide. Instead, she was a bit dazed and dispirited and fell to the ground.

Zhang Ruochen's words had hurt her too much. It was more than the humiliation she'd felt earlier.

"You don't dare to make us die together because you treasure your life. You think you're smart. If you bear it now, you'll definitely be able to take revenge in the future."

...

"If I say now that you have a flaw in your mindset and won't be able to face a true catastrophe head-on and fight even in the face of death, do you admit it?"

...

"Do you admit it?"

...

"Do you admit it?"

...

The Thousand Star Maiden felt millions of voices ringing in her mind. They interrogated her, intimidating her saint soul, making it impossible for her to stand up. Her delicate frame trembled.

Since birth, she'd been the best among her age. Everyone said that she was unparalleled and would definitely become a god

in the future.

But all of this was overturned. It was as if she'd been in a beautiful dream and was slapped back into reality.

1

This hit made her feel like she'd fallen from the clouds into the deep abyss.

As soon as Zhang Ruochen walked out of the Starry Saint Carriage, countless eyes fell upon him.

Some of those eyes carried anger. Some had murderous intent.

This frightened Zhang Ruochen. He thought that the Thousand Star Maiden had already exposed his true identity with telepathic messages.

Does she really have no fear?

Then he clutched the Time and Space Secret Guide. He prepared to use its power for a Spatial Move and escape this place as quickly as possible.

The alluring woman beside the Wizard God Emperor walked over with a strange smile in her eyes. She bowed slightly, saying, "Lord Lin, you finally came out of the car. Everyone is waiting for you up front. Please follow me."

Guarded, Zhang Ruochen asked, "Where to?"

"We already came to the third level of spatial barriers in the folded space, but Master Pushan and Chou Gu spent one hour without being able to break past it. Thus, everyone is waiting for you. We hope you have a way to break the barrier."

Zhang Ruochen surveyed his surroundings. He realized that this wasn't the place where he'd gotten into the carriage.

Around two hundred feet before him was a hazy mass. There was a thick turbid space blocking them.

He could vaguely see a vaster world behind the wall of turbid space. Ancient divine mountains loomed there like it was a prehistoric wilderness.

It seemed that the carriage had been moving forward while he and the Thousand Star Maiden had been fighting.

Looking around, Zhang Ruochen said, "I'm very curious. How come everyone seems to hate me now?"

The alluring woman covered her mouth and giggled. "Maybe they're jealous. Lord Lin, ignore them. You are with the Thousand Star Maiden. They can't do anything to you."

"Jealous?"

Zhang Ruochen still couldn't understand.

As Saint Kings, they were a bit too jealous.

So, Fairy Tianchu wanted to see him. So, he boarded the Thousand Star Maiden's saint carriage. These cultivators' hearts were too fragile.

"There indeed are many jealous gazes. Their eyes are even bloodshot," Zhang Ruochen concluded after looking closely. He instantly felt relieved.

As long as his identity wasn't exposed, he wasn't afraid, no matter how jealous those cultivators were.

He followed the alluring woman. He heard many cultivators grinding their teeth and others murmuring softly.

"Do you see? That bastard even changed his clothes. Now, do you believe me?"

"I smelled a bit of fragrance that belongs to the Maiden on him."

"Ah! My heaven, my Maiden is such a pure fairy... How... I can't accept this truth..."

...

Zhang Ruochen knitted his brows even tighter.

He'd changed his clothes because his original robe was torn apart and bloodied in the fight with the Thousand Star Maiden.

What were they thinking?

He heard some more gossip, including the term "car sex" and it quickly dawned on him. He finally understood and couldn't

help but grow shocked.

No way! These people are too creative.

No wonder there were so many cultivators with jealous bloodshot eyes. If Zhang Ruochen was the audience and the stars of the “car sex” were the Thousand Star Maiden and another man, he would probably be envious and jealous too.

Plus, there were many people who looked up to the Thousand Star Maiden here or wanted to pursue her. To them, this “car sex” was too cruel! During this hour, they must’ve been heartbroken and wanted to butcher Zhang Ruochen.

He didn’t mind, but he wondered what the Thousand Star Maiden would think after learning about this.

After Zhang Ruochen met with the leaders of the Ancient Civilization Sect, they also had strange expressions.

Before, they didn’t believe that the Thousand Star Maiden would so unabashedly have car sex with Lin Yue, but after seeing that he’d changed clothes and looked so spirited, even they grew suspicious.

The Great Senior laughed loudly and said ambiguously, “Lin Yue, how is the Thousand Star Maiden?”

Since everyone misunderstood, Zhang Ruochen didn’t mind worsening the misunderstanding.

Because this misunderstanding was more beneficial to him than harmful.

Zhang Ruochen purposely put up an awkward expression. “Ha, the Thousand Star Maiden has very advanced cultivation... She’s fine... Yes, let her rest a bit. She’ll come down soon.”

The high and mighty leaders all looked at Zhang Ruochen with changed eyes.

Even the strict and domineering Great Senior grew friendlier to him too.

Before, he was only an invited spatial cultivator. Now, he was the Thousand Star Maiden’s man. He had half a foot in the

core level of the sect.

These two were different concepts.

“Brother Lin, you could probably see that this dangerous land is in a folded space,” the Wizard God Emperor said. “We can only open the hidden space by breaking the spatial barrier.

“Two levels of the spatial barrier have already been broken. The space that opened up is the palace cluster that we’ve just passed.

“Each level is sturdier than the last. The first level needed the power of a fourth step Saint King to break through it. The second level needed a ninth step Saint King.

“We tried all sorts of techniques for the third level and even used a broken Absolute Saint weapon, activating a beam of its power, but we still failed. We believe that only a Supreme Saint can break it open.

“But spatial cultivators have special techniques. Perhaps you can use some spatial power to break through the third spatial wall.”

Now, all their hope was on the six spatial cultivators.

If even they couldn’t do it, then they could only retreat immediately. For Fairy Tianchu and the Wizard God Emperor, who sorely needed the Holy Spring, this was the result that they truly didn’t want to see.

Zhang Ruochen walked toward the spatial barrier.

Before him, Gu Feng, Pushan, Li Qinghai, Chou Gu and Mo Xiaogu all used their own techniques. Their spatial attacks fell upon the thick spatial barrier with loud booms.

Li Qinghai held a crescent spatial blade. Gathering power, he hacked down. A spatial crack appeared and fell upon the spatial wall.

However, the spatial barrier was extremely thick. Before the crack could penetrate it fully, the barrier’s power already closed the gap.

Pushan used a palm-sized gold cymbal.

Whoosh!

The cymbal flew out and kept spinning until it became even bigger than a millstone. Like a golden flying disc, it slammed into the spatial barrier, but it only produced ripples.

Chou Gu and Mo Xiaogu's attacks produced even smaller commotions than Li Qinghai and Pushan.

The most powerful one was Gu Feng. He had a very powerful spatial brand on his palm. After activating it with all his might, he pushed forward. He actually shook all land within 100 feet of the spatial barrier and cracking sounds were produced.

Now, everyone felt that Lin Yue's knowledge of space was above him, so Gu Feng naturally wanted to do everything he could to prove his worth.

Unfortunately, the third barrier level wasn't only sturdy. It also had strong self-recovery abilities. Gu Feng's palm explosion could only hurt the barrier slightly.

By the time he gathered strength for a second attack, the damages were already healed.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen appear, Li Qinghai put away his spatial blade and walked over with a forehead covered in sweat. "This spatial barrier is too strong," he said, panting for breath. "The five of us tried our hardest without succeeding. Brother Lin, do you have a solution?"

Gu Feng, Chou Gu, Mo Xiaogu, and Pushan also retreated. They'd used up all their Holy Qi and couldn't support themselves anymore.

Gu Feng scoffed. "With how sturdy this spatial barrier is, how can he do it? Probably even Gong Ziyan will fail after trying. Only a Supreme Saint with an Absolute Saint weapon might be able to forcefully break through this barrier."

Zhang Ruochen ignored Gu Feng. He strolled toward the spatial barrier and reached forward to press down. It felt like pressing into thick cotton.

The further he pressed, the stronger the resistance. Finally, a ricochet power sent Zhang Ruochen flying back like a leaf.

“Ha,” Gu Feng snorted.

In the distance, the leaders of the Ancient Civilization Sect all frowned, growing extremely disappointed. Was it impossible to break through the third level? Did they have to retreat?

Zhang Ruochen landed steadily on the ground. He touched his chin and murmured, “I can’t break through this barrier, but it shouldn’t be hard to create a path above it.”

Chapter 1684 - Spatial Division Rune

Chapter 1684: Spatial Division Rune

Gu Feng believed that other than Space Controller Gong Ziyang, no one below the Supreme Saint Realm was more skilled than him in the Spatial Way. He obviously didn't think that Zhang Ruochen had any special tactics. "It's impossible to open a path on the spatial wall," he said coldly. "Only the elder of the Space Godly Palace can do it."

Li Qinghai and the others found it impossible too, but they didn't dare to make such a comment.

After all, Lin Yue was indeed more skilled than them.

The Wizard God Emperor walked forward like a dragon or tiger. "Brother Lin, ignore Gu Feng and try your best. Let us know if you need anything."

"It is very dangerous to open a path on the spatial wall," Zhang Ruochen said carefully. "If anything happens, I hope someone can pull me out of the fatal land."

The Wizard God Emperor was about to speak...

Fairy Tianchu's crisp voice floated out first. "Luo Ji is willing to help you."

Wearing an unsullied white robe and a veil, Fairy Tianchu walked forward with lotus-like steps. She carried a light fragrance. Arriving on the other side of Zhang Ruochen, her temperament was noble and ethereal. She seemed otherworldly.

Seeing such a beautiful person, one would finally understand what "lovely enough to cause a city to fall" or "only envious of the lovebirds and not the gods" meant.

If one could be together with Fairy Tianchu, even abandoning the Holy Way was okay.

Poof!

The ring on Fairy Tianchu's finger transformed into a thin white chain that wrapped around Zhang Ruochen's waist.

Some incredibly thin strands of light snaked out of the chain and wrapped around most of Zhang Ruochen's body.

"Let me try first."

Zhang Ruochen took out a rune pen and drew spatial runes on the ground.

As the patterns showed, a hole actually appeared on the spatial wall. It kept digging deeper.

Zhang Ruochen walked into the hole and continued drawing spatial runes.

After a while, the path on the spatial wall was actually a dozen meters deep.

All the cultivators there were amazed. They'd never seen such powerful spatial tactics before.

Mo Xiaogu's pretty eyes widened further and further. "It's the Spatial Division Rune," she cried. "Lord Lin actually knows such advanced and terrifying runes."

"No way! In legends, the Spatial Division Rune is a terrible rune that can rip apart an entire world. It's forbidden in the Space Godly Palace. Even elders can't cultivate it." Li Qinghai's throat was dry.

Gu Feng's eyes had an expression of disbelief. How old was Lin Yue? How could he be so powerful?

All the princes, maidens, deities, and fairies there were ecstatic. They saw hope in Lin Yue.

Suddenly, an accident happened.

The path under Zhang Ruochen's feet collapsed into countless spatial cracks. The walls on either side started pressing in.

Fairy Tianchu's finger moved and pulled Zhang Ruochen out with the white chain.

Thud!

The open path disappeared and the spatial crack went back to how it was.

“Brother Lin, what happened?” the Wizard God Emperor asked immediately.

“It’s my first time using the Spatial Division Rune and I’m not familiar enough with it. I messed up a small detail.”

Zhang Ruochen still felt fearful. Thankfully, Fairy Tianchu had been quick and saved him immediately. Otherwise, if he fell into the spatial wall, he would probably die even if he had the Time and Space Secret Guide.

“I’ll try two more times,” Zhang Ruochen said. “I should be able to succeed.”

The Wizard God Emperor was instantly relieved. Smiling, he said, “Brother Lin, no need to hurry. Take your time and be careful.”

“Safety first,” Fairy Tianchu also said.

Now, Zhang Ruochen had become their only hope. They obviously cared about Zhang Ruochen’s safety and didn’t want anything to happen.

He was about to start again when a voice rang out. “Before Lin Yue opens the road, I believe there are some things we should discuss.”

The Thousand Star Maiden walked out of the Starry Carriage. She seemed to have recovered. She walked toward the spatial wall.

“Little Jing, what do you want to discuss?” Fairy Tianchu asked.

“Lin Yue is the spatial cultivator I invited at a great cost,” the Thousand Star Maiden said. “If he successfully opens a path on the spatial wall and leads everyone deeper into the spatial zone, then I will take 30% of the divine spring that we find.”

“I thought you weren’t interested in the divine spring?” the Wizard God Emperor asked.

“Things change,” the Thousand Star Maiden said. “Since there’s a chance to get the divine spring, I obviously have to share the rewards.”

Suddenly, she frowned, because she discovered that many cultivators were looking at her with odd gazes.

She didn’t care that many men stared at her, because she was used to it. A talented woman like her stood out wherever she was, attracting much attention.

But even Fairy Tianchu was looking at her with a different gaze. This was very strange!

The Thousand Star Maiden felt awkward due to these strange gazes. She moved the power of the origin to her ears and instantly heard what the people were saying telepathically.

“Do you see? The Thousand Star Maiden also changed her dress. Can you say nothing happened between her and Lin Yue in the Starry Carriage?”

“Didn’t she just say that she invited Lin Yue with a great cost? Could the cost be... Oh my, the Thousand Star Maiden is the maiden of an ancient civilization. How can she do this? If news spreads, can she still keep her title? I heard that there are many talented figures in the Thousand Star Civilization who want the position of maiden.”

“It might not be some dirty exchange. It could be that Lin Yue and the Thousand Star Maiden love each other and they’re a couple.”

“Lin Yue is very advanced in the Spatial Way, so he qualifies for the Thousand Star Maiden.”

...

Hearing these messages, the Thousand Star Maiden almost spat out blood.

Hearing them say that she and Lin Yue had had car sex for an hour made her go especially crazy. She wanted to grab those people and beat them until even their mothers couldn’t recognize them.

But she stopped herself.

She had to keep calm. The more furious she was, the more they would think that she and Zhang Ruochen had some dirty exchange.

Explaining was useless now. Unless she revealed Zhang Ruochen's true identity, any explanation would make things worse. But if she revealed Zhang Ruochen's true identity, then the marriage proposal would be exposed too, as well as her secret of having Mysteries of Truth.

The Thousand Star Maiden never thought that she would be in such a difficult state one day. She really wanted to cry.

Just then, the Great Senior came out. "Lin Yue was indeed invited by Little Jing. She must've paid Lin Yue a great sum, so it's not unreasonable for her to take 30% of the divine spring."

Since the Great Senior had spoken, the others naturally had no objections.

The Thousand Star Maiden ground her teeth. Forcing her tone to be calm, she said to Fairy Tianchu, "Sister, you can go down. Let me help him."

"Okay!"

Fairy Tianchu retrieved the white chain wrapped around Zhang Ruochen and retreated to a distance.

"I feel like I worked...quite well...with the fairy..."

Zhang Ruochen knew that the Thousand Star Maiden didn't have good intentions, so he wanted to keep Fairy Tianchu. But the Thousand Star Maiden already sent out nine chains. They wrapped around him, each one releasing different power.

"Ah-Yue, go carve the runes. I'll pull you back at the most dangerous moment." The Thousand Star Maiden's eyes were frigid.

Naturally, Zhang Ruochen didn't believe her. If there really was danger, it would be even stranger if the Thousand Star Maiden saved him. She might take this chance to kill him.

"Yu Chenjing," Zhang Ruochen said telepathically. "If you really don't save me, you won't get the divine spring or my

Mysteries of Truth.”

The Thousand Star maiden’s fingers trembled in anger. “Zhang Ruochen, you ruined me. Do you know how they’re talking about us?”

“You know already? It’s just car sex.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled, not caring. After a pause, he said, “This is your fault, not mine.”

“If I lose my reputation, you will lose your life.”

This time, Zhang Ruochen had to try his best to stabilize her. “Joy and tragedy come hand in hand. This might not be a bad thing for you.”

“This can be a good thing?”

“This can challenge your mindset,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“People only grow if they can withstand troubles and challenges. Look at those true top figures. Do they care how people think about them? It’s because their hearts are steady and unable to be affected by others. Who cares what others think?”

“You never ran into any trouble in your life. You were never looked down on, humiliated, insulted, or lied too. You stand too high and are unsullied like a fairy. That’s why your mindset is flawed.

“If you get past this, your mindset will definitely grow. It’ll be much easier to reach the Supreme Saint Realm.”

Hearing this, the Thousand Star Maiden’s mood somehow improved. However, she soon said coldly, “No matter what you say, it doesn’t change the fact that you ruined me. Draw your runes. If you mess up again, I definitely won’t save you.”

Carving the Spatial Division Rune was very risky and it was difficult to not make mistakes. Zhang Ruochen didn’t want the divine spring anymore. He really wanted to escape.

But the nine chains trapped him there. He couldn’t escape.

He could only pull his nerves taut and focus to the extreme. He carved carefully, afraid of making any mistakes.

As time passed, the path opened up by the Spatial Division Rune grew longer and longer.

Behind him, the Thousand Star Maiden could see sweat roll down Zhang Ruochen's neck. A smile finally appeared on her face. Being controlled by Zhang Ruochen in the Time and Space Secret Guide really depressed her.

Now, she wanted to make Zhang Ruochen experience having someone else control his life or death.

Perhaps because Zhang Ruochen was extremely careful, he didn't make any mistakes this time. He successfully penetrated the spatial wall, opening up a path that was more than 60 meters long.

The Thousand Star Maiden frowned, feeling a bit disappointed. "The Spatial Division Rune is so advanced and complicated, but this guy actually succeeded! Shouldn't he have died?"

The cultivators of the Ancient Civilization Sect were all overjoyed. They rushed toward the spatial zone inside the wall.

Zhang Ruochen was the first to arrive at the other end, but before he could celebrate, he was met with a familiar ancient Yin Qi. His heart instantly sank.

Chapter 1685 - Multi-God Mountain, God-Naming Palace

Chapter 1685: Multi-God Mountain, God-Naming Palace

The environment here was too similar to the depths of the forbidden zone above White Bone Hill, including the ancient Yin Qi in the air.

Zhang Ruochen grew cautious. He released his Spiritual Power and space domain, covering a few feet in radius. This stopped the Yin Qi from invading his body and guarded against some other things too.

A creature with three horns on its head pointed at the ancient mountain in the distance. “Look,” it said with a quivering voice. “Is that...the legendary Multi-God Mountain? Is it the God-Naming Palace at the peak?”

There was a damaged palace at the mountaintop. It radiated with an ancient aura and soul-shocking power waves rippled from it. The top talents present all grew respectful and quiet.

The Wizard God Emperor’s eyes gleamed. “The legendary God-Naming Palace is inside the folded space?” he exclaimed. “This is incredible!”

“The God-Naming Palace is an ancient relic that not even gods dare to enter brashly,” the Great Senior said. “Universal secrets remain there. It’s best if we don’t approach it.”

Fairy Tianchu revealed a secret, saying, “When Heaven World was first established, a god once tried to investigate the God-Naming Palace and died within the Multi-God Mountain. Apparently, the mountain hides a huge secret that can kill gods and turn the world into silence. After that, the Truth Godly Palace sealed this place. No cultivators were allowed to venture in again.”

Roar!

A deafening howl came from the direction of the Multi-God Mountain.

It wasn't like a beast's howl or a human cultivator's cry. It was very eerie and frightening.

When the howl sounded, a dozen men with lower cultivations fell to the ground with weak knees and trembled.

“Such terrifying power...”

Zhang Ruochen's expression grew more uncomfortable.

That howl contained the terrifying power left behind from ancient times. It was the exact same as the power in the forbidden zone—even more terrifying.

That howl... Could it be the source of terror? That ancient forbidden being hadn't died yet?

“Amazing, amazing. Zhang Ruochen, I am sure that this place is the same as the palace cluster deep within the forbidden zone. However, this place is too vast. We are now in a different corner.”

The Amazing Little Taoist continued softly, “Don't think about the divine spring anymore. Get out of here immediately.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded and took a step back. Clinks sounded immediately. Now, he realized that the Thousand Star Maiden's nine chains were still wrapped around him.

Sensing his movement, the Thousand Star Maiden asked, “Where are you going?”

Her slender fingers released Holy Qi into the nine chains.

Whoosh!

Nine different types of power emerged from the nine chains.

Instantly, Zhang Ruochen's Holy Qi and Spiritual Power were locked. The Spiritual Power and space domain that he'd released earlier were also forced back inside his body.

Zhang Ruochen was speechless. “This place is dangerous,” he said hurriedly. “We must leave right now. If we continue forward, we might not be able to leave even if we wanted to.”

The Thousand Star Maiden walked toward him. She really enjoyed the feeling of controlling Zhang Ruochen. Her lips curled up and she chuckled. “Do you know something?”

Before Zhang Ruochen could speak, Fairy Tianchu’s sweet voice sounded in the near distance. “The aura of the divine spring has appeared again. It’s in that direction.”

Everyone looked toward where Fairy Tianchu pointed.

Purplish smoke poured out of a hill not far from the Multi-God Platform. As the wind changed, the smoke also scattered in different directions.

The wind was blowing toward them now, bringing the purple smoke with it.

After inhaling the smoke, the cultivators present discovered with a shock that they gained one or two more Rules of Saintly Way.

One must know that the purplish smoke was blown over from such a distance and already dispersed so much, but it could still increase their Rules of Saintly Way.

This meant that the smoke must be from the divine spring.

“The divine spring isn’t inside the Multi-God Mountain,” the Wizard God Emperor said. “I still have a chance to receive it. It’s worth the risk.”

That faraway mountain only looked like a hill when compared to the God-Naming Platform. In reality, it was huge and could be the king of mountains anywhere else.

Fairy Tianchu gazed into the distance and said, “Even if we don’t go, the cultivators of the Heaven World Sect will go too. I already see the spiritual intent of some people in the air. They’ve entered the area and some are hurrying toward the divine spring, but I think they’ve run into trouble and...”

Suddenly, Fairy Tianchu shut her mouth and stopped.

It was an extraordinary ability to see the spiritual intent from other cultivators.

She already had this ability when she was born and it melded into her soul.

Seeming to sense something, she said, “Everyone, be careful.”

Poof, poof.

A white spear appeared out of thin air and stabbed through a second step Saint King’s body, lifting him up.

The spear contained ancient Yin Qi. It seeped into the Saint King, instantly robbing him of all vitality.

One second he was a second step Saint King with strong vitality.

The next, he was dead.

Next, an ancient monster with a rotten body appeared too. He held the white bone spear and stabbed at another cultivator.

Poof!

“Ah...”

...

In the span of one breath, thousands of ancient monsters appeared before them.

A dozen Saint Kings hadn’t even reacted when they were killed by spears, swords, and other weapons. They fell heavily into pools of blood.

It was too scary... A Saint King’s vitality was so strong that they wouldn’t even die after being beheaded. However, they died instantly after getting stabbed by the white bone weapon.

Even more terrifying to everyone was that the monsters had appeared out of nowhere. Before this, even people with strong Spiritual Power didn’t sense anything.

They came without a trace and soundlessly harvested lives.

Fairy Tianchu instantly took out eight jade swords and stabbed them in eight directions. The sword formation covered all the cultivators of the Tianchu Civilization.

But...

It was useless.

A prehistoric monster appeared within the formation. It raised a bloody blade and cut down at her.

Fairy Tianchu stood in place without moving. She formed a sword print with two shallot-like fingers. Instantly, whooshes sounded. Sword Qi shattered the ancient monster.

She remained calm. "Little Jing, use your Origin Divine Eyes and find out what is with them."

"It's too strange. Formations seem useless against them." The Wizard God Emperor was in trouble too. That alluring woman had died in his arms. Her delicate frame was cut in half and bled profusely.

Here, a Saint King's life was as fragile as paper.

Many cultivators were terrified and wanted to escape.

But they discovered with fright that the opening on the spatial barrier was blocked by a group of monsters. They couldn't escape even if they tried.

"Oh my. What kind of fatal land is this? Even a Supreme Saint will probably die of regret too."

"Hurry and leave. Don't try to get the divine spring anymore. This is a forbidden zone."

The Thousand Star Maiden used the Origin Divine Eyes and found out something. Her expression changed drastically.

"They seem to be...from the void..."

Zhang Ruochen looked at the blocked exit and sighed. "Here, the tangible and void exist together. Those monsters can walk freely between the void and real world. What we've encountered here are only Saint and Saint King monsters. If we encounter Supreme Saints, the consequences would be unimaginable."

Here, a gust of Supreme Saint Qi spread out. All the cultivators present got goosebumps and were very shaken. They felt despair, like they were facing death.

Some of the stronger figures pressed down their fear and looked up.

They saw a gray cloud hovering above their head. It covered miles of sky.

There was half of a body in the cloud.

This was a human's upper body. His hair was messy and his features were unclear. His body only had one arm. The other arm had been cut off by some sharp blade along with his lower body and disappeared.

The Supreme Saint aura came from that half of a body.

“Where is the rest of my body? Give it back, give it back...”

A deafening voice came from the ancient monster's lips. That aura wasn't like a dead being. Instead, it was like a human Supreme Saint at his peak had come.

The cultivators below all had splitting headaches from this. They didn't dare to make a single sound.

Zhang Ruochen buried his face in his hands. It felt like his scalp would split open.

In the distance, the Thousand Star Maiden wasn't any better off. She couldn't hold the chains anymore and tossed them onto the ground.

Taking advantage of this, Zhang Ruochen broke free from the chains. He took out a seventh level Pagoda Rune and the Time and Space Secret Guide, prepared to activate them at any time to protect his life.

Gradually, the stronger figures of the Ancient Civilization Sect recovered. They gathered together.

The Great Senior's eyes were sharp. “It died long ago and only half of its body remains. Even if he was a powerful Supreme Saint when alive, it can probably only release 10% of his power now. Qinglong, Luoji, you two help me and activate the Absolute Saint weapon to suppress him.”

The Wizard God Emperor and Fairy Tianchu appeared beside the Great Senior. They stood in a triangle and all of their

power gathered in the center.

A ten-foot-long broken reddish bronze spear hovered.

Ancient runes appeared densely on the spear, releasing red flames.

The flames were extremely bright. It drove away the Yin Qi within a dozen miles. The sharp light that flew out of the spear also penetrated the gray clouds.

The Amazing Little Taoist stuck his head out of Zhang Ruochen's clothes. "These people are quite powerful!" he exclaimed. "No wonder they dare to go against the ancient monsters."

"They have a broken Absolute Saint weapon," Zhang Ruochen said. "If they activate the Absolute Saint power, they might be able to repress the half corpse. The monster is already dead and can't be compared to a true Supreme Saint."

The Amazing Little Taoist shook his head. "You underestimate a Supreme Saint. Even half of one can still destroy the top Saint Kings with just a twitch of his finger. If they have a complete Absolute Saint weapon, they might have a chance."

"Attack!" Great Senior yelled.

The broken bronze spear flew up from the triangle's center. It released destructive Absolute Saint power and shot toward the half corpse hovering in the cloud.

Poof, poof!

Red flames burned on the spear. It was like a blazing sun rising up from the sky.

Everyone's vision was overtaken by fire.

Chapter 1686 - Kirin

Absolute Complete Fruit

Chapter 1686: Kirin Absolute Complete Fruit

In the clouds, the half Supreme Saint monster roared like thunder.

Its left hand radiated with Yin Qi force and reached for the half bronze spear. It actually broke through the Absolute Saint force and grabbed it.

Below him, the Great Elder, Fairy Tianchu and the Wizard God Emperor's expressions all faltered. They didn't think that half of a Supreme Saint monster would be so terrifying and able to grab an Absolute Saint weapon with its bare hands.

This power far surpassed them.

Poof!

The Great Elder cut his wrist. His golden saint blood poured out onto the broken bronze spear.

Suddenly, a dragon's roar sounded within the spear.

More runes appeared on the spear. The Absolute Saint power that burst from it doubled.

Now, the arm of the Supreme Saint monster trembled. With its abilities, it wasn't easy to suppress an Absolute Saint weapon.

It swung its arm and its joints cracked.

As the bronze spear broke free from its fingers, the spear flew toward the ground like the sun crashing down.

Kaboom!

All land within a dozen feet sank down.

An ancient Yin Qi and Absolute Saint power windstorm spread out. Dust flew up, hitting more than half of the cultivators and ancient monsters present.

The emperors, maidens, deities, and fairies used their strongest rune scrolls and weapons to protect the cultivators beside them.

Boom!

A beautiful fairy in the fourth step Saint King Realm had a rune scroll in her hands. It formed a bowl-shaped cover of light, but it was penetrated by a beam of ancient Yin Qi.

Her beautiful body fell into a puddle of blood.

The ancient monsters were also attacked by the energy windstorm. They crumbled like sand sculptures, their corpses ripping apart.

...

Horrible scenes appeared one by one.

A Saint King couldn't take the Supreme Saint monster's casual attack.

Zhang Ruochen activated the seventh level Pagoda Rune, forming a seven-level Buddhist pagoda projection to block the windstorm. Even so, he was still forced more than 20 feet away.

Boom!

The seventh level Pagoda Rune exploded into bits of paper.

This 40-million-saint-stone rune was finally used up after it helped Zhang Ruochen block countless forces of destruction.

Kaboom!

A loud boom came from the spatial wall. The hearts of the Ancient Civilization Sect cultivators sank.

The half of the Supreme Saint monster's attack had been too strong. It reached the spatial wall and destroyed the Spatial Division Rune.

The path that had been opened up shattered, disappearing before their eyes.

Everyone stared at Zhang Ruochen.

Now, only he could reopen the escape path.

Drawing the Spatial Division Rune wasn't an easy task. It also took a lot of time. In such a critical situation, even if Zhang Ruochen could withstand the pressure and successfully open up a path, the Ancient Civilization Sect cultivators would probably all be killed by the monsters by then.

"Everyone, spread out," the Thousand Star Maiden yelled. "Escape from here! As long as the Supreme Saint monster doesn't target you, you may be able to live."

The Great Elder, Fairy Tianchu, and Wizard God Emperor used all their might to control the broken bronze spear and delay the Supreme Saint monster.

The other cultivators were led by the deities and fairies to spread out into the distance.

But just as they ran to a few hundred meters away, ancient runes appeared on the ground. Any cultivator who stepped on them would vanish immediately.

"No... It's a type of ancient divine spatial rune..." Mo Xiaogu yelled. Then her delicate frame disappeared, transported to some unknown place.

Gu Feng, Li Qinghai, Pushan, and Chou Gu also disappeared with her.

The Thousand Star Maiden looked everywhere for Zhang Ruochen. She discovered that he'd already escaped to hundreds of meters away and only left behind a faint trace.

Whether it was getting the divine spring or leaving this fatal zone, everything depended on Zhang Ruochen's spatial power. How could he be allowed to escape?

The Thousand Star Maiden led the Blindman, Big Beard, and four Starry Generals to chase after Zhang Ruochen.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen also stepped on a rune carved by an ancient god. Spatial power poured out and his feet sank down.

Oh no... he thought, and then he disappeared.

The teleportation was very quick. In the blink of an eye, his body reappeared.

He was in a blood-red wilderness. There was no grass on the ground. The soil seemed to be soaked in blood and smelled disgusting and sickly.

“How can there be spatial divine runes on the ground? Where was I transported to?”

Zhang Ruochen’s nerves were pulled taut as he looked around.

He couldn’t see the enormous Multi-God Mountain at all. For thousands of meters, everything was red and gray. The bloody land was deathly silent. It was as if no living being had been here for tens of thousands of years.

The Amazing Little Taoist jumped out of Zhang Ruochen’s clothes and looked around. He finally came to a conclusion. “We’re not far from the Multi-God Mountain.”

“How can that be? You can’t see a scrap of the mountain here.” Zhang Ruochen didn’t believe him.

“The Multi-God Mountain isn’t just a mountain,” the Amazing Little Taoist said seriously. “It’s a mountain-shaped world. Even if we stand on the mountain, we may see an ocean, a prairie, a desert...because the Multi-God Mountain is too large and we are too miniscule.”

“The closer we are to the Multi-God Mountain, the more dangerous it is. It seems peaceful here, but it may contain fatal mechanisms.”

Zhang Ruochen grasped his heavy sword and summoned two Assassin Puppets. They guarded him on either side. Then he began checking the ground.

There were no ancient divine runes underfoot.

He’d been sent here on a one-way transmission.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to set up a spatial formation to leave immediately, but he was afraid that he would run into that hovering divine hand during the transfer.

Last time, he'd almost died in the void and was still fearful of it.

Clip clop.

The sound of hooves came from the bloody plain, breaking the silence.

Zhang Ruochen raised his head. He saw a five-colored kirin galloping thousands of feet away. It was probably only three feet tall and a five-colored saint cloud formed under its feet while it ran.

However, no Blood Qi radiated from the kirin. Instead, there was a mesmerizing fragrance.

"It's the scent of saint fruit," Zhang Ruochen murmured to himself. His eyes shone with brilliant light. "Kirin Absolute Complete Fruit?"

The Amazing Little Taoist nodded. "Should be it. The fruit is ripe and gave birth to a spirit and soul. It can leave the tree and travel through the world."

"Since we ran into it, let's take it down."

Zhang Ruochen took out a jar made from the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree and activated the 12 Buddhist pearls. He collected his aura and walked over carefully.

The five-colored kirin was very alert. It stopped immediately and sniffed. Suspicion in its eyes, it looked around. It seemed to sense something and immediately turned and ran wildly.

Zhang Ruochen stopped hiding. A Luan and phoenix appeared under his feet and he used the fastest speed to chase after the kirin.

Zhang Ruochen was even faster than the kirin. He got closer and closer.

Just as he was about to catch up, the kirin jumped and rushed into an abandoned manor.

Zhang Ruochen stopped. He didn't barge in.

This bloody plain was deathly still. It was too strange that an abandoned manor suddenly appeared out of nowhere.

The manor was huge. It looked like the ruins of a city in the weeds. The walls were incomplete and the buildings were collapsed. No one knew how long it had been ruined for.

Even more shocking was that the soil of the manor was five-colored.

Zhang Ruochen was shocked. “Five Elements Soil,” he said.

Five Elements Soil was the first type of soil created when the universe came into being. All beings were born from this soil so it was known as the “mother of all beings.”

The Five Elements Soil contained heavy Five Elements Qi. If you planted weeds in it, they could be nurtured into spiritual grass.

The grass could also be nurtured into saint medicine, which could grow into divine medicine.

It was very hard to find Five Elements Soil in the universe now.

There was a rumor that the Five Elements Temple of Taoism still had some.

“Amazing.”

The Amazing Little Taoist cried out in excitement and ran toward the abandoned manor. “Five Elements Soil is very useful for Taoists. Not only can it be used to produce special pills, it can also make your Five Elements techniques more powerful.”

Kaboom!

A one-meter-wide palm formed from the blood-red soil outside the manor and slammed into the Amazing Little Taoist, sending it flying.

Zhang Ruochen reached out his left hand to catch the falling Amazing Little Taoist. He stared forward sharply.

Whoosh!

A giant formed by the bloody earth climbed up from the ground. It blocked Zhang Ruochen with a huge axe.

Zhang Ruochen studied it. “This abandoned manor still has remnants of a spiritual intent. This clay person is formed by the spiritual intent. It’s guarding this place to stop us from running in.”

The Amazing Little Taoist wasn’t hurt. He landed and said, “Blocking one’s path to getting rich is like killing one’s parents. The Five Elements Soil here is mine. It’s just remnants of spiritual intent. Let’s shatter it.”

The Amazing Little Taoist shone with brilliant purple light and transformed into a purple streak. It rushed toward the Bloodearth Giant. A tiny handprint formed, striking the giant’s forehead. The air was ripped apart with loud booms.

Thousands of Rules of Palm Way converged at the palm print.

Roar!

The Bloodearth Giant roared and swung the huge axe at the Amazing Little Taoist. It swept up blood-red wind.

Boom!

The axe clashed with the Amazing Little Taoist’s palm print. It was instantly penetrated and turned into pieces of bloody earth.

The giant’s skull was also penetrated by the palm print. It fell back heavily on the ground.

The Amazing Little Taoist landed on the ground. Standing up straight and combing his whiskers, he said proudly, “Amazing, amazing. Can’t even take one hit.”

The Bloodearth Giant’s aura is so strong. How can it be destroyed by the Amazing Little Taoist’s one hit?

Zhang Ruochen was very confused. Just as he was about to explain it with the Amazing Little Taoist’s advanced cultivation, low buzzes came from underground. The ground shook violently and a dozen vortexes appeared.

Chapter 1687 - Tao Garden

Chapter 1687: Tao Garden

A Bloodearth Giant walked out of each whirlpool.

They had powerful auras and held battle hammers. Their eyes shone with bloody light. They attacked Zhang Ruochen and the Amazing Little Taoist immediately.

Zhang Ruochen manipulated his Holy Qi and instantly activated the Second Yao Complete Power of the heavy sword. He struck out, hitting a battle axe that was swung toward him.

Boom!

The bloody battle axe broke the Sword Qi and hit the heavy sword.

Zhang Ruochen grasped the hilt with both hands but was still forced back.

On the other hand, the Amazing Little Taoist was surrounded by a dozen Bloodearth Giants. He was forced to run away and almost died. "Zhang Ruochen!" he yelled. "Don't you have a lot of ideas? Hurry and think of something. There are too many of these clay people. We can't fend them off."

Zhang Ruochen looked toward that abandoned manor. He flashed forward using the Spatial Move and arrived at the edge of the manor. He stepped in.

"You ran away just like that?"

The Amazing Little Taoist gritted his teeth. Holding his hands above his head, purple Holy Qi poured out of his palm. They turned into two purple clouds. "Sea-Suppression Print."

The two purple clouds rolled, releasing a tsunami-like boom. They crashed toward a dozen Bloodearth Giants.

This mid-level saint spell contained close to 15,000 Rules of Palm Way. It was very strong.

Boom, boom.

The three Bloodearth Giants at the front exploded instantly. The giants in the back were sent flying too.

Half of the dozen strong Bloodearth Giants were upended.

The Amazing Little Taoist's attack stunned Zhang Ruochen who was standing at the entrance of the abandoned manor. Even a sixth step Saint King won't be able to cultivate more than 10,000 rules of one Way. Could his cultivation be at the seventh step?

Typically, a seventh step Saint King had more than one million Rules of Saintly Way. There would be more than 10,000 rules of one Way.

Zhang Ruochen only had around 40,000 rules inside him. For Rules of Palm Way, he only had around 300. He was very far from the Amazing Little Taoist who could use more than 10,000 Rules of Palm Way at once.

"Do you all think I'm just a weakling if I don't use my power?"

The Amazing Little Taoist shook his sleeves. While yelling at the group of Bloodearth Giants, he walked toward Zhang Ruochen.

But when he saw that the Bloodearth Giants were climbing up again, he was very frightened. He ran for his life while muttering, "I can't kill them?"

Whoosh!

As soon as the Bloodearth Giants touched the five-colored dirt, they retreated instantly. They didn't enter the abandoned manor.

Zhang Ruochen grew thoughtful when he saw this.

"Amazing. How come they stopped?" The Amazing Little Taoist was curious.

"They must not be able to enter," Zhang Ruochen said.

"Perhaps I guessed incorrectly at first! They aren't protecting this place at all. Instead, they're like those ancient monsters. They only know to kill and destroy. The manor must counter their power, so they don't dare to come in."

Thinking of this, Zhang Ruochen grew even more curious about this manor.

“Whatever. Let’s get the Five Elements Soil.”

The Amazing Little Taoist transformed into a beam of purple light and rushed toward the right side of the door to dig up some of the five-colored dirt.

Five Elements Soil was all over the manor. Spiritual grass and medicine also grew from the soil. Some were green like jade. Others had vibrant purple and red flowers or grain-sized fruit.

Even Zhang Ruochen was tempted, let alone the Amazing Little Taoist.

However, he wasn’t so impatient. He knew that this wasn’t a safe place, so he moved his feet cautiously.

Crackle!

Blinding light emerged and a dozen thick bolts of lightning surged over. They struck the Amazing Little Taoist, turning him scorched black.

He fell to Zhang Ruochen’s feet with a thud. His entire body smoked and electricity flowed up and down.

Zhang Ruochen immediately used Spatial Twist to move the lightning back outside the door of the manor.

“How can such strong electricity be in the Five Elements Soil?” Zhang Ruochen gasped.

The Amazing Little Taoist moaned while climbing up from the ground. “Some previous wisemen added Taoism into the Five Elements Soil. Anyone who touches it will be attacked. Those old guys are already dead, but they still left this behind. Aren’t they just harming people?”

“According to legends,” Zhang Ruochen said, “if you bury dead people into the Five Elements Soil, they can continuously absorb Five Elements Qi and be reborn one day. Those old guys might have had that idea too.”

The Amazing Little Taoist’s eyes were like two peas. “This manor has those old guy’s corpses buried underground?”

“It’s not impossible.”

Zhang Ruochen surveyed the surroundings with a serious expression.

The Amazing Little Taoist hurriedly put his hands together and bowed in all directions. “Ancestors, please excuse me,” he mumbled. “I didn’t mean to disturb your sleep. Please do not punish me. Amitabha... uh...Immeasurable God, amazing, amazing.”

Zhang Ruochen discovered something and walked toward a patch of spiritual grass.

The Amazing Little Taoist was frightened. He rushed over to stop Zhang Ruochen, saying, “Zhang Ruochen, even with my high cultivation, I almost got seriously injured. Won’t you get turned into ashes? The Tao in the Five Elements Soil is very frightening... Hey, what’s that?”

Following Zhang Ruochen’s gaze, the Amazing Little Taoist discovered a broken white stone plaque in the grass.

There was moss on the plaque, but one could still distinguish two ancient words carved on it.

One of the words was Tao.

The other one was incomplete and unrecognizable.

The Amazing Little Taoist’s eyes shone with blinding light. “Tao Garden!” he cried. “This is the Tao Garden.”

“What Tao Garden?”

Zhang Ruochen studied the incomplete word. It did seem like “garden.”

“The Tao Garden is the Taoist land of a civilization from Heaven World,” the Amazing Little Taoist said. “Many Tao wisemen were born here.”

Zhang Ruochen was suspicious. “You’re just a Psychic Sage. How would you know about a civilization from Heaven World?”

“I don’t know why, but I just know. It’s like there are some things that are always in my brain. But if I didn’t see the white

plaque, I wouldn't have thought of these related things. Isn't it strange?" the Amazing Little Taoist asked in return.

Zhang Ruochen stared at him to see if he was lying.

This Psychic Sage grew in an isolated forbidden zone, but it cultivated saint spells, knew about social interactions, and was very wise. This was indeed strange.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head, not thinking about it anymore. He had two Assassin Puppets test the path and walked inside the abandoned manor.

Some of the buildings in the manor were incomplete, some collapsed, some sunken into the ground, and others shrouded in ancient Yin Qi and red light. A terrifying battle had once erupted here.

The Amazing Little Taoist sniffed at the ground. "I smell the Kirin Absolute Complete Fruit, but there's also the scent of other creatures."

Zhang Ruochen grew cautious. "What do you mean?"

"Like you, the scent of outsiders," the Amazing Little Taoist said.

Had other cultivators gotten here before him?

Zhang Ruochen had the Amazing Little Taoist lead the way. He followed the scent of the Kirin Absolute Complete Fruit and moved forward quickly. Moments later, they arrived outside a better-preserved temple. One could hear the cries of kirins and phoenixes outside.

Five-colored light shot out as well.

Two Assassin Puppets charged in first. Then Zhang Ruochen used a physical technique and entered the temple with his heavy sword.

The temple contained strong wood elemental Qi and periodic fragrances.

A 100-meter-tall saint tree grew in the heart of the temple. Its shape was like a human hand reaching out from underground. It had five black finger-like branches.

The forefinger and middle finger of the five branches both had a five-colored fruit. Kirin and phoenix projections hovered around the fruit and even howled.

The two Absolute Complete Fruits were tied down by eight golden snakes. They couldn't escape.

It was clear that fruit had grown on the other three branches but had already been picked away.

Two figures stood under the saint tree.

One of them had eyes like blue fire and fangs in his mouth. This was Blue Fang, once number 73 on the Saints Merits Rank.

The other wore a blue crane robe. It was Yu Wenjing, a godly disciple.

These two were the top prides of Yin and Yang Field.

Zhang Ruochen recognized him, but they didn't recognize him. Instead, they stared at the two Assassin Puppets.

Yu Wenjing had a shocked look in his eyes. "An assassin from the Heavenly Assassination Organization?"

"The powerful assassins from the Heavenly Assassination Organization are hidden among all the various fields," Blue Fang said coldly. "It's not strange for one to come here. But since he discovered that we picked the Absolute Complete Fruit, we can't let him leave."

Zhang Ruochen didn't explain himself. "I did nothing wrong but to be talented."

"It's good that you know this. It's just your fault for knowing what you shouldn't know. We can't help it."

Blue Fang opened his arms. Two blue balls of Divine Fire Jingmie poured out of his palms. Instantly, the heat inside the temple shot up. The wood elemental Holy Qi in the air started rolling like boiling water.

His cultivation was now in the third step Saint King Realm. He'd improved extremely quickly.

Zhang Ruochen remained calm. “There must have been five pieces of fruit on the tree, right?” he asked. “Did you already take away the other three?”

Blue Fang wasn't the type to underestimate enemies. Seeing how fearless Zhang Ruochen was, he instead grew cautious and didn't answer him. “You're about to become a dead man anyway. Why should I tell you?”

Whoosh!

The two balls of Divine Fire Jingmie swelled. They transformed into two fire snakes and surged at Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen didn't fear Blue Fang's fire, but he didn't touch it. Instead, he used a physical technique to dash to the right. Then he attacked from Blue Fang's right. He drew a crescent sword Qi and struck down.

Blue Fang settled into a horse stance. Blue saintly ripples emanated from his boxing gloves. He slapped forward and divine fire rolled out like waves, meeting the Sword Qi and heavy sword.

Chapter 1688 - You Really Are Zhang Ruochen

Chapter 1688: You Really Are Zhang Ruochen

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Bang.

An explosion occurred as the sword clashed with the palm.

From the dust, one could see that Blue Fang was knocked back.

Yuwen Jing used a soft palm technique to support Blue Fang and cushioned the blow and said, “The opponent has a Saint King level assassin puppet. He is not a simple enemy to fight. Do you need my help?”

“No.”

The sharp teeth in his mouth were exposed as he excitedly continued, “After breaking through to third-step Saint King, I have yet to get accustomed to my power. With the help of this battle, I can test the extent of my power.”

“To be able to knock me, Blue Fang, back, you must not be some random passerby. I am guessing you are a Heavenly King Killer from the Heavenly Assassination Organization.”

Zhang Ruochen stood upright with his sword held horizontally before him, and said, “If you can withstand ten hits from me, I will tell you my real name.”

“You are really cocky. To tell you the truth, I only used 50% of my strength just now. If I do my best, you may not be able to block me,” said Blue Fang.

Zhang Ruochen replied, “Really? But I only used 30% of my strength.”

“Ignorant fool.” There were thousands of words that glowed with saintly light on Blue Fang’s golden holy armor. The aura of the whole person became extremely fierce. “Void Smelting Palm!”

Threads of Divine Fire Jingmie and three hundred Rules of Palm Play converged to his right palm.

All of a sudden, the whole Tao Garden was filled with the crackling sounds of flames.

What was used by Blue Fang was a mid-level saint spell for the palms. Its power was quite amazing. Even though the palm seal hadn’t been established, the flame under his feet had already spread to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t intend to use the power of time and space. He wanted to try and defeat a top tier genius with just his Sword Way.

At the same time, he also wanted to get accustomed to the greatly increased strength within his body.

Zhang Ruochen raised the sword over his head, and the powerful sword intent came out of his body. Then, a ten-foot-long ‘eight trigrams’ mark appeared at his feet. Within the area, sword Qi ran rampant.

“Sword Eight, Heaven Sword.”

The Holy Qi in the surroundings converged to the eight trigrams seal, and transformed into a layer of Sword Way Xuangang, which condensed on the heavy sword in Zhang Ruochen’s hand.

Whoosh!

Xuangang was unbreakable.

With a flick of the heavy sword, he broke the palm power of Blue Fang and bombarded his knuckles, culminating in a huge explosion.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen condensing the Sword Way Xuangang, Blue Fang knew that the opponent was more powerful than he'd expected, so he pushed himself to the limit and forced himself to stand against the blow. However, even so, the falling of the heavy sword still made his arm numb and he fell back.

His fist set was a Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon, which blocked the Sword Way Xuangang and was not shattered by the force.

Zhang Ruochen's sword skills had reached the level of mastery long ago. The eight trigrams under his feet rotated, and the second sword attacked. "Earth Sword."

This was a piercing technique, and it made a swift beeline to Blue Fang's forehead.

Since Zhang Ruochen used sword eight, the sword moves he used would be influenced by the Eight Records of the Saint Sword by Sword Saint Xuanji. He divided Sword Eight into eight trigrams.

Blue Fang knew the power of Sword Eight and Sword Way Xuangang. Instead of flying head on, he used a body technique saint spell, the Flying Shadow of the Fire Peng, which included rules of speed, flying, fire, and lightning.

Whoosh!

On the back of Blue Fang, a pair of flaming Peng wings appeared. With a flash, he disappeared and re-appeared behind Zhang Ruochen.

The speed was like teleportation.

Zhang Ruochen's sword was a little slower, only hitting the silhouette of Blue Fang.

"Mid-level Saint spell of the physical technique." Zhang Ruochen felt it was a little inconceivable.

It was not easy to master a mid-level saint spell.

It was more difficult if it was a physical technique.

Moreover, the physical technique used by Blue Fang integrated many kinds of rules. It was obvious that the spell used was not an ordinary Mid-level Saint Spell and was pretty advanced even among Mid-level Saint Spells.

That could make a huge difference.

“Hehehe.”

Blue Fang stood three feet from the ground with a grim smile. Once again, he sped up to a shocking speed, and he used the Void-Smelting Palm again. This palm spell was not only integrated with the rules of the Saintly Way, but was also imbued with a large number of Rules of Truth.

This gave him four times his usual palm power.

The attainments of Blue Fang in the Way of Truth were far beyond Zhang Ruochen’s.

At this stage, Zhang Ruochen could only boost the Saint Spells to be twice as powerful.

Zhang Ruochen had never practiced any physical techniques of the Mid-level Saint Spell, thus his speed was not as fast as that of Blue Fang, but his nerve reaction speed was extremely fast. When the Blue Fang appeared, he attacked with a backhanded stroke of his sword. “Thunder Sword.”

For this attack, Zhang Ruochen also used more than 200 Rules of Truth in his body to integrate into the sword technique, while the Sword Way Xuangang condensed into layers of waves and collided with the attack from Blue Fang.

As every layer of Sword Way Xuangang collided with the Palm Seal, the power of Blue Fang’s attack was reduced.

When all Sword Way Xuangang had been smashed, Zhang Ruochen’s heavy sword finally collided with the palm of the Blue Fang. However, the edge of the sword swept on the wrist of Blue Fang, with sparks flying everywhere from the friction.

With that carefully placed technique, Blue Fang’s fist was diverted from its course, but now the tip of the sword pointed at Blue Fang’s forehead again.

Blue Fang's face changed, and he used his physical technique again. The figure of the Fire Peng dashed into the distance.

Ten feet away, a deep cut appeared on the cheek of Blue Fang, showing the white cheekbones, with his Saint blood dripping down, like bright petals on the ground.

"How could this be..." Blue Fang found it unbelievable.

His opponent, no matter whether it was in speed or in the cultivation of the Way of Truth, was weaker than him.

However, he was hurt before his opponent.

How could this man's use of force be so efficient?

Zhang Ruochen looked at the Saint blood on the heavy sword, and quietly sighed. "Unfortunately, if the sword in my hand was the Abyss Ancient Sword, that would not have left just a sword mark on his face"

Only with the Abyss Ancient Sword could Zhang Ruochen perfectly perform his sword moves and exert the most powerful sword techniques.

This heavy sword in his hand was still not very familiar to him.

Yu Wenjing stopped and didn't immediately collect the two Absolute Complete Fruits left on the sacred tree, and stared at Zhang Ruochen and Blue Fang.

He could see that the cultivation of the Killer Heavenly King was not much higher than that of Blue Fang, but this person could still suppress the Blue Fang easily, which was really strange.

Yu Wenjing said, "Within the Truth Heavenly Domain, living beings that could suppress you are already rare. Moreover, this person's cultivation of the Way of Truth is only mediocre. There could at most be three people that fit such characteristics."

Blue Fang thought a bit, and looked at the Killer Heavenly King in the opposite direction again, his pupils suddenly shrank. "This guy...could he be Zhang Ruochen?"

"Not impossible."

Yu Wenjing went up to Blue Fang. With a single palm gesture, twelve divine bones flew out and were sent towards the twelve directions around the Tao Garden. Each divine bone then released light, and the space around the region was fortified.

This was just in case.

If that Killer Heavenly King was really Zhang Ruochen, it was important that they guard against his spatial attacks.

A Godly disciple and a genius of Yin Yang Field. They are really extraordinary people to have so quickly guessed my identity, Zhang Ruochen thought.

Seeing that the person did not deny his guess, Blue Fang was more confident that he guessed right. He said, “No matter whether you are Zhang Ruochen or not, people like you shouldn’t live in the world.”

Boom!

Glyphs flew out again from his Saint Armor, and surrounded him, giving him an impenetrable defense.

At the same time, these released a lot of power, which converged upon Blue Fang, buffing his aura.

“Die!”

The body of Blue Fang was wrapped up like a Giant made of glyphs and characters. He raised a big palm, and pressed down toward Zhang Ruochen’s head. That holy armor was extraordinary. It increased the cultivation of Blue Fang to a rather terrifying level.

The Amazing Little Taoist felt that Zhang Ruochen could not resist this attack, and asked, “Do you need help?”

“I can still handle this much.”

Zhang Ruochen stood proudly, looked up at the big hand, and said, “The additional power granted by this armor is more than that of the Hundred Saint Blood Armor. Your Word Armor is a pretty good treasure.”

The holy Qi and Mysteries of Truth in Zhang Ruochen’s body converged to his Fire God Fist armor.

Immediately, the fist armor sent out a raging fire. The fire wrapped around the heavy sword, which was then integrated with Sword Way Xuangang. Then with a powerful stroke, he slashed forth.

Boom.

Thousands of Words burst open, and the body of the word giant collapsed. A huge and boundless force rushed out in all directions.

In Tao Garden, the havoc was as if a tornado had just started.

Two assassin puppets were shook and flew out straight into the walls of the Tao Garden.

Even with Yuwen Jing's cultivation, he was sent stepping backwards, and could only resist after using the twelve divine bones.

When Blue Fang fell to the ground, the bones in his body were broken. Unable to stand up, he shivered and howled angrily, "It's you! It's you, Zhang Ruochen..."

In the Ocean of Truth, Blue Fang had seen Zhang Ruochen use the power of the Fire God Armor, and now recognized him.

"Still not dead?"

Zhang Ruochen frowned.

Even his sword, which was a three-yao ten-thousand-pattern saint weapon, had been broken in the attack, and was only left with a hilt. It was easy to see, then, how powerful that attack was.

That was the power formed when the Mysteries of Truth and Fire God Armor were combined.

When Zhang Ruochen saw the flow of the Divine Patterns on Blue Fang, he suddenly understood. "I see, it turns out that you have the Divine Patterns on your body. Seems like you are an offspring that a God attached great importance to."

Gods had a long life and would have many offspring, possibly tens of thousands of them.

And for Gods, each time they secluded themselves for refining, it would take hundreds, if not thousands of years. Thus, even their children would rarely see the gods.

Only the offspring that the God attached great importance to could have the body protection of the Divine Patterns.

It was obviously not easy to kill an offspring of a God who had the protection of the Divine Patterns. Moreover, if a normal descendant died, a God would rarely get angry. He would at most instruct his subordinates to deal with the culprit.

But if you killed an offspring with the Divine Pattern, the consequences would be serious.

Zhang Ruochen lightly commented, "It seems that only by using spatial powers could I kill you."

If you changed Zhang Ruochen to anyone else, Blue Fang would only scoff at their bravado. But this was the real Zhang Ruochen. What did he not dare to do?

"Zhang Ruochen, this is the God-Naming Platform, and in front of a godly disciple, you still dare to kill openly?" Yu Wenjing shouted coldly.

Zhang Ruochen said, "You, as a disciple of the divine family, didn't say such solemn words just now when Blue Fang was going to kill me."

Yu Wenjing went speechless for a moment, then his eyes squinted. He didn't want to try to talk with Zhang Ruochen again and threatened, "I have used twelve divine bones to fortify the space. Can you even use the power of space?"

Chapter 1689 - : Emperor Above

Chapter 1689

: Emperor Above

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen smiled. He didn't look down on the other or act arrogant. As if it was insignificant, he just said, "You're too ignorant!"

"What did you say?"

Heavy murderous intent rolled off of Yu Wenjing.

"I said that you're ignorant," Zhang Ruochen said. "You think I'm still in the Saint Realm and you can stop my spatial power with the divine bone?"

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen stomped on the ground and the entire space shook. A spatial wave rippled in all directions.

The 12 divine bones floating in the temple all trembled as if they were going to fly away.

Yu Wenjing's expression changed slightly. He hurriedly moved his Holy Qi into 12 beams of Holy Qi that flew toward the 12 bones. The bones grew bigger and bigger. Large amounts of runes and rule patterns emerged.

"Twelve Palace Divine Formation."

The 12 divine bones started spinning, forming a huge whirlpool. Different types of power intertwined in the whirlpool and strong ripples burst forth.

From a distance, it was as if a thick tornado shot out of the temple.

Zhang Ruochen found this strange. “He actually carved formation runes on the divine bones and used the formation to activate the rules inside the bone, borrowing power from the world. The Formation Saint Master who made this formation is very advanced!”

Gods had an infinite number of rules within their bodies. Even one divine bone contained countless rules. A Saint King could only gaze in respect.

However, after a god died, the rules in their bones would fall silent too.

Using formation runes to activate the rules was a very advanced technique. Only top ancient sects could do it.

With divine bones as the foundation, the formation created definitely had limitless power and could be used to suppress a void world.

This formation was what the leader of an ancient sect in the Yin and Yang Sect gave to Yu Wenjing when he'd become the godly disciple. The sect leader placed great hope in him.

“Now, do you still think that my 12 divine bones can't restrict your spatial power?” Yu Wenjing asked.

“It can't.” Zhang Ruochen shook his head.

“You won't give up until the end.”

Yu Wenjing was furious. He pointed at Zhang Ruochen.

The 12 divine bones seemed to come to life. Like 12 divine monsters, they released dense Rules of Saintly Way. They wove into a huge ball of light and flew toward Zhang Ruochen.

There were at least 3,000 Rules of Saintly Way inside the ball.

Zhang Ruochen clenched his fists and activated the power of the Fire God Armor Boxing Glove. His right hand turned into a blinding fireball and he punched.

Boom!

The ball of light was shattered. The power exploded and not even Zhang Ruochen's fingers were hurt.

He charged at Yu Wenjing and raised his fist. Fire poured out.

“Zhang Ruochen is only a third step Saint King. How can he be so powerful?”

Yu Wenjing clenched his teeth. All of his meridians whooshed with flowing water and the 12 divine bones spun even faster.

More than 400 rules poured out of each divine bone. Like 12 rivers, they gathered before him, transforming into a millstone-sized divine print.

The divine print flew out and hit Zhang Ruochen's fist.

Kaboom!

Yu Wenjing couldn't block that power and fell back.

However, that divine print didn't explode. It remained hovering before him.

He stared at the man with flaming fists in extreme shock. How is this possible? I was still forced back by him.

With Yu Wenjing's level as a fourth step Saint King, he could unleash the power of a peak sixth step Saint King with the Twelve Palace Divine Formation created from the 12 divine bones. He'd been confident in suppressing Zhang Ruochen.

But...

Zhang Ruochen's flaming boxing gloves were too powerful. They were like a horrible attack weapon. Probably only a seventh step Saint King could suppress him.

“What other tricks do you have?” Zhang Ruochen asked. “Use them all!”

Yu Wenjing obviously wasn't satisfied with being repressed by a third step Saint King. Eyes growing cold, he said, “Fine. I'll let you see today how strong the godly disciple of the Truth Godly Palace is.”

“Form of Truth, Emperor Above.”

Yu Wenjing dispersed the divine print. He stood up straight and put his hands together. A great number of Rules of Truth shot out of his head, becoming one with the sky. The rules of the world grew active too.

Above his head, a yellow-brown cloud of Qi was formed. It was like an independent sky.

Zhang Ruochen felt invisible yet strong power press down on him. Expression growing serious, he mumbled to himself, “Is this the legendary Form of Truth?”

Regular cultivators could only comprehend the Rules of Truth after cultivating the Way of Truth. They could improve one’s combat abilities and their understanding of the Saintly Way, perfecting the structure of their Saintly Way.

Only godly disciples of the Truth Godly Palace could cultivate the Form of Truth.

The four forms were “Emperor Above,” “Earth Below,” “Endless Starry Sky” and “Boundless Universe.” Each one was more powerful than the last.

Even the lowest Emperor Above could definitely defeat all opponents in the same realm.

“Zhang Ruochen, you should be content to die under my Form of Truth!”

Yu Wenjing raised his arms. Dense lightning formed instantly in the yellow-brown cloud above his head like dancing dragons and snakes. They crushed down on Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Time and Space Secret Guide and clenched it.

He waved it in the sky. The pages flipped quickly with whooshing sounds.

It was a breeze!

But each breeze could tear a crack in the space. Finally, the breeze turned into a strong spatial crack tornado. It tore apart the yellow-brown sky above Yu Wenjing’s head.

No...no... Impossible. How can he still use spatial power even with the 12 divine bones and Form of Truth restricting him?

Yu Wenjing couldn't accept this scene. It was beyond his understanding. He'd cultivated hard for 300 years before succeeding with the Form of Truth "Emperor Above," but it was still destroyed by a cultivator weaker than him. One could imagine how hard of a hit this was.

Zhang Ruochen unleashed extreme speed. He attacked Yu Wenjing's chest with his flaming fists.

Thud!

Yu Wenjing quickly activated the 12 divine bones again. He held up a divine print and countered Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen punched aggressively. Each hit made Yu Wenjing retreat. His Qi and blood rumbled and his organs were about to be ripped apart.

Is this guy possessed by a war god? I can't stop him at all.

Yu Wenjing was forced to summon the eight pythons back.

These eight golden pythons were all wilderness mutants and in the Saint King Realm.

They wrapped around his body and each one spat out a Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon. They activated the complete power and smashed toward Zhang Ruochen.

Boom, boom!

Zhang Ruochen's fists were aggressive. Divine Fire Jingmie kept pouring out, smashing all the Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons into pieces of scrap metal.

Yu Wenjing was frightened. He knew that he would die without a doubt if he continued fighting. Thus, he collected the 12 divine bones. Without bringing the collapsed Blue Fang with, he fled the temple.

Zhang Ruochen's voice sounded behind him. "You'll only die faster without the formation from the 12 divine bones."

His voice sounded in Yu Wenjing's ears as if it was a shadow.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen's fist transformed into a dozen-meter-wide fireball. It caught up to Yu Wenjing and hit his back. The eight pythons wanted to save him, but they were killed by the fist strength instantly. Their bodies exploded into bits of flesh.

Yu Wenjing was covered in sweat. "King Yan!" he yelled. "Queen Lian, save me!"

His voice spread through the Tao Garden.

At the same time, he activated all of his defensive treasures.

Kaboom!

The flaming fist fell down and Yu Wenjing was sent flying. He hit a yard outside the temple like a rocket.

The instant he landed in the yard, he activated the Tao in the Five Elements Soil.

With a boom, his body was split into a rain of blood by a beam of white light.

A godly disciple died like this. His corpse was gone and his soul was scattered.

When Zhang Ruochen reached the outside of the temple and saw this scene, his lips couldn't help but quiver. "The Tao in the Five Elements Soil is truly terrifying. I can't touch it."

He collected the 12 divine bones and returned to the temple. Zhang Ruochen stared at Blue Fang. "Are King Yan and Queen Lian nearby?"

"Yes. Are you afraid now?"

Blue Fang pushed himself up and laughed coldly.

"King Yan and Queen Lian are indeed incredible figures," Zhang Ruochen said. "But I'm not afraid of them."

"You killed a godly disciple in the God-Naming Platform. Do you know the consequences if this news spreads? If you're not afraid of King Yan and Queen Lian, are you unafraid of the Truth Godly Palace too?"

Without warning, Zhang Ruochen slammed Blue Fang with a palm.

Kaboom!

The space before his palm caved in. Blue Fang was torn apart by the space. He cracked open like porcelain.

Even with the godly patterns protecting him, he still couldn't block the spatial power.

Blue Fang was a junior that even gods thought highly of. Who knew if he had other powerful hidden cards that could threaten Zhang Ruochen's life?

He had to kill top talents like Blue Fang with speedy and unexpected techniques. Otherwise, with Blue Fang's willpower, he might attack desperately before death or even deactivate his saint source.

Zhang Ruochen waved his sleeve and picked up the words on the ground.

These words formed a piece of armor in his palm.

He didn't study this word armor now. He put it into his spatial ring and flew toward the hand-shaped tree. Zhang Ruochen put the two Absolute Complete Fruits into his divine tree container.

"What a pity. Yu Wenjing and Blue Fang's bodies already turned to ash. I wonder if the three fruits were on them." Zhang Ruochen sighed.

"Hey, is this..."

Zhang Ruochen stared at the tree's trunk.

He saw a small turtle shell shard embedded in the wood.

It had been embedded there for countless years and had already become part of the tree. If not for Zhang Ruochen's close inspection, he wouldn't have noticed it at all.

"Amazing, amazing."

In the distance, the Amazing Little Taoist's eyes gleamed. He yelled twice and ran toward the saint tree, wanting to take

away the embedded turtle shell shard

Chapter 1690 - Saint Jade Emperor

Chapter 1690: Saint Jade Emperor

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen was even faster. By the time Amazing Little Taoist had arrived, the piece of turtle shell was already in his hand.

“Give it to me!”

Amazing Little Taoist turned into a beam of purple light and flew towards Zhang Ruochen’s palm, wanting to snatch it away.

“Whoosh-”

Zhang Ruochen flashed away and appeared at the entrance of Taoist Garden.

Immediately after, Zhang Ruochen took out another piece of the turtle shell from his Spatial Ring and compared the two pieces. It turned out that the two pieces could actually be pieced together.

The only difference was that the piece of turtle shell from the Saint Tree was bigger.

“It has the same material, and both had people carving out shapes and glyphs on it. It should have been one piece originally, and were all originally on the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror.” Zhang Ruochen mumbled to himself.

“Gimme!”

Amazing Little Taoist jumped on him again, with exceeding speeds.

But it was all in vain as Zhang Ruochen teleported away again.

After this repeated a dozen of times, Amazing Little Taoist didn't even manage to catch Zhang Ruochen's shadow. Amazing Little Taoist frustratedly declared, "Zhang Ruochen! If you do not give the two pieces of turtle shell to me, we cannot even remain as friends! You know how high my cultivation is."

At this moment, Amazing Little Taoist's palms clenched into a fist that was about the size of a goose egg. It was as though showing off his muscles.

Zhang Ruochen took out Time and Space Secret Guide, and asked. "Do we really have to fight?"

Seeing that, Amazing Little Taoist instantly deflated, and tried to defuse the conflict, "I merely wanted to take a look. You know how my spells and cultivation all came from that piece of turtle shell. If I was able to take a look at the other piece, it might very well allow me to breakthrough to the next stage of cultivation. With our relationship, is that even a problem?"

"I remember our relationship is just merely that of cooperation."

Pausing for a while, Zhang Ruochen continued, "That piece of turtle shell from you will be returned to you after we leave the Taoist Garden. But the piece just now was obtained by me. Whether I want to lend it to you for viewing will entirely depend on my mood."

Amazing Little Taoist righteously proclaimed, "Zhang Ruochen, listen to me. Show me the turtle shell and I will check for its authenticity. I am a Taoist, will I lie to you on this? My cultivation is many times that of yours. I take no interest in lying to a small fry like you. Pass it over. I am really just gonna check it for you and will return you once I am done checking."

Zhang Ruochen rolled his eyes, and stated, “I think, since we could find one in the Saint Tree. Perhaps there will be more pieces around here.”

Amazing Little Taoist’s eyes widened, and immediately dashed back into the Tao Garden.

Zhang Ruochen also released his Spiritual Power to investigate, but strangely, this place was rather weird. Any object seemed to be able to block his spiritual power, rendering him to be unable to penetrate beyond the surface to investigate.

It was even worse for underground.

Like a streak of purple light, Amazing Little Taoist dashed around in the Tao Garden. Soon he flipped the entire place upside down, but didn’t obtain anything.

And neither did Zhang Ruochen.

“Whatever, we should leave this place. If King Flame and Queen Ling from the Yin Yang Field are here, we would be in a lot of trouble.” Zhang Ruochen keep eyeing the surroundings, worried about an ambush.

Amazing Little Taoist seemed to be still hung up over the turtle shell, and said, “You go first. Since there appeared one piece of turtle shell, there could definitely be other pieces. I must find it even if I raze this Tao Garden to the ground.”

Amazing Little Taoist dashed to the exterior of the Tao Garden and started to find again.

Zhang Ruochen said, “You are a Hundred-thousand years Saint Medicine. If you land in their hands, even if you are not immediately consumed, you would be brewed into a Saint Pill. Are you sure you don’t want to leave?”

“Whatever King and Queen you were talking about, are they really that strong? With my overwhelming cultivation, how could I fear them? Go, go, if you are really scared, just leave now. I will keep searching for it.”

Zhang Ruochen felt that he was a bit too concerned by the pieces of turtle shell, and said casually, “There should be other

uses to the pieces of turtle shell.”

“How did you know?”

Just as he said it, Amazing Little Taoist realized that he let the cat out of the bag.

Zhang Ruochen smiled, “Tell me what is the other ways of using it. Maybe I will stay behind and look for it with you.”

“Did you think I am stupid? Secrets are only secrets when only I know about it.”

Amazing Little Taoist did not speak much more. He dashed into nearby ruins and continued the search.

But just as he dashed in, an explosion occurred.

Even the earth around seemed to be shaking slightly from the explosion.

Smoking, Amazing Little Taoist came out with his body covered in soot, and shrieked, “Even in this pieces of ruins, there exist ancient inscriptions of Battle Formation. Luckily, I am alert enough and was only struck by one of the attacks before being able to escape. If I was completely caught within.... Ouch, it hurts...”

“Since this used to be a holy place of the Taoist people, it naturally would be dangerous to randomly dash around.”

Amazing Little Taoist asked, “Why are you still here?”

Zhang Ruochen rubbed his chin as he observed the medicine plants growing on the Five Elements Soil, and mumbled, “Strange, how strange.”

Amazing Little Taoist felt a bit nervous by that mumbling, and asked, “What happened?”

Zhang Ruochen replied, “This is a very dangerous place, thus very few people can come here. Furthermore, this place is filled with Five Elements Soil, so logically there should be many ancient medicinal plants growing here. Even those of tens of thousands of age should not be rare. But look here, there are plants here that do not seem to really be that old, and

we could not even find a single plant that is over twenty thousand years old. Isn't that strange by itself?"

Amazing Little Taoist felt it was not strange at all, and instead lambasted him, "Didn't you say that whatever King and Queen could be around? Maybe, they were the ones who had taken the plants before this."

Zhang Ruochen shook his head, and said, "Within the Five Elements Soil, there exist extremely dangerous Battle Formations. Even though King Flame and Queen Ling are powerful, they are still very vulnerable to these Formations. Thus, they are definitely not the ones who took the plants away."

"Then, where do you think those plants went to?"

Just as he asked that, Amazing Little Taoist had a bold hypothesis, and cheered, "Great, that could be amazing. Are you saying that in the bottom of the Tao Garden, there are some ancient bodies buried. They were the ones who had climbed out from underground and ate those Saint Plants?"

Zhang Ruochen replied, "Such could indeed be possible. But even if they climb out from underneath, the first plant they would eat would probably be you, the Hundred-thousand Years Saint Plant."

Amazing Little Taoist seemed to be really fearful of that, and with his legs trembling, he whispered, "Zhang Ruochen, maybe... we should leave..?"

"BOOM"

An explosion echoed from afar. And instantly a pair of powerful Yin Yang forces shoot up into the sky like a beacon.

Amazing Little Taoist was terrified, his legs softened and sat on the ground, and exclaimed, "Zhang Ruochen, quick! Bring me away from here. I don't want to be eaten by an undead."

"What are you howling about?"

Zhang Ruochen stared at him.

Amazing Little Taoist immediately shut up, and looked around. After noticing that there were no undead around, he

heaved a sigh of relief. Then he wondered, “Two streams of cold and hot wind just blew past, what happened?”

“It must be King Flame and Queen Ling.”

Zhang Ruochen’s gaze turned to the direction of the explosion, and solemnly explained, “After receiving Yuwen Jing’s call for help, why did they not rush here to rescue him?”

Amazing Little Taoist stood up again, and after dusting off his pants, coldly said, “Perhaps, they were really collecting Saint Plants.”

“Clang!”

In the direction of the explosion, suddenly, a bright beam of Saintly Light shot out. Zhang Ruochen and Amazing Little Taoist quickly closed their eyes.

The entire Tao Garden seemed to be encased by a white ball of light.

After a short while, the white light finally seemed to subside.

Amazing Little Taoist’s mouth was left agape by what had just happened and asked, “What kind of treasure was that? Zhang Ruochen, did you see?”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head, “Let’s go and check it out.”

“Didn’t you say that King Flame and Queen Ling were two masters? If we go over there, will we be their opponent?”

Amazing Little Taoist seemed to be worried.

“Even if we can’t defeat them, we should still be able to run away.”

Zhang Ruochen was rather curious, what kind of treasure must it be for King Flame and Queen Ling to cast aside the survival of Yuwen Jing?

Activating the Twelve Emperor Buddha Beads to conceal their presence, the duo quickly arrived at a ruin that was a few acres in size.

Within the ruin, there were still sounds of explosions.

At the same time, that blinding white light was also transmitted intermittently outwards.

Entering the ruin and hiding behind a broken wall, Zhang Ruochen finally saw the figure of King Flame and Queen Ling.

Each of them controlled 4 pieces of Divine Bones that were each the side of a small house, and created a Yin Yang Life and Death Formation. Within the Formation, a pristine snow white rabbit was trapped.

The rabbit was about seven meters across in size, and was round and plump. It had a size larger than that of an elephant, and emitted a jade white light from its body.

Amazing Little Taoist was trembling excitedly, and tried his best not to make any sounds.

Only after half a minute did he turn around and transmitted a thought to Zhang Ruochen, “It’s a Saint Jade Emperor... A Saint Jade Emperor !”

“That rabbit is the legendary Saint Jade Emperor?” Zhang Ruochen was rather surprised.

Amazing Little Taoist nodded, and replied, “It must be! It’s real form is a piece of Saint Jade Emperor . I understood why the older plants are all missing! They must all be eaten by this! That’s why it is so powerful.”

Saint Jades had many different levels: Saint Jade, Saint Jade Marrow, and Saint Jade Marrow Essence.

Saint Jade Marrow Essence was also known as a Jade Spirit, and possessed some consciousness.

As long as it continued to absorb Saint Qi and Essence from the world, its cultivation will increase. Once it reached a high enough level, it would be called the Saint Jade Lord.

The cultivation of the Saint Jade Lord was comparable to that of a Saint King.

And above that would be the Saint Jade Emperor.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head, and said, “The cultivation of a Saint Jade Emperor would be comparable to a Supreme Saint.

If that rabbit is really a Saint Jade Emperor, just a tinge of its Saint Might would be able to hold off King Flame and Queen Ling. How could it be trapped?”

Amazing Little Taoist said, “This is the God-naming Platform. Even if Saint Jade Marrow Essence could reach Saint Jade Emperor, it does not have any spells or cultivation techniques to use. Even with its high cultivation level, it did not learn how to release the full might of its power. It is like a Tiger that was raised like a sheep with its teeth and claws taken away. It could only be bullied by others.”

Chapter 1691 - Battling King Yan and Queen Lian

Chapter 1691: Battling King Yan and Queen Lian

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

A piece of saint jade could absorb Holy Qi and Sun-Moon Essence, and ingest saint medicine to reach the Supreme Saint Realm but not have much combat ability. This was hard to believe.

“There must be some relics like the turtle shell shard in the Tao Garden,” Zhang Ruochen said. “Couldn’t that emperor saint jade cultivate from that?”

A bit conceited, the Amazing Little Taoist said, “Do you think that every natural being is as smart as me? Most of them are actually very stupid.”

Kaboom!

In the center of the eight divine bones, the white jade rabbit crashed around, trying to escape.

It was frighteningly fast. With Zhang Ruochen’s eyes, he could only see a blur.

When the rabbit crashed onto the formation from the eight divine bones, the bones would shake violently. King Yan and Queen Lian also retreated.

However, the rabbit didn’t seem to have any tricks other than crashing. It couldn’t break free from the formation at all. Instead, the eight divine bones contracted, leaving fewer and fewer space for the rabbit to move in.

King Yan and Queen Lian grew excited.

As long as they suppressed this emperor saint jade, they'd be able to make it submit completely. By then, they could transfer some techniques and spells to become its teacher. It would mean that they had a Supreme Saint fighter.

Of course, even if they couldn't make it submit, the emperor saint jade was also top-quality material for making Absolute Saint weapons. It was very precious.

Even Supreme Saints wanted the emperor saint jade. How could Zhang Ruochen not be tempted?

However, King Yan and Queen Lian had an immeasurable amount of saint jade. Even if he attacked secretly, it was impossible to injure them severely. Plus, even if he succeeded, it wasn't easy to suppress the white jade rabbit either.

It was too fast. Once it broke free from the eight divine bones, no one here would be able to catch up to it.

While Zhang Ruochen was thinking of the best plan, the Amazing Little Taoist rushed out of the broken wall and yelled at King Yan and Queen Lian, "Let go of that rabbit!"

Zhang Ruochen was taken aback. He started cursing inside.

He'd planned on using spatial power for a sneak attack on King Yan and Queen Lian. If he could injure one severely, dealing with the other would be much easier.

Who would've guessed that the Amazing Little Taoist was so childish?

He made a gesture at Zhang Ruochen that meant "I got this" and sent a telepathic message. "Don't worry. I already saw through their cultivations. They're both peak sixth step or in the beginning of the seventh step Saint King Realm. Nothing to be afraid of. You just go take over the eight divine bones. After I take care of them, I'll naturally be able to take control of the emperor saint jade. I got everything. Just do what I say."

The Amazing Little Taoist was extremely confident. He strode toward King Yan and Queen Lian with the confidence of having control over everything.

King Yan's eyes were like two fireballs. He recognized the Amazing Little Taoist's true form and immediately smiled. "Ancient saint medicine of 100,000 years. This is quite rare. If I ingest and refine it, my cultivation will instantly break past the bottleneck and reach the seventh step. It's not impossible for me to try for the eighth step in a short period either.

"Control the Yin Yang Life and Death Formation. I'll go take it down."

Queen Lian scanned the ruins and said, "Be careful. Earlier, Yu Wenjing had called out for help. A mere 100,000-year-old saint medicine won't make it impossible for Yu Wenjing to escape. There might be another strong figure hiding nearby."

King Yan nodded solemnly. Then his muscular three-meter-tall body rushed toward the Amazing Little Taoist, ready for a fast battle.

The Amazing Little Taoist ground his teeth in anger. "You look down on me! You're dead! No one in the entire world can save you now..."

His voice cut off abruptly and terror appeared on his face.

King Yan, who was diving over, had nine types of aggressive fire coming out of him. He turned this place into a fire domain. Walking out of the flames, King Yan was like a horrible demon with a terrifyingly strong aura.

The Amazing Little Taoist clearly had a higher cultivation, but he actually felt suppressed.

Kaboom!

The moment that he was dazed, King Yan struck with a handprint. It fell from the sky, crushing down on his head.

"Mountain-Moving Print."

The Amazing Little Taoist quickly cast a mid-level palm spell. He pushed up with both hands, clashing violently with King Yan's palm print.

Kaboom!

The ground under the flaming handprint cracked open. A lot of dust flew out.

King Yan was a bit surprised. “You’re actually skilled in a mid-level spell and blocked my palm. This is interesting.”

The Amazing Little Taoist pushed up with all his might and couldn’t move. It was like holding up a collapsed sky. He was speechless. This king wasn’t even a seventh step Saint King. His combat ability was too crazy!

“Refine!”

Nine types of flames spewed out of King Yan’s palm. This included Divine Fire Jingmie at the official flames level.

Even Zhang Ruochen feared this level of Divine Fire Jingmie, because his was still at the common level.

No wonder he’s the leader of his generation in Yin and Yang Field. He’s indeed very strong. The Amazing Little Taoist is at the seventh step, but he was crushed with one move. Zhang Ruochen shook his head.

Of course, the Amazing Little Taoist’s physique and techniques were special. He wasn’t an ordinary being and he wasn’t any weaker than King Yan. Thus, it was mostly because of his lack of experience that he was suppressed.

King Yan had walked on countless bodies to reach his current level.

The Amazing Little Taoist compared the emperor saint jade to a tiger without teeth, claws, or battle intent. But even if he himself had teeth, claws, and battle intent, he was still a tiger who’d never preyed on anyone. If he reached a truly strong figure, he could only get beaten.

“Save me...” he cried out. “He’s going to turn me into medicine soup!”

Zhang Ruochen pulled out his Clear Sky Bow and Shining Sun Arrow, aiming at King Yan.

King Yan sensed murderous intent and stared at the faraway wall.

Boom!

Behind the wall, a beam of white light flew out with explosive sounds. It went straight for King Yan's forehead.

He extended a barrel-sized arm, fingers spread out. White fire poured out of his palm and blocked the Shining Sun Arrow. He swung his arm and the arrow flew out sideways. It landed in the ruins with a thud.

King Yan is so powerful. He caught the Shining Sun Arrow so easily. Seems like I still have quite a distance from him. Zhang Ruochen sighed.

“Your arrow isn't even qualified to scratch me. Why don't you show yourself? Do you want me to invite you out?”

As soon as he finished, an extremely weak feeling arose within him. His Holy Qi couldn't run smoothly and he couldn't use power. His knees felt weak too.

That Shining Sun Arrow had three time prints carved in it. Zhang Ruochen had created it before to kill the Thousand Star Maiden.

King Yan had stopped the arrow easily, but of the three time prints, one fell onto his body. It cut off close to 100 years of his lifespan.

The Amazing Little Taoist felt the pressure above him lessen. He immediately yelled, “Sky-Turning Print.”

Many Rules of Palm Way combined with the palm technique and hit King Yan's palm, sending him flying back. Blood flowed out of King Yan's arm.

Whoosh!

A purple vine flew from Queen Lian's wrist. It wrapped around King Yan's waist and pulled him back. “What's wrong?”

“My saint soul became weak, my spirit has fallen, and my blood has wilted.”

King Yan had fought hundreds of battles and was very wise. He already guessed what the problem was. “That arrow is

strange. You can't get close to it."

Behind the wall, Zhang Ruochen had already nocked the arrow and pointed it at Queen Lian.

Twang!

The bow sounded.

The Shining Sun Arrow transformed into a beam of light and instantly arrived before King Yan and Queen Lian.

Unable to focus on the divine bones, Queen Lian grabbed King Yan's arm. She immediately used a physical technique to avoid the Shining Sun Arrow.

Boom!

The trapped white jade rabbit took this chance to crash against a divine bone. It actually created a crack.

"No, stop it!" King Yan said.

Queen Lian flew over immediately.

Sadly, she was late. A beam of white light shot out of the formation. It swept up a gale that flashed past her.

The white jade rabbit escaped!

"Hurry and fight back!" Zhang Ruochen yelled.

"Don't worry. You stop those two strong figures for a moment. I have more than enough ways to take down that emperor saint jade."

The Amazing Little Taoist pressed on the ground. Purple light instantly poured out. "Universal Net, up!"

It was another detailed mid-level saint spell with at least 10,000 rules.

The Amazing Little Taoist raised his arms and a large purple net flew up from the ground. It caught the white jade rabbit that wanted to escape.

"Haha, do you see? This is my true level." He glanced at Zhang Ruochen.

"You dare to steal the treasure that I have my eyes on? Die!"

King Yan circulated his Holy Qi and recovered. Flashing as a streak of firelight, he struck with a fist print and attacked the Amazing Little Taoist.

He added Rules of Truth into this punch, so it was countless times stronger than before.

Before the fist print could land on the Amazing Little Taoist, he already let out a scream and was sent flying by the force. That tiny body actually had cracks.

King Yan hadn't used the Rules of Truth and could already defeat the Amazing Little Taoist. After using it, their gap was even larger.

The Amazing Little Taoist shut his eyes tightly. His purple glow faded and it was unknown whether he was alive or not.

Chapter 1692 - Meeting Tianchu

Chapter 1692: Meeting Tianchu

As the formation lost the energy source, the white rabbit was no longer imprisoned. Its pair of eyes looked around briefly for any further threats, before dashing off as a white light.

Zhang Ruochen's response was extremely quick. At the very moment that the Amazing Little Taoist was flung away, he made the accurate judgement and jumped onto the rabbit's back.

No matter what, he could not let the Saint Jade Emperor escape.

King Flame seemed to be ecstatic and he dashed to Amazing Little Taoist with both of his arms outstretched, his eyes expressing unimaginable joy.

A single Hundred-thousand year saint plant, if he was to eat it, he could immediately be one of the strongest among Truth Heavenly Domain. It could also be possible that he could cross the Sixth Layer of the Sea Domain.

As long as he crossed that, he would be granted 32 months of time to refine his cultivation in the Truth Godly Palace. After that, how many people below the cultivation of Supreme Saint could actually match him?

The more he thought about it, King Flame got happier, and even his blood seemed to be boiling.

It seemed like the Hundred-thousand Years Medicine Plant was just about to fall into his hands.

Suddenly, the space shook, and the object of his dreams disappeared.

For King Flame, it was as though he fell from heaven to hell.

Being briefly stunned, he was enraged, and stared at the man standing on top of the white rabbit, and roared, “Spatial Cultivator! Use the Divine Bones and block him and the Saint Jade Emperor!”

When King Flame was fighting with Amazing Little Taoist, Queen Ling had already taken action. Controlling the eight pieces of Divine Bones, she wanted to suppress the Jade white rabbit again.

Unfortunately, the rabbit’s speed was extremely fast. In just a blink of the eye, it had already dashed out of the ruins, and escaped the Tao Garden. It was running on the Bloodearth Field outside.

Sitting on it, Zhang Ruochen felt as though he was going to be flung out, and quickly took out a Ten-thousand Pattern Saint Weapon and used it to leash the Jade-white rabbit. Only then he was about to secure his body.

“Is this the Supreme Saint level of speed? It is faster than my fastest speed by seven to eight times. With such speeds, even if I use teleportation it would be useless to escape from this.”

One thing to note was that this rabbit was merely running based on instincts. It had not practiced any form of spells. Else, the speed it would display would be even faster.

Facing the likes of King Flame and Queen Ling, Zhang Ruochen did not dare to use the likes of Time and Space Secret Guide.

They were very experienced in fighting, and are always on high alert. With their supreme reflexes, they would be quickly able to escape from the area covered by the Time and Space Secret Guide. If he was to be unable to lock them down, not only Zhang Ruochen would expose one of his Trump cards, he would land himself in a situation where he would find it difficult to fight back.

After all, King Flame and Queen Ling had cultivation levels much higher than himself.

“Amazing, Amazing.”

Zhang Ruochen tried to call for the Amazing Little Taoist, but received no reply.

Unfortunately, he did not understand the Saint Medicine's body, so he could not check for its situation.

Talking about which, he still had some kind of friendship with Amazing Little Taoist, so he would naturally be quite worried that the spirit had already been destroyed by King Flame.

Zhang Ruochen took out a small bottle of the Spring of Life, and after some hesitation, he poured it over the Amazing Little Taoist.

That Spring of Life was taken from the bottom of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree, and Zhang Ruochen was only able to collect such a small bottle.

After being given the Spring of Life, Amazing Little Taoist's presence seemed to be a bit stronger. The cracks on his body glowed white and seemed to be healing.

“Hopefully, he could still wake up.”

Suddenly a gust of wind that seemed to be hot and cold at the same time blew towards him. That made his face change, and quickly he stuffed Amazing Little Taoist into a pocket, and turned around.

King Flame and Queen Ling were actually running towards him.

“How could this be? Their speed could actually match that of a Supreme Saint?” Zhang Ruochen found it hard to believe.

King Flame and Queen Ling had Fleeting Light Rune Scrolls that were made by a Supreme Saint level Rune Scrolls Saint Master. That was originally for them to run for their lives if something goes wrong, but they had no choice but to use it to obtain the Hundred-thousand Saint Plant and Saint Jade Emperor.

Within the Fleeting Light Rune Scrolls, there were not only Rune Scrolls Inscriptions, there were also the power of a Supreme Saint and the Rules of the Way of the Fleeting Light.

“You can’t run away. If you surrender, perhaps we would leave you alive.” Queen Ling’s voice entered Zhang Ruochen’s ears.

With their speeds, they had already broken the sound barrier, so naturally Queen Ling had transmitted that voice spiritually.

As a reply, Zhang Ruochen took out his Clear Sky Bow, and Shining Sun Arrow, and shot towards them.

Queen Ling and King Flame’s face changed, and quickly took evasive maneuvers.

With just that, the distance between them got pulled apart again.

King Flame’s face was black, and shouted, “Yin Yang Life and Death Formation!”

With all of King Flame and Queen Ling’s power, the eight pieces of divine bones flew out and formed a spinning circle in the sky. With a speed that was even faster than the Fleeting Light Rune Scroll, the bones flew towards Zhang Ruochen.

As the Yin Yang Life and Death Formation spinning, even the sky seemed to be spinning with it. Sometimes it was day, sometimes it was night, with howling wind and constant Thunder and Lightning. It almost caught up to Zhang Ruochen.

However, at this moment, the rabbit finally reached the edge of the Bloodearth Plains, and a towering mountain appeared in front of them.

A part of that mountain seemed to be encased by darkness, and from within that darkness, one could catch an occasional glimpse of lightning. It was like hell.

As for the other part that was in the light, there were many palaces and buildings, with light shining into the heavens and Saintly Qi overflowing. It gave a feeling of divine holiness.

Zhang Ruochen’s face lit up, as his hand grabbed even tighter on the chains trying to control the rabbit to run towards the mountain.

If he entered there, perhaps he could rid himself King Flame and Queen Ling’s pursuit.

At this moment, a familiar voice that was exceedingly melodic and pleasing sounded, and cautioned him, “Careful, that is a very dangerous ancient ruin. There were inscriptions of the ancient gods there. If you were to rush into it recklessly you would surely die.”

At the bottom of the mountain, in a rainbow colored sea, there was a Saint Carriage.

In front of the carriage, there were eight white feathered Peacocks standing in formation. Every of them were pristine white, glowing with an aura of holiness.

That was Fairy Tianchu’s carriage.

Zhang Ruochen quickly thought about it, and used the Time and Space Secret Guide to keep the Rabbit. After which, he dashed to the white peacock carriage, and said, “Fairy, King Flame and Queen Ling want to kill me. Help me, and I will help you to collect the Holy Spring.”

In a flash, the Yin Yang Life and Death Formation had already flown atop Zhang Ruochen and was about to suppress him. The soil below was being blown away by the howling gusts created by the pressure.

In the Saint Carriage, Fairy Tianchu’s voice sounded again, “Peacock Spread.”

The eight Peacocks on the ground flew up together, and spread their tails and each sending out a massive wave of energy that clashed with the Yin Yang Life and Death Formation.

One must understand that White Peacock Saint Carriage was actually an Eight-Yao Ten-thousand Pattern Saint Weapon. Moreover, when the user was someone as powerful as Fairy Tianchu, it was unimaginable how powerful the attack would be.

Standing on the ground, Zhang Ruochen looked up at the eight Peacocks that were each the size of a small mountain, with countless inscriptions appearing on their bodies.

“Boom!”

The clash between the eight divine bones and the eight peacocks lasted only about one breath.

The result was that the Yin Yang Life and Death Formation was shattered, and the eight divine bones were sent flying away.

At this moment, King Flame and Queen Ling caught up, and stopped about 7-8 miles away to collect the Divine Bones.

Seeing the White Peacock Saint Carriage, they frowned.

King Flame stated, "That human guy is my prey. Fairy won't offend me and Queen Ling just because of someone like him, right?"

From the carriage, Fairy's voice replied, "He is a member of the Ancient Civilization Sect. Since I am here, of course I would protect him. Please don't make matters difficult for me. Maybe you could let him off?"

If it was any other issue, King Flame perhaps would have really let this matter go. Even disregarding her own cultivation level, there were a few who matched his abilities among her admirers.

However, that human had both the Saint Jade Emperor and the Hundred-thousand Year Saint Medicine Plant. Furthermore, they already already used a piece of the Fleeting Light Runic Scrolls. All things considered, how could they let this matter go just because of a single sentence by Fairy Tianchu?

King Flame growled, "That human is something that the two of us will definitely kill no matter what. Please consider this seriously, such that you would not end up making two powerful enemies."

Queen Ling was a bit more relaxed, as she smiled, and said, "We do not want to make enemies out of Fairy, but as long as you do not interfere, how about we owe you a favor?"

Zhang Ruochen stood not far away from the white Peacock Carriage, and felt a bit worried. After all, he had never been too close to the Fairy, yet King Flame and Queen Ling were powerful foes. For all he knew, Fairy Tianchu might succumb to pressure and let him fend for himself.

Releasing his spiritual power, he started to look for a path out in the direction of the mountain.

As long as the situation turned for the worse, he would immediately make a run for the ancient mountains. Even if there were inscriptions left by the Ancient Gods, it would probably be better than facing King Flame and Queen Ling.

After being quiet for a short while, Fairy Tianchu's voice sounded from within the carriage, "Since we could not compromise, then let's battle."

King Flame frowned deeply, and looked at Queen Ling.

Following which, they dashed out together, but in different directions.

From within King Flame's bodies came nine different types of flames, turning the area around into a sea of flames. A gigantic flame demon with two horns on the head appeared, and using its twenty meter long fist, he smashed towards the white Peacock Carriage.

Queen Ling, on the other hand, dashed out at high speed, and wanted to suppress Zhang Ruochen with the eight pieces of divine bones.

"Boom!"

Before even reaching Zhang Ruochen, she heard an explosion behind her.

The gigantic flame demon was defeated and shattered by a single gust of energy coming from within the Peacock Carriage, and turned into a rain of flames. Even King Flame was sent flying ten miles away.

Queen Ling was utterly shocked, as she had not expected that King Flame would be defeated so quickly.

"Whoosh!"

An extremely thin thread of white light flew out from within the Saint Carriage, and extended for about thirty feet forming circles of light, and quickly approached Queen Ling.

"Rain Thread Divine Sword!"

Recognizing the source of that thread of light, Queen Ling's face turned solemn.

She had no choice but to abandon catching Zhang Ruochen, and using a Physical Technique that was on the level of a Mid-level Saint Spell, she turned into dozens of beautiful figures that all dodged away from the white threads of light.

Even then, after dodging about ten times, the thread caught her by the waist and threw her out.

Falling on the ground, she quickly checked that she was not cut into half by the thread, heaved a sigh of relief.

Chapter 1693 - Six-Yao

Chapter 1693: Six-Yao

“She actually forced back King Yan and Queen Lian by herself.”

Zhang Ruochen knew that he'd underestimated Fairy Tianchu. She was too strong. Prides like these would make those old guys who'd lived for thousands of years embarrassed.

It made sense though. Fairy Tianchu, the Great Senior, and the Wizard God Emperor fought squarely against the half Supreme Saint monster. Naturally, she had extraordinary powers.

Zhang Ruochen hadn't cultivated for as long as her, so there was naturally a difference in ability too.

Fairy Tianchu's voice was light but with a bit of coldness. “I already held back just now. If you don't retreat now, you will die.”

Her strength was far beyond what King Yan and Queen Lian had predicted. These two were powerful leaders of Yin and Yang Field. Finally, they had a feeling that someone else was stronger than them.

Queen Lian, who'd always looked sexy, now had sweat rolling down her porcelain face.

However, it was impossible for them to give up on the emperor saint jade and 100,000-year-old saint medicine.

“Go all out. Activate the strongest form of the Yin Yang Life and Death Formation,” King Yan said. “The sky and earth are split between yin and yang.”

Queen Lian moved with rhythmic steps. She walked in a seven-pointed star pattern and stood across from King Yan. “All beings are split between life and death,” she recited.

The eight divine bones flew up and spun around them gradually.

Powerful masculine Yang Qi and extremely frigid Yin Qi flowed out of King Yan and Queen Lian respectively. The Yin Yang Life and Death Formation instantly turned into the yin yang symbol.

Within miles in radius, the ground was either a tundra or a fiery plain.

King Yan and Queen Lian's cultivations overlapped in the formation.

The formation also lured out the rules in the divine bones. All Yin and Yang Qi in the world gathered over. Their auras were more than doubled from before.

This is the true form of the Yin Yang Life and Death Formation, Zhang Ruochen thought. King Yan and Queen Lian have become the formation eyes and are using the power of the divine bones.

This technique was similar to Yu Wenjing's Twelve Palace Divine Formation. They were both ancient spells but more powerful.

Fairy Tianchu grew serious too. The carriage's curtain was lifted by a mass of saint light.

Her pure and beautiful figure sat in the carriage. A ring on her finger transformed into the Rain Thread Divine Sword in the form of threads of white light and flew out again.

The white threads of light had Sword Way Xuangang on them.

Whoosh!

The white threads only had to drag across the ground and they would leave a bottomless crack.

Whoosh, whoosh!

The white light became denser and squiggled around. It formed a sword net, wrapping tightly around the Yin Yang Life and Death Formation.

"Up!" King Yan roared.

The formation started spinning like a millstone, releasing domineering power. It clashed against the Rain Thread Divine

Sword, producing a string of explosions.

The Yin Yang Life and Death Formation couldn't break past the sword net, but it moved slowly toward the White Feather Peacock Carriage.

The Rain Thread Divine Sword was indeed powerful. It was known to be indestructible and impenetrable. But the eight divine bones outside the Yin Yang Life and Death Formation were also impenetrable.

Zhang Ruochen held his breath. He was thinking about what solution could break King Yan and Queen Lian's move.

But he discovered with a shock that, after the formation started operating, the space became extremely stable. It was too hard to break the space and destroy the formation!

Unless he'd reached the fourth step of Saint King Realm.

He also had to be outside God-Naming Mountain to do it. The spatial structure there was abnormal. If his cultivation wasn't strong enough, he couldn't release strong power at all.

Perhaps, he could only fight against them easily in the mortal world.

If he didn't use spatial power and used other power, it would be even harder to counter the Yin Yang Life and Death Formation. Perhaps only people like Su Jing, lord of Guanghan Field, who'd fought with ninth step Saint Kings before, could hold up against them.

In the saint carriage, Fairy Tianchu's expression didn't change. Instead, she pulled her Rain Thread Divine Sword back. "I underestimated you two before. Your Yin Yang Life and Death Formation is quite strong. Those eight divine bones must be the bones of some god, right?"

"There is a world inside a god's cranium. A god's skull is the sky and earth."

When she said these words, layers of light ripples emerged on the saint carriage. There were instantly five levels, unleashing the Five Yao Complete Power.

Zhang Ruochen hurriedly backtracked, putting distance between him and the carriage.

With his current cultivation, it was as hard as walking into the sky to unleash Four Yao Complete Power. Even if he did, he would use up all his Holy Qi after one strike.

How powerful was Five Yao Complete Power?

Whoosh!

A sixth layer of light appeared on the saint carriage.

However, it was a bit darker. It still lacked a bit compared to Six Yao Complete Power.

Even so, seeing a sixth layer of light appear on the carriage shocked King Yan and Queen Lian. They spat out blood, spraying onto the eight divine bones.

Kaboom.

The Yin Yang Life and Death Formation spun even more furiously and crashed at the galloping White Feather Peacock Saint Carriage.

In an instant, the entire world turned into night. It was frigid.

Wild power spread out, hitting Zhang Ruochen. He was forced to pull up a Sword Way domain to stop the power that had spread out.

“Who won?”

He stared hard into the center of the windstorm.

Gradually, the darkness disappeared. Sainly white light took over Zhang Ruochen’s sight.

Fairy Tianchu remained sitting cross-legged in the saint carriage. Her black hair flew in the wind. The windchimes on the carriage clinked like lovely music.

Before her, all land within miles in radius became pitted and had a look of ruin.

Blood flowed out of King Yan’s mouth. He half-knelt on the ground and was badly injured.

Queen Lian's delicate frame stood behind King Yan. She clutched her stomach with a jade-like hand. Her face was as pale as paper. Earlier, if King Yan hadn't blocked the attack for her with his strong defensive abilities, she probably would've gotten more injured.

Jealousy and resentment appeared in her eyes. "Fairy Tianchu, you indeed live up to your name. I see now! Let's go."

Queen Lian grabbed King Yan's shoulder. A river of Yin Qi appeared under her feet and they disappeared from Zhang Ruochen's line of sight in the blink of an eye.

So powerful. She defeated King Yan and Queen Lian without even getting out of the carriage. This Fairy Tianchu is just like Ji Fanxin. They're not flowerpots. They're true queen bees. No wonder so many prides pursue them like crazy. One can imagine that marrying either of them will help them gain great support—both with their own abilities and the forces behind them.

Zhang Ruochen walked toward the White Feather Peacock Saint Carriage. He bowed. "Thank you, Fairy, for helping me."

She stared deeply at Zhang Ruochen. "You took the emperor saint jade's booklet earlier. What treasure is that?"

"Emperor saint jade? What's that?" Zhang Ruochen pretended to be confused.

Fairy Tianchu wore a veil, so he couldn't see her current expression. "If not for a treasure like the emperor saint jade, why would King Yan and Queen Lian fight me to the death? Don't worry, I won't steal it from you. I'm only interested in the booklet that can restrain the emperor saint jade."

It was their first meeting. They hadn't had any interactions before, so Zhang Ruochen naturally didn't trust her.

The emperor saint jade was material for creating Absolute Saint weapons. Even Supreme Saints were tempted. Why wouldn't she try to steal it?

However, he knew that Fairy Tianchu still needed to use his spatial power to seize the divine spring, so she wouldn't rob him of the jade for now.

Thus, Zhang Ruochen insisted on denying it. “Are you speaking of that white jade rabbit? It’s actually just a saint jade. It’s not an emperor saint jade yet and it’s not hard to collect it.”

Suddenly, he noticed a bit of blood come out of the corner of Fairy Tianchu’s lips.

“Fairy, are you hurt?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

She coughed twice and smiled. “King Yan and Queen Lian are both powerful figures who can move the universe, especially after they team up. With their level, it’s not easy for me to deal with them even if I wasn’t hurt.”

“You were already hurt before you fought with them?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Earlier, when I forged into this ancient mountain, I was hit by an ancient pattern and was a bit injured.”

Zhang Ruochen finally understood why Fairy Tianchu didn’t come out of the carriage to fight with King Yan and Queen Lian. She was hurt and couldn’t come out.

The so-called “a bit injured” must be very serious.

Fairy Tianchu must be worried that I’ll take advantage of this to defeat her, Zhang Ruochen thought. That’s why she’s pretending that her injuries are nothing.

One must be cautious against others.

Fairy Tianchu and Zhang Ruochen were the same type of people.

Zhang Ruochen wasn’t the type to take advantage of another’s troubles. “Then, you should heal first. I will guard you.”

Fairy Tianchu nodded and closed the carriage curtains.

Zhang Ruochen started thinking deep down. Fairy Tianchu must already know of the existence of the emperor saint jade, but she won’t try to take it before getting the divine spring.

Anyway, she doesn’t know my true identity now. Even if she knows about the emperor saint jade, she’s not a threat to me. If

I transform, she won't recognize me at all. The Thousand Star Maiden probably won't tell her my identity either.

After he thought clearly about how to interact with Fairy Tianchu for now, how to escape, and other questions, he grew composed. He was confident now.

Queen Lian and King Yan definitely wouldn't give up. He had to use Fairy Tianchu's power to intimidate them now.

He also had to use her power to receive the divine spring more easily.

Of course, his current need was to reach the fourth step Saint King Realm as quickly as possible. By then, he'd be able to fight back if he met people at the same level as King Yan and Queen Lian.

While Fairy Tianchu was healing, Zhang Ruochen took out the saint medicine and fruit for improving cultivation. He ate them all and started refining them.

Chapter 1694 - Divine Fire Jingmie, evolved

Chapter 1694: Divine Fire Jingmie, evolved

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Since trading for the large amount of Saint Fruits and Saint Herbs with the Ancient Civilization Sect, he did not have much time to consume and absorb them. Only now did he have time to quickly increase his cultivation level.

Before long, he managed to finish digesting all the Saint Fruits and Herbs he carried with him.

The number of Rules of Saintly Way had almost doubled, with the total being about ninety thousand.

Within his lower abdomen, the Heaven Pass River had broadened, with the ninety thousand Saintly Rules swimming within like dragons and snakes. That made Zhang Ruochen ever more powerful.

Even then, he seemed to be a bit lacking in his cultivation level compared to the level of the Fourth-step Saint King.

Since the Heaven Pass River had only broadened, the speed at which the rules moved within did not actually increase in speed.

“I could already feel that the Heaven Pass River is shaking. If I could obtain a few more Peerless Saint Fruit, or Saint Herbs that is even more ancient, I would be able to reach the next step.” Zhang Ruochen quietly muttered.

That said, given his drastic increase in power, in his current state he could easily defeat the experts like Blue Fang and

Yuwen Jing.

Then again, the difference between having a breakthrough and not having one is like night and day. It would have made him incomparable to before.

“Swish!”

The curtains of the Saint Carriage opened, and three Saint Fruits and a sixty-thousand year old Saint Medicine Plant flew out.

Fairy Tianchu’s voice could be heard, “Take it, it’s a gift.”

After grabbing that three Saint Fruit and that Saint Herb, he could immediately tell that within a huge amount of energy is within them. They seemed to be found within this ancient ruins, and each was in itself an invaluable item.

“As expected, Fairy Tianchu is still cautious of me. She is keeping an eye on me even now.”

Regardless of what motive Fairy Tianchu had, this move improved her image in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes drastically.

Afterall, Zhang Ruochen had already promised her to help her to obtain the Holy Spring. She definitely did not have to give him anything else.

In fact, helping Zhang Ruochen to improve his cultivation had no benefit to her at all.

“Don’t think too much. I merely wanted to make a friend. I am also confident of Chen Jing’s judgement. A man that she could take notice of would definitely not be a devious person.” It was then Fairy Tianchu’s voice sounded again.

“Since Fairy treats me so sincerely, it is only nature for me to return the favor.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded, and consumed another Saint Fruit.

The first fruit was already enough to increase the number of Rules of Saintly Way by about four thousand. The motions of the Heaven Pass River became more intense. This was indeed a sign that he was about to make a breakthrough.

Zhang Ruochen carried on, and consumed the rest all at once.

At that moment, Saint Light covered his body as a unique fragrance was emitted out from him.

Within his lower abdomen came a loud rumbling, as though there was a thunderstorm brewing. Sometimes, the Saint Qi emitted outwards, sometimes, Saint Qi was being channeled inwards. Before his cultivation level had increased, his physical body and the Saint Soul had started to evolve.

“Breaking through to the Fourth-step Saint King would trigger an evolution on the level of life?” Zhang Ruochen was rather surprised himself.

One must understand that only when making major breakthroughs across different cultivation levels will there usually be evolution on the level of life.

For example:

Below the Fish-Dragon realm, all are just normal humans.

The Fish-Dragon realm would be the transition from a normal human to a Half-Saint

And since Half-Saint and a normal human are different levels in the Levels of Life, a Half-Saint would have a drastically longer lifespan.

The same could be said of a Saint and a Half-Saint. And that also applies to between a Saint King and a Saint, where there Saint King could live to a thousand years and beyond.

But such evolution happening with breaking through from the Third-step Saint King to Fourth-step Saint King was something that Zhang Ruochen had not expected at all.

Within his lower abdomen, there was an even more surprising change.

As Zhang Ruochen’s Saint Qi followed the methods in the Eighth level of the Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture, the Divine Fire Jingmie that was suspended within his lower abdomen turned into a threads of fire, and merged with the Saint Qi which then entered his meridians.

At the start, Zhang Ruochen was completely shocked as he was worried that he could not control the Divine Fire Jingmie.

That was because, as long as there was the slightest of error, all of his meridians could suffer irreparable damage, and even his body could be torched into mere dust.

After all, since ancient times, those who self-ignited due to the backlash of failing to control the Divine Fire was actually not that rare even amongst geniuses and experts.

But as the Divine Fire Jingmie circulated within his body, Zhang Ruochen discovered that the originally blue color flames had become a translucent white flame.

That is... Official Flames.

Divine Fire Jingmie had finally evolved from ordinary flames to official flames.

Zhang Ruochen was ecstatic, and thought: Emperor Ming Nine-Sky Scriptures could even assist in the cultivation of Divine Fire Jingmie. This was such an unexpected surprise.

Following with Zhang Ruochen concentrated on refining his cultivation, and gradually, all the ordinary flames had transformed into official flames.

Even though it seemed like it was just a simple increase in rank, the power of Diving Fire Jingmie had increased exponentially.

Official flames could smelt and refine Zhang Ruochen's Saint Qi to become even more condensed. That meant that the quality of his Saint Qi was much higher than before as well.

Zhang Ruochen's body now was like a furnace.

The Divine Fire Jingmie was like the flames in the furnace that could temper everything within his body to become tougher and more powerful. That even included Saint Soul and Saintly Source.

"The number of Rules of Saint Way had reached a hundred and ten thousand, with the speed of the Heaven Pass River significantly faster. I should have indeed broken through to the Fourth-step Saint King." Zhang Ruochen finally smiled.

With his current power, with the flip of his hand, he could suppress Blue Fang. Within a few moves, he could kill Yuwen

Jing.

Thinking of them, Zhang Ruochen took out the two treasures that the two of them had obtained, wanting to tinker with them to find out more.

First, it was the Word Armor of Blue Fang.

That armor was made of three thousand six hundred and ninety three words. Every word could either be an unique individual, and could merge with other words.

And each word alone could be either a shield, or a flying dart.

That meant it could both defend and attack.

“These words seem quite special. There is the presence of the Supreme Saint on it.”

After thinking about it carefully, he activated his new Divine Fire Jingmie and started to remove the remaining presence of Blue Fang on the Word Armor.

Whoosh-

Zhang Ruochen injected his Saint Qi in to the armor

At the instance, the Word Armor suddenly dissipated and turned into individual words and floated to the sky, arranged neatly.

“Rhapsody of Enlightenment.”

Zhang Ruochen was surprised. He had not expected that the Word Armor was actually a work of literature that was filled with deep philosophical implications.

Not only that, that prose above his head emitted an aura of the Supreme Saint, and gave him immense pressure.

Fairy Tianchu explained, “That was a summary of a Supreme Saint on his cultivation. His spiritual powers were remaining within it, and possibly along with even his Way.”

Zhang Ruochen lightly nodded.

This prose was similar to Kunlun Field’s Saint Book Ruzu of the Confucian Sect.

The only difference was that the ones who wrote those Saint Books had reached an apex of power, and as such the power of those books would naturally be beyond that of the Rhapsody of Enlightenment.

Of course, that did not mean that it was weak. Back then, only by using Fire God Fist Armor was Zhang Ruochen able to penetrate its defenses.

“Return.”

Zhang Ruochen lightly commanded.

The words floating in the air swirled and returned, covering Zhang Ruochen, and forming an armor of words.

Zhang Ruochen carefully examined it, and stated, “This was indeed befitting of the summary by a Supreme Saint. Wearing it felt as though the remnants of the Supreme Saint’s power was added to me. No wonder Blue Fang was able to be stronger than me back there.”

Fairy Tianchu walked out of the Saint Carriage and stood gently on the ground. Wearing the veil, she seemed like a deity from the heavens.

“Has Fairy’s wounds recovered?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Fairy Tianchu kept the White Peacock Carriage, and replied, “I have mostly recovered, and all is well. Isn’t that Armor of Enlightenment Blue Fang’s treasure? Did you kill him?”

“The consequences of killing others in God-naming Platform is rather severe. Moreover, with Blue Fang’s abilities, it would be extremely difficult for me to kill him. This armor was found lying around.”

Fairy Tianchu naturally did not believe him. After all, anyone who killed others in the God-naming Platform would deny it.

Zhang Ruochen then took out the twelve pieces of Divine Bones and passed to Fairy Tianchu, and smiled, “This was picked up from the same place. I would like to gift this to you in return for the Saint Fruits and Saint Herbs you had given me just now.”

“This is Yuwen Jing’s Twelve Palace Divine Formation! Did you also kill Yuwen Jing?” Fairy Tianchu could not help but to re-examine this human before her. He was really too daring, and dared to even kill Godly Disciples.

Zhang Ruochen shrugged, “I merely found them lying around.”

Twelve Palace Divine Formation was indeed a rather powerful formation, and could bring about powers of Heaven and Earth by invoking the rules within the bones. However, they were a dangerous treasure. Fairy Tianchu would naturally not want it.

Zhang Ruochen sighed, “Since Fairy doesn’t want it, guess Lin Yue could only repay your kindness another day.”

“If you could obtain the Holy Spring for me, I will owe you a favour.” Fairy Tianchu declared.

Zhang Ruochen stared into Fairy Tianchu’s eyes for a moment, and quietly remarked, “If I were to be able to get the Holy Spring for you, given your promise, shouldn’t you marry me?”

Fairy Tianchu did not show a sign change in emotion, and replied, “You are not such a person. I already know that your willpower is unimaginably strong. Below a Supreme Saint, I had never see any living creature with willpower that is stronger than yours.”

“You can see willpower?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Fairy Tianchu answered, “There is a treasure that prevents others from detecting your willpower, and you seemed to be using some kind of secret spell to further cover it up. Yet, I could still roughly see it.”

“Why did you think I always wanted to maintain a good relationship with you? It was really because of your massive willpower. For someone like you, even if you do not have supreme complete body constitution, as long as your willpower remains firm, you would definitely become a powerful being in the world.”

“For someone like you, how could you be affected by lust? That promise I made, had no effect on you at all.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled, “I never thought that Fairy would think so highly of an unknown person like me. Should I feel honored?”

“Unknown? I don’t think so.”

Fairy Tianchu’s expression was solemn, and continued, “Actually, I am more curious, how did you manage to practice your willpower to reach such heights? Even if the Invincible Might is used to suppress you, you would probably not relent.”

Chapter 1695 - They All Died

Chapter 1695: They All Died

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“If someone experienced enough failures and torment but can still live on, then their spirit must be very strong.” Zhang Ruochen chuckled wryly.

Fairy Tianchu knew that this person must have some unspeakable story, so she didn't ask further. “Let's go up the mountain! The divine spring's mouth must be at the peak.”

“The divine spring is in this ancient mountain?”

Zhang Ruochen was surprised and raised his head to look up.

The mountain before him was impossibly tall. Half of it was dark; the other half was majestic. It didn't look like the small hill from afar.

Fairy Tianchu looked up. “Look, purple mist is floating down from the peak.”

The peak of the mountain was indeed shrouded in purple mist. The mist also scattered down.

“Fairy, didn't you say that there are runes left behind by gods here?” Zhang Ruochen asked. “What if we break in and activate the godly runes? Won't we die here?”

“Earlier, I didn't know that there were godly runes, so I was hit by one. Since I know now, there'll naturally be a way to erase them.”

Fairy Tianchu's white robe fluttered and she emanated a fragrance. She walked forward, stepping onto the mountain path.

Zhang Ruochen caught up to her. “Fairy, I have some alchemy soldiers. We can use them to lead the way so it’ll be safer.”

As he spoke, he pulled 12 metal balls out of his spatial ring. As soon as the balls landed on the ground, they turned into human-shaped metal soldiers.

Kaboom!

Half a beat later, a complex pattern appeared under the feet of one soldier.

At the same time, a shred of remnant divine power hit the soldier, splitting it open. Some of the metal bones even melted.

Zhang Ruochen’s expression hardened. He calculated that if the power had hit him, his body would be penetrated even if he wore the Word Armor.

Fairy Tianchu furrowed her slender brows. She pulled out a purple bottle and poured out a drop of dark red liquid.

Sizzle, sizzle.

When the liquid fell on the ground, sizzles sounded and it melted the godly runes.

One must know that godly runes were runes carved by gods. Even a Supreme Saint would have trouble destroying it. The runes here saw a reduction in power after 100,000 years, but still contained a god’s willpower. How could it melt so easily?

Fairy Tianchu guessed what Zhang Ruochen was thinking. “This liquid was made from the blood of a god from Hell. It can eat away anything in the world.”

The two continued climbing.

Gradually, some pavilion-like buildings appeared in the mountain. Each tile and brick was made with extremely precious material. The pavilions here were preserved quite well. The fragrance of saint fruit even wafted from some of them.

However, ancient monsters patrolled those pavilions. Zhang Ruochen and Fairy Tianchu didn’t want to cause more trouble, so they skirted around and climbed up.

Zhang Ruochen felt slight movement at his chest. With a happy expression, he reached a hand in.

The Amazing Little Taoist's weak voice traveled out.

"Amazing, amazing. I'm alive. Zhang Ruochen, did you save me?"

"Do you think anyone else would save you?" Zhang Ruochen said telepathically.

"That's true. Any other cultivator would probably take the chance to eat me. But you actually used some medicine when I was horribly hurt to help me fix my spirit and produce new vitality. Not bad, not bad. I didn't misjudge you." The Amazing Little Taoist laughed.

"Some medicine?" Zhang Ruochen asked. "That was the only bit of Spring of Life that I had. I was keeping it for myself."

The Amazing Little Taoist climbed out of his arms and chuckled. "That's why troubles show who the true friends are! You definitely love me. I can tell! Hey, isn't she that fairy from the Ancient Civilization Sect?"

Fairy Tianchu sensed something. She turned to look at the Amazing Little Taoist. "One-hundred-thousand-year-old saint medicine. Lin Yue, you have quite a lot of treasures. But that 100,000-year-old medicine is quite strong. Its spirit is even stronger than yours."

"How is that possible?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"It's the truth." Then Fairy Tianchu warned, "You should be careful. Don't let it turn you into fertilizer."

"Provocation," the Amazing Little Taoist said through clenched teeth. "This...this woman is provoking us. Don't believe her. I am a gentle sage, not an aggressive plant like the Holy Carnivorous Flower."

Fairy Tianchu didn't say anything else. She continued forward, only leaving a slender frame behind.

He has a strong spirit? Zhang Ruochen didn't really believe it.

Every time the Psychic Sage was suppressed, he immediately surrendered. He didn't have any of that strong will to fight

back. How could he have a strong spirit?

“Don’t believe her,” the Amazing Little Taoist immediately explained. “She just wants us to separate. She’s afraid that we’ll threaten her if we work together. Women are the evilest.”

At the middle of the mountain, the Amazing Little Taoist jumped onto Zhang Ruochen’s shoulder. He sniffed and looked around occasionally. Then he sent a message to Zhang Ruochen. “This is very close to the Amazing Temple. How come we’re here?”

“Are you sure?”

“Of course,” the Amazing Little Taoist said seriously. “I lived around here for 100,000 years. If we continue up, it’ll be very dangerous. What exactly are you doing?”

Suddenly, Fairy Tianchu stopped up front.

“It smells like blood.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes darkened. He hurried over to Fairy Tianchu.

There was an incomplete corpse on the ground before her. Half of the body had turned into shreds of flesh. It was a horrible sight.

“Chou Gu,” Zhang Ruochen said. “How can it be him?”

Chou Gu was a spatial cultivator invited by the Ancient Civilization Sect. He was quite advanced in the Spatial Way. He had a pair of metal boots that could shrink the land and a dragon-head cane that could activate a gravitational space domain.

Unfortunately, both of these spatial treasures had disappeared.

Zhang Ruochen walked beside the corpse and checked it. “He wasn’t killed by an ancient monster. It should be man made.”

“It’s Gu Feng,” Fairy Tianchu said. “His spirit remains here and it contains murderous Qi.”

“Who exactly is Gu Feng?” Zhang Ruochen asked curiously. “It seems like you can’t control him either.”

“Gu Feng is the top figure of an ancient sect from Cha Field. He has a wild personality and horrible conduct. He’s lustful too, but his abilities are hard to measure. He once got with the first daughter of a Supreme Saint and was chased after by the Supreme Saint’s clone but actually survived.

“After that, he used his advanced and poisonous skills to put seven harmony pills in the Supreme Saint’s territory. Instantly, all beings in the territory were poisoned. As if they’d lost their minds, they became animals that only knew to mate and did many embarrassing things. The Supreme Saint was humiliated.

“Ever since then, Gu Feng’s reputation has grown. No one was willing to offend him, lest he took revenge. Someone like him is able to do anything. If he wants to take revenge, even a Supreme Saint would get a headache.”

Zhang Ruochen sighed. Gu Feng was quite powerful. Even a Supreme Saint couldn’t do anything and suffered.

Zhang Ruochen and Fairy Tianchu followed the blood on the ground into a palace cluster. Soon, they saw a second body, a third...

Monk Pushan and Li Qinghai had both died. Their bodies were in a terrible state and were still bleeding.

When they saw the fourth body, Zhang Ruochen and Fairy Tianchu froze.

It was Gu Feng.

He had a huge hole in his chest. Such a large patch of flesh was gone, including his heart. His eyes were wide and stared up at the sky with a bit of horror.

He seemed to have seen something terrifying before dying.

“Even a Supreme Saint’s clone couldn’t kill Gu Feng, but he died here. Could he have met a Supreme Saint monster?” Fairy Tianchu grew cautious. She looked around.

Zhang Ruochen checked Gu Feng’s body and made a noise of confusion. “He was killed by spatial power.”

Next, he moved Gu Feng’s hands aside. He discovered that the spatial print on his palm had disappeared.

“Of the six spatial cultivators that the Ancient Civilization Sect invited, who is left?” Fairy Tianchu asked.

“Mo Xiaogu of the Space Godly Palace,” Zhang Ruochen said. “But with her cultivation, even if she does a sneak attack, she can’t kill Gu Feng. Unless she hid her cultivation...”

Suddenly, his Spiritual Power trembled and his expression changed drastically. He squatted down and reached out to touch Gu Feng’s injury.

As expected, that familiar Spiritual Power wave appeared again.

Could it be her? Zhang Ruochen thought. No, how could she dare come to Heaven World?

On an ancient tower in this palace cluster, Mo Xiaogu stood behind a window. She looked at Zhang Ruochen and Fairy Tianchu in the distance with a proud smile. “That idiot Gu Feng. He dared to get ideas about me, the princess. Even death isn’t enough of a punishment. But these two are a bit difficult. I’ll use poison!”

Mo Xiaogu placed the spatial container from Gu Feng before her and took out many bottles of poisonous liquid and pills.

“That Mo Xiaogu must have cultivated a powerful technique,” Fairy Tianchu said. “She knows of my ability too, so she disguised her spiritual intent. But I can still detect that she’s hidden nearby.”

Chapter 1696 - Demon Lady

Chapter 1696: Demon Lady

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen was worried that Mo Xiaogu was that person that he thought she was, and slightly hesitated before making a decision, “Let it go. We should go and collect the Holy Spring first.”

“Alright.”

Fairy Tianchu did not want anything to go wrong either.

Just as they were about to leave, the two pieces of turtle shells started to vibrate, and quickly flew off.

“What happened?”

Bewildered, Zhang Ruochen chased after.

After reaching the ruin of a group of palaces, Zhang Ruochen found the third piece of turtle shell.

The two pieces of turtle shells flew around the third piece, before merging together as one, emitting a dazzling purple light.

As the light faded, a palm-sized turtle shell fell.

Although the turtle shell was still incomplete, the fact that the three turtle shells could merge together was something that was surprising to Zhang Ruochen.

Amazing Little Taoist was so happy that he jumped, and said, “Great! Half of the turtle shell had already been gathered! It should be about time to collect the Purple-gold Bagua Mirror.”

“What do you mean?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Amazing Little Taoist replied, “Didn’t you always wanted to know about the other use of the pieces of these shells? Actually, using them, we could obtain True Lord Luotian’s Purple-gold Bagua Mirror.”

Zhang Ruochen then asked, “Is it? But didn’t you say that even though True Lord Luotian had died, his presence remained within his body. Anyone who tried to collect the mirror would be killed.”

“That’s that, but now it’s different.”

Amazing Little Taoist shook his small hands, and explained, “Now, given that we had collected half of the broken shells, we could gain the approval of True Lord Luotian. Moreover, after being so grievously wounded, I had recovered some of my memories, such as how to obtain the Purple-gold Bagua Mirror.”

“You recovered some of your memories? What do you mean?” Zhang Ruochen did not understand.

Amazing Little Taoist casually replied, “I had really lived for so long. So long such that things that happened tens of thousands of years, or even hundred-thousand years ago, would be almost impossible to recall.”

“But as I was so severely injured just now, I remembered how True Lord Luotian had taught me personally, and bestowed upon me the techniques to using the Purple-gold Bagua Mirror.”

Zhang Ruochen felt as though Amazing Little Taoist was really on the same level as Blackie, as they both like to make big talk and tall claims based on their supposed ancient knowledge from eons ago. The worst part about which was that no one could validate if what they are saying is true.

Fairy Tianchu interjected, “We should quickly leave. This place seems odd.”

Zhang Ruochen too felt an inexplicable sense of danger that he could not seem to pinpoint. In this situation, he should naturally back off.

“Are you two leaving? Where are you heading off to?”

A familiar voice sounded.

At that moment, Mo Xiaogu's figure appeared from within the ruins. Wearing Chou Gu's boots, holding Pushan's weapon, and still having the image of a beautiful young woman. However, there was no sign of fear or weakness on her anywhere. Instead, she wore a confident smile.

Zhang Ruochen examined her as he asked, "Why is Lady Xiaogu here?"

"I had always been here!" Mo Xiaogu smiled.

Fairy Tianchu pointed at the ring she was wearing, and asked, "You were the one who killed Gu Feng, right?"

Mo Xiaogu replied, "Why? Does Fairy want to take revenge for him? Ah right, after all, Gu Feng was one of the Spatial Cultivators that you had invited, so it was only natural for you to take revenge."

Fairy Tianchu's gaze was cold, and snapped, "Who are you exactly? To kill Gu Feng would not have been an easy task."

Swish!

Rain Thread Divine Sword materialized, and slashed to Mo Xiaogu's neck.

Mo Xiaogu remained calm, and stepped to the right and immediately appeared a few dozen feet away. Smiling, she sneered, "Fairy, you are already poisoned. If I were you I wouldn't use Saint Qi, else the poison will take effect even faster."

"Rubbish."

Fairy Tianchu continued her assault, and her sword Qi was like a net casted over Mo Xiaogu.

What was shocking was that Mo Xiaogu made use of Spatial Move to quickly dodge her attacks.

While that was happening, Zhang Ruochen quickly made use of spiritual powers to check if he was poisoned. Confirming that he wasn't, he heaved a sigh of relief.

“She should be lying to us. Could she really be that demon lady?”

Continuing to observe Mo Xiaogu, Zhang Ruochen hoped to find some kind of weakness.

Mo Xiaogu continued to say, “You are really poisoned by Harmony Pill made by Gu Feng. The poison of the Harmony Pill does not take effect on your physical bodies, and affects your Saint Soul that increases your lust. The more Saint Qi you utilize, the faster the effects will start appearing, and the stronger the effect will be.”

All of a sudden, Fairy Tianchu withdrew her sword, and stood on the ground not moving.

Zhang Ruochen looked over, only to see that her pristine white nape actually showed a blush pink, with sweat flowing down her forehead.

Could they really have been poisoned?

Mo Xiaogu frisked her hair gently, and laughed, “I am really looking forward to this. What would such a holy lady like Fairy Tianchu look like when the poison takes effect? Lin Yue, shouldn’t you thank this princess?”

Zhang Ruochen seemed to have caught onto a hint, and asked, “Which princess are you?”

“I won’t tell you. Anyways, you are about to have the time of your life with a Fairy. Such an occurrence would be something people could only dream of. Shouldn’t you thank me? Your spatial cultivation is not bad, maybe you could be my servant?” Mo Xiaogu stated.

Fairy Tianchu transmitted a thought to Zhang Ruochen, and said, “We have indeed been poisoned, and we need to leave this place now. Only if we are free from this demon woman’s intervention could I remove my poison. I cannot use my Saint Qi anymore, I need you to bring me away.”

“Fairy, excuse me!”

Zhang Ruochen grabbed her silky smooth, and dashed out from the ruins.

That hand was so soft and smooth, and was what countless geniuses would have dreamt of holding. If they saw this scene, they would have been crazed by their jealousy.

“Don’t think you can leave so easily!”

Mo Xiaogu’s gaze sharpened, and threw out the golden cymbal in her hand.

Turning into the size of a grindstone, the cymbal spun in the air and shook up the space around it, flying straight toward Zhang Ruochen’s back.

“Look at me!”

Amazing Little Taoist stood on Zhang Ruochen’s shoulder, and spat out a purple light. Using his hands, he made a seal that was the same size as the golden cymbal and shot it out to the back.

Boom!

The two forces collided and created a huge explosion.

Mo Xiaogu recovered the golden cymbal and was surprised, “Even a Hundred-thousand Years Saint Herb could be so strong?”

Using the Harmony Pill to fight against Fairy Tianchu fit Mo Xiaogu’s purposes. Not only did she want Lin Yue to be her servant, she also wanted Fairy Tianchu to capitulate.

To do so, she must ensure that she obtains something to blackmail her with.

Mo Xiaogu caught up, and laughed, “Where are you going? Could it be that you are looking for a secret place to do embarrassing things?”

Dashing out of the ruins of the cluster of palaces, Fairy Tianchu looked down, and her face changed, “King Flame and Queen Ling had caught up. I could see their willpower that were emitted from their body. Additionally, there seems to be one more person... Wang Tian”

“Who is Wang Tian?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Ruiya Field’s Leader, as well as Wang Xu’s brother. He is a really power person with abilities not worse than me.”

Fairy Tianchu naturally got quite worried. If she was not poisoned, she would naturally not fear Wang Tian. But given her current situation, the situation would be... unimaginable.

Harmony Pill was too famous. It was able to even make a Supreme Saint fall victim. If she continued to use her Saint Qi, she was unsure if she could suppress the poison and the effect.

From below, King Flame laughed, “Fairy, we met again!”

In a flash, three figures appeared before Zhang Ruochen and Fairy Tianchu and cut off their escape. Apart from King Flame and Queen Ling, there was also a man wearing black robes.

The man wearing the black robes had a pale complexion, and his presence was full of Yin Qi. He was Wang Tian indeed.

Queen Ling saw that Zhang Ruochen was holding Fairy Tianchu’s hand, and her eyes sparkled before jesting, “What good luck you have to be able to hold Fairy’s hand? Did you know that if this were to be known by others, there will be countless people trying to chop your hand off?”

Wang Tian coldly stated, “I think Fairy’s condition isn’t right. Did she get hurt?”

King Flame and Queen Ling noticed it too, and their expression turned ecstatic. If Fairy Tianchu was really injured, this was a good opportunity to get rid of her.

Mo Xiaogu’s laughter came from above, and explained, “Fairy Tianchu was not injured. It was just the Harmony Pill.”

“Is that real?”

King Flame was even more excited. If he could take this chance to catch Fairy Tianchu and use the techniques of nourishment on her, he could certainly improve in cultivation by leaps and bounds.

Even Fairy Tianchu should not be able to withstand the legendary Harmony Pill, right?

Mo Xiaogu blinked her eyes, and said, “If you don’t believe me, you can try to attack Fairy Tianchu. As long as she continues to use Saint Qi, the poison within her body would be catalyzed. When you bring her onto the bed, wouldn’t you know that I was saying the truth?”

Zhang Ruochen turned around and stared at Mo Xiaogu. He felt that the way she did things was really similar to that princess from the Luosha Race.

Mo Xiaogu’s expression was like that of a naughty kid, and smiled, “Lin Yue, I told you to thank me earlier, and tried to run. See, now you won’t get to enjoy Fairy Tianchu’s beauty, and could only make it easy for King Flame and Wang Tian.”

Zhang Ruochen snorted lightly, and tried to breakthrough in the direction of Mo Xiaogu.

In comparison, it would definitely be easier to breakthrough in the direction of Mo Xiaogu as compared to fighting Flame King, Queen Ling, and Wang Tian.

Mo Xiaogu was not afraid at all, and took out a black lotus, and asked, “Lin Yue, do I look so easy to bully in your eyes?”

Just as Zhang Ruochen was about to dash to Mo Xiaogu, the ground underneath her exploded with a bone hand that was more than ten meters across, and slapped towards Zhang Ruochen.

Within the bone palm, there was a trace of horrifying ancient Yin Qi on the level of a Supreme Saint.

The other cultivator would at most see that it was a hand, but to Zhang Ruochen, it seemed like heaven and earth was replaced by the white bone hand, and its presence was similar to that of a primordial beast.

“Is this another of the Supreme Saint creatures?”

Boom!

The white bone palm smashed on the ground, and caused a huge crater to appear in the terrain. At the same time, the Yin Qi that seemed to dissolve any physical bodies started to

spread out. Even King Flame, Queen Ling, and Wang Tian seemed to show expressions of solemnness.

“Who is this demon lady to be able to control such an ancient creature?” Wang Tian’s pupils shrunk, as he seemed to be cautious of her.

Chapter 1697 - Sudden Siege

Chapter 1697: Sudden Siege

Clack! Clack!

A dozen-meter-tall skeleton walked out from underground.

Its bones were very thick and shimmery. It seemed as if they were made out of stars. They radiated a terrifying aura. Even though the cultivators here were all top elites, they still felt terror.

That skeleton must have been a Supreme Saint in life.

Zhang Ruochen led Fairy Tianchu into the distance. He also observed the connection between Mo Xiaogu and the Supreme Saint skeleton.

One needed divine technique to control a Supreme Saint monster. Even a Supreme Saint personally attacking might not be able to succeed, let alone a Saint King.

The Amazing Little Taoist saw a clue first. “That black lotus in her hands is the Yin God Lotus. It is born from absorbing the Yin Qi of a god’s corpse. It usually grows in the corpse’s forehead. After turning the corpse into a mummy, the Yin God Lotus is able to bloom fully. That witch is using the Yin God Lotus to control the Supreme Saint monster.”

Zhang Ruochen was confused. “How come you know about the Yin God Lotus?”

“I don’t know. I just suddenly thought of it,” the Amazing Little Taoist said seriously. “It’s like it was hidden deep in my memories and I’d always known.”

Mo Xiaogu held the black lotus. Like a dark elf, she flew to the shoulder of the Supreme Saint monster and looked down on everyone. “King Yan, won’t you attack now? If not, I’ll attack!”

Fairy Tianchu was one of the nine beauties that shook the entire Heaven World. Her cultivation and physique were both

very strong. Capturing her was endlessly beneficial for King Yan. How could he not want to attack?

But Mo Xiaogu's abilities were too shocking and strange. King Yan felt that she was a bigger threat.

"Where are you a princess of?" King Yan asked cautiously. "How come I've never heard of you before?"

Mo Xiaogu chuckled. "Don't worry. We're not enemies. I am the cousin of Mo Yan, a leader of the Space Godly Palace. Actually, we're on the same side."

Then she tossed out the metal badge that represented her status.

Wang Tian caught the badge and checked it. "You really are Gong Ziyan's cousin."

King Yan and Queen Lian were both relieved. Thankfully, this witch was on their side. Otherwise, it would be very troublesome to be her enemy.

Fairy Tianchu must be in despair now, right?

King Yan had no more concern and chuckled. "Fairy, if you submit to us, you can still survive. Otherwise, you'll turn into my feminine Yin medicine."

Fairy Tianchu pulled her hand back. She stood up tall and said proudly, "You really think I'm afraid? King Yan, if you dare to take another step forward, see if you'll get destroyed."

King Yan was taken aback and fear flashed past his eyes. Then he licked his lips and laughed. "Fairy, you've already been poisoned by the Harmony Pill. Why are you still pretending to be strong? When the poison takes effect, don't beg me, haha!"

Fairy Tianchu furrowed her brows and sent a message to Zhang Ruochen. "Later, I'll help create an opening for you and help you escape. You must grasp the chance."

"What will you do after I escape?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"I'll delay them, or else neither of us can escape. After you're free, go find the Great Senior, Wizard God Emperor, or Thousand Star Maiden. One of them can save me."

“Aren’t you afraid that I won’t come back after escaping?”

“If you escape, they’ll have concerns when attacking me,”
Fairy Tianchu said calmly.

Her pure jade-like hands extended from her sleeves. A slender forefinger and middle finger held a purple rune scroll.

“No way under heaven, good fortune everywhere.”

Dense light patterns appeared on the gold rune. They spread out like spider webs and quickly connected the surrounding space.

“Be careful. She’s preparing to use the Good Fortune Tongxuan Rune.”

Wang Tian, King Yan, and Queen Lian’s expressions all changed. They immediately used their fastest speed to retreat until they were 100 feet away. At the same time, they summoned their strongest weapons to shield themselves.

The Good Fortune Tongxuan Rune of the Tianchu Civilization had a great reputation. Everyone under the Supreme Saint Realm feared it.

According to legends, a strong ninth step Saint King had once been killed by it.

For Wang Tian and the others, they were only confident in shielding the destructive force from the Good Fortune Tongxuan Rune after retreating to 100 meters away.

Taking advantage of this, Zhang Ruochen used the Spatial Move. He charged out from the opening between Wang Tian, King Yan, and Queen Lian.

“Stop him!” Wang Tian growled. “Don’t let him escape.”

“You all should worry about yourselves first.”

Fairy Tianchu pressed down on the sky with two fingers. The golden rune flew out, attacking Wang Tian’s group, stopping them from chasing after Zhang Ruochen.

“Queen Lian, King Yan and I will block the Good Fortune Tongxuan Rune. You go after that guy.”

Wang Tian and King Yan each took out a defensive rune scroll to block the Good Fortune Tongxuan Rune. However, the defensive layer only lasted for two breaths before it was torn apart.

The strong golden windstorm hit their bodies, forcing them back.

Wang Tian's Endless Blade shone with five layers of saint light. It shielded him like a bloody moon, countering the remaining power of the Good Fortune Tongxuan Rune.

King Yan entered the King-Burier Divine Furnace. He'd just activated the 30,000 runes on the furnace when the golden windstorm crashed in. It crushed the King-Burier Divine Furnace underground.

Thankfully, the two were 100 feet away. If they were any closer, they might not be able to take it.

Wang Tian and King Yan were both suppressed and a bit injured. Fairy Tianchu summoned the White Feather Peacock Saint Carriage. She flashed and landed on the carriage, ready to drive it away.

“Ha! The Good Fortune Tongxuan Rune is known to threaten ninth step Saint Kings. Indeed, it's powerful. Fairy, how many more do you have? Use them all!”

Mo Xiaogu controlled the Supreme Saint monster to block the White Feather Peacock Saint Carriage.

Runes kept appearing on the carriage. It released stronger and stronger power and crashed toward the dozen-meter-tall Supreme Saint skeleton.

Fairy Tianchu knew that this was the best chance for her to escape. Once Wang Tian and King Yan recovered, it would be impossible to leave.

Mo Xiaogu shook her head and sighed. “It seems that you still don't understand Supreme Saint monsters enough.”

The skeleton formed a fist print with its right hand. Cracking and popping, it punched at the carriage.

Suddenly, the carriage changed direction, barely missing the Supreme Saint skeleton's fist.

The skeleton let out an angry roar. It spat out intense Yin wind and slammed its palm down.

Boom!

The skeletal palm was very powerful. It hit three of the white peacocks pulling the carriage. They exploded into wisps of white smoke. The carriage also went flying from the palm print's shockwaves. It hit the stone wall and fell down heavily.

Wang Tian and King Yan hurried over. When they saw this, they were shocked inside. Supreme Saint monsters were indeed terrifying. They couldn't fight back at all.

Thankfully, Mo Xiaogu was on their side. Otherwise, they probably would have to escape too.

King Yan put his hands together and bowed to Mo Xiaogu. Then he laughed proudly. "Fairy, are you still not giving up? I know you put hope in that spatial cultivator, but Queen Lian has already caught up. He won't escape."

...

After Zhang Ruochen escaped from the siege of Wang Tian and the others, he kept using the Spatial Move to escape down the mountain.

Boom!

Behind him was an intense explosion. Dirt and rocks flew up. Some pavilions were destroyed and a golden energy storm filled that area. He knew without a doubt that it was the Good Fortune Tongxuan Rune's destructive ability.

So strong, Zhang Ruochen thought. I hope Fairy Tianchu can kill one or two enemies with that rune.

Suddenly, a laugh sounded. "Hey, you're quite good at the Way of Space. Unfortunately, you don't move enough each time. How can you escape from my grasp?"

Queen Lian actually caught up. Zhang Ruochen frowned.

The Yin wind behind him grew stronger. It actually formed a layer of frost on Zhang Ruochen's back.

“Star Grab Hand.”

Queen Lian extended a slender hand. At least 3,000 Rules of Saintly Way flowed on her fingers. The space within a dozen meters seemed to solidify. Zhang Ruochen grew slower and slower.

Queen Lian smiled, waiting for Zhang Ruochen to use the Spatial Move. Once he did so, she could release other techniques.

Unexpectedly, Zhang Ruochen spun around abruptly. He radiated blazing flames and punched her.

Because he'd activated the Fire God Armor Boxing Glove, his punch actually had faint divine might.

Boom!

The fire's power hit the Yin Qi. The ground underfoot cracked and even some runes left behind by ancient gods were activated. A dozen beams of light flew out from underground.

In this clash, Zhang Ruochen was the weaker one. He retreated a dozen meters before finally steadying himself.

Queen Lian only took half a step back.

But she was very shocked. This guy is able to fight against me?

Her palm started burning. Queen Lian raised her hand and saw that her snowy skin was red from the fire. She was close to bleeding.

He actually cultivated Divine Fire Jingmie to the official flame level.

She stopped being careless. After all, there were very few people below the Supreme Saint Realm who could cultivate official flames. Those who could were definitely a threat to her.

Zhang Ruochen fled down the mountain. He started sweating and his head grew heavy. His mind showed signs of

weakening. He bit his tongue to stimulate himself with pain and keep clear headed. I really did get poisoned! Using Holy Qi will speed it up. I wonder if I can use Divine Fire Jingmie to purify the Harmony Pill's poison.

Before he had time to do that, Queen Lian caught up again.

Just then, the Amazing Little Taoist asked, "Are we really going to go find those cultivators from the Ancient Civilization Sect?"

"Yes."

After a pause, Zhang Ruochen continued, "This Fairy Tianchu isn't bad. Since she helped me escape, I should do my best to help her. She's probably in a worse state than me. If she falls into King Yan's hands, it would be worse than death."

"Unfortunately, water far away can't put out the fire at hand," the Amazing Little Taoist sighed. "When we find the Ancient Civilization Sect and hurry back, it'll be late! I do have another idea though."

"What is it?" Zhang Ruochen asked. "Hurry."

Calmly and slowly, the Amazing Little Taoist said, "We're not far from the Amazing Temple. We can go and get the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror. You should know that it's an Absolute Saint weapon. If we have it, won't we be completely undefeatable?"

Chapter 1698 - Six Desires Breaking Venom

Chapter 1698: Six Desires Breaking Venom

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

If Purple Gold Bagua Mirror was indeed a supreme saint weapon, the situation might be changed.

Zhang Ruochen decided to trust Amazing Little Taoist again, so he rushed to Amazing Temple, led by it. They ran into some wicked ancient ferocious creatures on their way, but Zhang Ruochen annihilated them immediately.

“This guy seems to be very familiar with the paths nearby and the distribution of ancient Gods’ inscriptions.”

Queen Lian who was chasing them noticed something irregular. She got vigilant and didn’t dare get too close to them as she was afraid that Zhang Ruochen might’ve set a trap for her using the ancient divine inscriptions here.

As Zhang Ruochen was rushing to Amazing Temple, Wang Tian and King Flame were fighting Fairy Tianchu.

King Flame raised King-Burier Divine Furnace above his head and infused his saint Qi in. The furnace became larger and larger, and nine different flames gushed out, whose heat melted the ground.

“Suppress!”

King Flame yelled and drove King-Burier Divine Furnace toward White Feather Peacock Carriage.

Whoosh!

The saint Qi around them looked like traces of mist, which gathered toward White Feather Peacock Carriage, forming a flowing and winding river.

A white light fist that was fifteen feet long flew out from the center of the river, clashing with King-Burier Divine Furnace.

The fist power came in waves, knocking King-Burier Divine Furnace away, which fell off the cliff.

King Flame who was standing more than one hundred feet in the distance grunted and shrunk.

“Is that Fairy Tianchu’s Heavenly River Fist?” King Flame’s face paled.

On the surface, King Flame was only at a slight disadvantage, but actually, Heavenly River Fist was very abstruse, and the hidden strength inside injured his organs so much that they cracked.

King Flame felt a severe pain even if he tried to raise his arm.

Wang Tian’s black cape kept waving in the air, and there was dark Yin Qi permeating, covering the space dozens of square miles around them.

“I heard that Luo God killed a demonic God from Hell World using Heavenly River Fist. I’ve always thought that Heavenly River Fist has been lost after Luo God died. Didn’t expect you to have comprehended the essence of Heavenly River Fist.”

Wang Tian approached White Feather Peacock Carriage step by step, and his Endless Blade gleamed with brighter and brighter light, “Let me fight against this Heavenly River Fist today.”

“The first move of Jinming Blade Technique, No Chance to Return.”

Over ten thousand blade way rules were infused into the blade technique, and the blade dashed toward Fairy Tianchu in White Feather Peacock Carriage overwhelmingly.

The blade looked like a blood crescent.

Saintly way rules flew out of the carriage, merging with the saint Qi river. And then, another fist print flew out of the saint Qi river and hit the blade light coming from Wang Tian.

Boom!

It was a tie at this round.

“Second move of Jinming Blade Technique, No Reciprocation.”

Wang Tian’s blade light gleamed brighter, and the area covered with darkness made a whooshing sound. Countless traces of blade light traveled in the space.

Bang! Bang!

Wang Tian’s Endless Blade was a Seven Yao Ten-Thousand Patterns Saint Weapon, and he was performing a master mid-class saint spell. He managed to rival Fairy Tianchu in this fight.

After nearly one hundred exchanges of moves, the area around them was dismantled, and there were long blade and fist marks everywhere on the ground.

Gradually, the saint Qi river around White Feather Peacock Carriage started to become unstable as if it was about to disintegrate.

Mo Xiaogu’s eyes glinted, and she said, “The poison in the fairy’s body is about to hit her. Keep attacking her! She’s not going to make it!”

“What if she blows up her saint source and drag us all down with her?” Wang Tian was a bit worried.

Mo Xiaogu smiled and said, “Rest assured. The poison from Harmony Pill can hinder a monk’s consciousness and willpower. She won’t blow up her saint source.”

Fairy Tianchu kept sweating in her carriage. She started to faint, and her body kept shaking.

She should’ve been able to suppress the poison from Harmony Pill given her strong cultivation, however, she also had to

defend herself against Wang Tian's attacks, which exacerbated the poison in her body.

"No... I can't be captured by them... There's only one thing I can do now."

Fairy Tianchu was in despair. She clenched her fist, and blood dripped from her fingernails. She tried to mobilize the saint Qi in his body, which gathered toward her lower abdomen, triggering her saint source.

Obviously, Fairy Tianchu's mindpower was much stronger than Mo Xiaogu expected.

Whoosh!

A trace of gleaming white light gushed out of White Feather Peacock Carriage, tearing apart the black evil sha Qi.

"No! She's triggered her saint source, and she's about to blow it up." Wang Xu squinted his eyes as he shrunk like a lightning.

If Fairy Tianchu blew up her saint source, almost no one under supreme saints could survive it.

Even Mo Xiaogu hid behind the skull of the supreme saint and curved his lips, "Can't believe you can still blow up your saint source after being poisoned by the Harmony Pill. I've totally underestimated you."

However, King Flame stood still.

King Flame smiled and said, "Six Desires Breaking Venom."

Tens of thousands of light spots flew out of his palm, landing on White Feather Peacock Carriage, sipping into the car. If someone used mind power to inspect them, they could find that each light spot was a tiny bug.

Fairy Tianchu yelled in agony in the carriage after a while, after which she fell onto the ground.

The white light coming out also vanished.

King Flame grinned, "Even the most innocent girl will become a horny girl after being poisoned by Six Desires Breaking

Venom. Luo Ji, you're going to be my concubine from now on. Don't worry, I'll treat you well."

Six Desires Breaking Venom was the most powerful true treasure from Six Desires Sect from Yin and Yang Field.

The poison was planted in the mind of a monk, which could even make a Bodhisattva desire sex.

The hierarch of Six Desires Sect tamed a Bodhisattva using Six Desires Breaking Venom and used it as a slave, which was a shocking news to all. In the end, a Buddha went to Yin and Yang Field to bring the Bodhisattva back.

"Let me try how different this fairy is from other women. Haha!"

King Flame walked to White Feather Peacock Carriage, stepped up and got into the carriage.

...

Zhang Ruochen had finally arrived at Amazing Temple, and the half ferocious supreme saint guarding this place had left, which made this place tranquil.

Whoosh!

Queen Lian turned into a cluster of dark clouds, flying across Zhang Ruochen and blocked him to moving forward, "Am I really that scary? Why are you running so fast?"

Zhang Ruochen stopped and smiled, "I'm worried that I'll do something reckless to you when Harmony Pill hits me, so I have to run as far away as possible."

"Really? Let me see what kind of reckless things you're going to do to me."

Queen Lian's voice was so soft that other male monks would be seduced as hearing that.

However, Zhang Ruochen saw Queen Lian's fingers extended, and that her body started to dim.

Without a second thought, Zhang Ruochen performed spatial move and vanished.

Sizzle!

Queen Lian clutched Zhang Ruochen's cape, leaving five holes on it.

"She's so fast. I got caught even if I performed spatial move. She must've performed a body technique that's a mid-class saint spell." Zhang Ruochen kept sweating, and he triggered Word Armor which covered his entire body.

Queen Lian stared at him and said, "Blue Fang's Ming Way Saint Armor. It seems you're really the one who killed him and Yu Wenjing."

Amazing Little Taoist jumped off Zhang Ruochen's body onto the ground, rushing toward Amazing Temple.

Queen Lian shot it a glance, and she opened her snow-white left hand. A small cauldron with magic inscriptions showed up on her palm, and it dashed toward Amazing Little Taoist.

Zhang Ruochen rushed to the front of Amazing Little Taoist, and his Fire God Armor gleamed with flames, clashing with the demonic cauldron.

Bang!

They made a huge clacking sound.

Zhang Ruochen fell and slid back, clashing with the stone stairs of Amazing Temple, cracking the stairs.

Amazing Little Taoist stopped at the door of the Taoist temple, staring at Zhang Ruochen down there.

Zhang Ruochen slowly stood up, shook his body, dusting off the mud.

He looked at behind Queen Lian and yelled, "What are you looking at? Go get Purple-gold Gagua Mirror."

Amazing Little Taoist immediately jumped through the door, vanishing in the Taoist temple.

Queen Lian pressed in on Zhang Ruochen seductively and smiled, "It seems there's some incredible valuable in the temple. Can I take a look first?"

Queen Lian ditched Zhang Ruochen and rushed toward the Taoist temple.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen waved his palm, and a space crack stopped her.

And then, Zhang Ruochen released ferocious forces and wielded an official-level Divine Fire Jingmie cloud which covered Queen Lian.

Queen Lian didn't have the guts to touch the space crack, so she was forced to recoil from it, yet she clashed with the Divine Fire Jingmie cloud, and the saint Qi protecting her body was burnt thinner and thinner.

Her hair also touched Divine Fire Jingmie, which turned it into dust.

Queen Lian looked colder and colder, "Space way and Divine Fire Jingmie. The more I look at you, the more you remind me of someone."

"Who?" asked Zhang Ruochen.

Queen Lian said, "Zhang Ruochen."

Zhang Ruochen smiled, but he didn't answer her question. Instead, he wielded dozens of space cracks toward her.

Queen Lian managed to dodge all of them with her incredible body technique, meanwhile, she performed a finger technique, pointing at Zhang Ruochen's forehead.

The move was sharp with terrifying penetrating power.

Zhang Ruochen retreated while taking out 'Time and Space Secret Guide'. He prepared to dissolve Queen Lian's attack using multi-dimensional space.

Suddenly, a tremendous force came out of Amazing Temple.

Whoosh!

A trace of purple light rushed out of the Taoist temple, hitting Queen Lian. The protection saint Qi surrounding Queen Lian couldn't be more fragile in front of it.

Poof!

Queen Lian's belly was penetrated by the purple light, leaving a hole large like a bowl.

Chapter 1699 - Killing Queen Lian

Chapter 1699: Killing Queen Lian

Purple light passed through Queen Lian's stomach and then hit the ground. A dozen meters away, an explosive sound rang out. The surrounding palace clusters were all trembling.

Queen Lian's legs were unsteady. She half-knelt on the ground and touched the bloody hole in her abdomen. Fear filled her eyes. "Absolute Saint's power... It's an Absolute Saint weapon..."

"Amazing, amazing! Haha! That's right. This is an Absolute Saint weapon. Now, do you know how powerful I am?"

The Amazing Little Taoist had one hand behind his back. His other held the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror. He walked arrogantly out of the Amazing Temple. Facing the mirror toward Queen Lian, he said, "There are some creatures in the world that you shouldn't offend. Zhang Ruochen, how should we punish her?"

Zhang Ruochen rolled his eyes. "Who said you could say my name?"

The Amazing Little Taoist froze and covered his mouth. "Oh yeah, I can't expose your identity. What should we do now? Kill her?"

Zhang Ruochen nodded. "That's the only solution."

Queen Lian had already guessed this, but when she confirmed that this man was Zhang Ruochen, she was still extremely shocked. How much time had passed? Zhang Ruochen actually went from a half-step Saint King to a level that could fight her.

She finally understood why Shang Ziyan had called on everyone to defeat Zhang Ruochen.

This man was indeed a dangerous figure who should be taken out as soon as possible.

Poof.

The Amazing Little Taoist kept adding Holy Qi into the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror.

The projection of the bagua symbol appeared on the mirror and spun slowly.

Queen Lian knew that she couldn't block it, so she quickly said, "Wait, don't you want to save Fairy Tianchu? She must be in my people's hands now. If you kill me, you'll lose a negotiation chip for Wang Tian and King Yan.

The Amazing Little Taoist nodded. He looked toward Zhang Ruochen, saying, "She kind of...has a point."

Zhang Ruochen was using Divine Fire Jingmie to purify the Harmony Pill poison within him. However, the poison worked on the saint soul. Before the poison could be refined, the Divine Fire Jingmie would have melted the saint soul.

Fairy Tianchu said that she has a way to detoxify the Harmony Pill poison. Seems like I have to hurry back and save her. As soon as this thought appeared in Zhang Ruochen's mind, a cold Yin wind rushed at him.

He pulled his nerves taut and looked over.

Queen Lian, who'd been kneeling on the ground, injured, had used lightning speed to attack the Amazing Little Taoist. Her arms became long and thin, like white chains that were dozens of feet long. Her fingers were clenched into claws. She wanted to steal the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror!

"No... Be careful!"

Zhang Ruochen knew that the Amazing Little Taoist lacked combat experience. He definitely wouldn't be Queen Lian's match in a short-range fight.

Once Queen Lian stole the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror, he wouldn't even be sure that he and the Amazing Little Taoist could leave alive today, let alone go save others.

Zhang Ruochen used all his might to activate spatial power. He put his hands together and hacked down on Queen Lian's back.

A foot-long spatial crack appeared, cutting toward Queen Lian.

She glanced with the corner of her vision. Her eyes were cold. "Zhang Ruochen, when I get the Absolute Saint weapon, I'll disable all your meridians and see if you can still use spatial power."

"Star-Grabbing Hand, take!"

Queen Lian reached the Amazing Little Taoist. There were thousands of Rules of Saintly Way flowing around her hands. They wove into an invisible net and trapped the Amazing Little Taoist.

By now, the spatial crack was still around ten feet from her.

"Last time, I wasn't ready, so I got hurt by that King's punch. But now, I'm in my peak shape. I'm not easy to bully."

The Amazing Little Taoist moved to the side in a purple streak of light, dodging Queen Lian's capture spell. Then he appeared behind Queen Lian. He raised the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror and slammed it down.

Thud!

Queen Lian's right arm exploded into a ball of red mist. She instantly cried out.

At the same time, the spatial crack flying over from the back grew closer and closer. It was about to hit her. She could only twist her waist and flash to the left. Thankfully, she cultivated a mid-level saint spell technique. She only had to think and her body disappeared from the spot, finally dodging the spatial crack.

"I'm hurt now. I can't handle Zhang Ruochen and that 100,000-year-old saint medicine."

Whether it was her penetrated abdomen or her nonexistent right arm now, both made her feel extreme pain. Though she

felt mistreated and resentful, she had no choice but to try to escape with all her might.

If she didn't, she might die here today.

Queen Lian, the powerful leader of Yin and Yang Field who terrified all Evil Way cultivators, was actually forced to escape from a younger figure and a 100,000-year-old saint medicine. This was very embarrassing.

“If you're only escaping now, it's too late!”

Spatial ripples appeared behind her.

A blazing steel fist broke out of the center of the spatial ripples, forming a ring of fiery clouds. It sent Queen Lian flying back. She hit the wall of the Amazing Temple with a boom.

Countless red cracks appeared on her body. She was like a white vase about to shatter.

Drops of blood rolled down from the cracks. She sprawled on the ground and said with a trembling voice, “Zhang Ruo... Ruochen, you won't gain anything from killing me. Spare me...I can be your...slave...listen to you...”

“No need.”

Zhang Ruochen was very cold. He walked before Queen Lian. Divine Fire Jingmie appeared on his hand and he slammed it down on her.

Sizzle, sizzle.

After the span of a breath, Queen Lian's body was burned to ashes.

Clap, clap, clap...

The Amazing Little Taoist clapped his hands. “You're so vicious. You destroyed that flower without even holding back. To be honest, when Queen Lian agreed to submit to you, even I was a bit tempted. Actually, now I'm wondering if you really were poisoned by the Harmony Pill.”

The sharpness disappeared from Zhang Ruochen's eyes. His gaze grew muddled and he hurriedly massaged his temples

before recovering.

The Amazing Little Taoist scurried away. “Can you keep going? I hope you won’t do anything to me when the poison starts.”

“I’ll survive. Come, let’s go save the fairy.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his heavy head and stared hard. Then he grabbed the Amazing Little Taoist and went up the ancient mountain again.

When Zhang Ruochen hurried to where he’d split up with Fairy Tianchu, the place had turned into a pile of ruins. There were broken walls everywhere and even the palace cluster was mostly destroyed.

“Are we late? Has the battle ended?”

Zhang Ruochen’s heart dropped.

The Amazing Little Taoist sniffed on the ground and dug out a bloody arm among the rubble.

“King Yan’s arm.”

Zhang Ruochen picked up the arm and looked at the cut. “It was cut off by Fairy Tianchu’s Rain Thread Divine Sword.”

“There are wheel tracks from the White Feather Peacock Saint Carriage. That Fairy Tianchu must’ve escaped!” The Amazing Little Taoist made another discovery.

“Let’s go forward to see.”

The Luan and phoenix projections appeared on Zhang Ruochen’s legs. He streaked forward.

After chasing for more than 70 miles, Zhang Ruochen detected King Yan and Wang Tian’s auras. He slowed down and activated the Buddhist Pearls to cover up his aura.

This was a valley in the ancient mountain. The valley was filled with dark purple stones that shimmered metallicly.

The steepest stone wall in the valley was a seven or eight-meter-tall cave.

Gales blew out of the cave. The wind transformed into Kang Qi and was as sharp as a Sword Saint's Sword Way Xuangang. If it was only one or two beams, then King Yan and Wang Tian could definitely block them.

But hundreds flew out of the cave at every moment. Even if they had many treasures, they still couldn't block too many waves. Naturally, they didn't dare to venture into the cave.

In the valley, King Yan moved his newly-grown right arm around and asked, "Did you think of a way to enter the cave yet?"

Wang Tian's face was as stiff as steel. He shook his head. "Earlier, I used my Four Yao Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon to lead the way, but I only took a dozen steps and the weapon was destroyed. Those below the Supreme Saint Realm won't be able to survive unless you have an Absolute Saint weapon."

"So you're saying that the bitch Luo Ji is probably dead in there?" King Yan asked.

Wang Tian shook his head. "Luo Ji's White Feather Peacock Saint Carriage is an Eight Yao weapon. Even the Kang Qi can't penetrate it easily. However, the wind in the cave is very strange. Some fly as a whirlpool. Others fly in reverse. She can't escape with just an Eight Yao weapon. Hiding inside this cave is suicide."

King Yan gritted his teeth and had a resentful expression. "I really don't know how that bitch escaped from the Six Desires Poison. I almost died under her Rain Thread Divine Sword."

Earlier, King Yan had released the Six Desires Poison. When he heard Fairy Tianchu fall inside the carriage, he'd boarded it immediately.

But the moment that he pulled aside the curtains, he discovered with a shock that Fairy Tianchu was still sitting there. She didn't seem to have been poisoned.

King Yan had sensed the danger. He cursed her in his mind and then attacked. Even so, the Rain Thread Divine Sword that flew out of the carriage still cut off his arm.

Next, rune scrolls kept flying out of the carriage, forming a strong attack. Wang Tian and King Yan didn't dare to get close.

Fairy Tianchu took this opportunity to steer the White Feather Peacock Saint Carriage and escape from here, charging into the cave.

Zhang Ruochen stood behind a boulder in the valley. Seeing Wang Tian and King Yan, he was confused. "How come only they're here? Where is Mo Xiaogu?"

In comparison, Zhang Ruochen thought that Mo Xiaogu, who could control the Supreme Saint monster, was more threatening.

The Amazing Little Taoist rubbed his hands together and laughed. "Who cares? We have the Absolute Saint weapon now, so what are you afraid of? I can't wait to take out these two."

The Harmony Pill's poison was getting more intense inside Zhang Ruochen. His mind was weakening and he indeed had no more time to wait. Eyes darkening, he said, "Let's activate the Purple-Gold Bagua Mirror together. We'll kill Wang Tian first and then take care of King Yan."

Chapter 1700 - Inside the Cave

Chapter 1700: Inside the Cave

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

King Flame lost his patience. He said, “Can we go to Holy Spring first since she still hasn’t made it out yet?”

“There’s indeed no need to waste time here... But why is Queen Lian gone for so long. Did she run into something dangerous?” Wang Tian was a bit worried.

“She’s dealing with a brat who’s only a fourth, possibly only third step saint king. What danger can she run into... But then again, why is she still not back yet attacking a third or fourth step saint king?”

King Flame had an ominous presentiment. He frowned his dark eyebrows, more desperate to get out of the valley.

Whoosh!

A Bagua print that was purple gold was formed above the valley, covering the sky above Wang Tian and King Flame, making the dark purple valley look brighter.

The power ripples from Bagua print became stronger and stronger, getting closer to supreme power.

Wang Tian and King Flame looked more and more solemn.

Just as they were about to make it out of the valley, two traces of supreme power flew out of the Bagua print and rushed toward their heads.

Wang Tian and King Flame wielded several ten-thousand-patterns saint weapons, but they were all crushed the second they touched the supreme power.

King Flame didn't react quickly enough, so his back immediately started to bleed.

They were forced to draw back to the valley. Twenty-seven black giant pythons flew out of Wang Tian's sleeves, flying around him and King Flame and striking the ground, turning into twenty-seven waving iron python formation flags.

King Flame wielded four divine bones, which turned into four divine bone hills, stationed at four directions.

They couldn't calm themselves down until they finished all those actions.

Wang Tian yelled, "I'm Wang Tian from Ruiya Field. Who's using a supreme saint weapon?"

"Amazing! Amazing! I'm here to kill all you evil creatures, including you, Wang Tian!" Amazing Little Taoist screamed with its ducky voice, echoing in the entire valley.

Wang Tian's heart sank as he realized Amazing Little Taoist seemed to come here for his life instead of his treasures.

The Bagua print in the sky started to spin, pressing down and lowering the sky. Wang Tian and King Flame felt a greater and greater pressure on their bodies, which forced them to mobilize their saint Qi and control the formation flags and divine bones, fighting against the Bagua print.

Bang! Bang!

The supreme power was released completely, which crumbled the twenty-seven iron python formation flags one by one.

What was amazing was that the geology of the dark purple mountain was very solid as if didn't crack under the suppress of the supreme saint weapon.

Wang Tian and King Flame kept yelling. They performed all sorts of techniques to fight against the Bagua print, which warded it off for a short while.

Both Zhang Ruochen and Amazing Little Taoist exerted all their strength, and their saint Qi was raging like rivers, infused into the Purple-gold Bagua Mirror and being pressed down.

This was the best opportunity for them to kill Wang Tian and King Flame!

If they were in somewhere else, they might not be able to kill these two leaders of strong fields even with supreme saint weapons.

Although supreme saint weapons were powerful, they also consumed lots of saint Qi, so they had to kill them both before running out of saint Qi.

It all depended on who could last longer now.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes turned red, and he kept yelling, "Kill! Kill! Kill!"

For one thing, he really wanted to get rid of Wang Tian, which could be a huge blow to Shang Ziyang, for another, the poison had fully kicked in Zhang Ruochen's body, which gradually made him lose control.

Amazing Little Taoist seemed to have been affected as well. It also yelled, "Kill you all! Die!"

Boom!

Finally, the Bagua print hit the ground.

King Flame's body that was seven feet tall exploded like a watermelon, completely dismantled.

Wang Tian had a lot of protection valuables, and there were godly inscriptions on his body, yet he still bled like hell under supreme power. He passed out and fell onto the ground.

After putting away the Purple-gold Bagua Mirror, Zhang Ruochen and Amazing Little Taoist flew to the bottom of the valley.

Wang Tian's black saint blouse became rugged, and there were mysterious godly inscriptions flowing on his skin. He was one of the top-tier great beings from Truth Heavenly Domain, yet he was now lying beside Zhang Ruochen, frozen.

Zhang Ruochen picked up Wang Tian's blade and wielded it. He suddenly heard an ear-piercing noise, "It's a Seven Yao Ten-Thousand-Patterns Saint Weapon. No wonder it can survive the supreme power."

Wang Tian's Endless Blade was indeed an incredible valuable.

Wang Tian grabbed Zhang Ruochen's foot and said feebly, "That is... My blade... Give it back..."

As Wang Tian woke up, Endless Blade's weapon spirit also came around.

The blade shook, and a layer of black blade Gang emerged on the edge and was waged toward Zhang Ruochen's neck.

Zhang Ruochen tried to control the blade and released Divine Fire Jingmie to refine the blade spirit.

Whoosh!

The blade spirit flew out of the blade, and it was an elder with white hair.

The spirit of Endless Blade had refined a Taoist body with great fighting power. It tried to slay Zhang Ruochen's waist with its hand.

Zhang Ruochen sneered and grabbed the spirit's neck, using the gloves of Fire God Armor, and picked it up, "You're nothing but a blade spirit. How dare you fight me?"

Zhang Ruochen wielded a trace of space power toward Wang Tian with the other hand.

Puff!

The space above Wang Tian crumbled, tearing his body into pieces.

"No! Master! Ah!" The blade spirit yelled.

Zhang Ruochen forced the spirit back to Endless Blade and put it back to his space ring. He whispered, "I'll deal with you later."

Whoosh! Whoosh!

An ear-piercing noise came out of the cave in the stone wall.

The wind kept blowing out, and the entire mountain valley turned into a wind valley. The wind could immediately kill anyone under state of saint.

“According to King Flame and Wang Tian, Fairy Tianchu should’ve been in the cave.”

Zhang Ruochen triggered the word armor and got close to the cave.

A shrill wind noise came from a spot twenty feet away from the cave. And then, the wind force formed Gang Qi, hitting Zhang Ruochen and knocking him away.

“Amazing, Amazing...”

Zhang Ruochen glared at Amazing Little Taoist with his red eyes. It then smiled and said, “You’re not in a very good place now. Better let me lead the way with the supreme saint weapon.”

“I don’t need a supreme saint weapon to get in.”

Zhang Ruochen took out ‘Time and Space Secret Guide’ and opened the book. Suddenly, a multidimensional space showed up.

Covered by the multidimensional space, Zhang Ruochen vanished and got into the cave.

“Damn it. Zhang Ruochen must’ve been under the poison influence, and he’s going to such extremes now. He’ll definitely do it if he meets Fairy Tianchu.”

Although Amazing Little Taoist kept saying ‘damn it’, it put on a weird smile and took out Purple-gold Bagua Mirror, ready to get into the cave.

It then heard a female voice, “If they’re going to do it, how can we miss it?”

Amazing Little Taoist shook its body and tried to trigger the Purple-gold Bagua Mirror, but suddenly, a tumbling supreme saint power hit its head.

It was a white bone hand right above its head. If it moved, it would be annihilated instantly.

Mo Xiaogu blinked at Amazing Little Taoist and tried to seize its Purple-gold Bagua Mirror.

Amazing Little Taoist shook its head and said, “No... No... It’s mine...”

“What’s yours are mine.”

Mo Xiaogu seized the Purple-gold Bagua Mirror and played with it. She exclaimed, “Unfortunately, it isn’t a complete supreme saint weapon.”

The palm of the supreme saint skeleton was right on top of Amazing Little Taoist’s head, which completely froze it. It could only glare at Mo Xiaogu with a desire to kill her.

Mo Xiaogu nodded and said, “It’s almost time! Can’t believe that Lin Yue will get off that easily. Let’s go, otherwise we’ll miss the whole thing.”

The supreme saint’s skeleton body kept shrinking and paved the way for Mo Xiaogu and Amazing Little Taoist, who follow it and walked into the cave.

Under the effect of Harmony Pill, Zhang Ruochen’s ability to think was hampered, and he couldn’t even see straight.

After walking in the cave for long, he saw a carriage in front of him.

Zhang Ruochen knew that it was his target, and he immediately walked forward. As long as he could find Fairy Tianchu, he should be able to find a way to detoxify himself.

However, the second Zhang Ruochen walked into the carriage, he smelled a mesmerizing female fragrance and heard a melodious female laughter. Gradually, his consciousness withered farther and farther away.

Zhang Ruochen seemed to have a sex dream.

In the dream, he lifted the veil of an exquisite woman and took off layers her of thin clothes. Their bodies intertwined with each other, both of whom panted and moaned.

...

After God knew how long, Zhang Ruochen woke up and found a naked beautiful woman lying beside him, and her body couldn't be smoother and softer. Her long black hair fell on his chest, and fragrance was swirling around his nose.

The beautiful woman seemed to have woken up. She opened all her starry eyes and blinked them, looking confused.

Zhang Ruochen was still very dizzy, and he wasn't even sure whether he had woken up or not, but he did know that he couldn't let this woman go away, so he tossed her around and laid above her again.

Hurried groaning came out of the carriage again, which shook fiercely.